

Gc
929.2
M8355mo
1907068

REYNOLDS HISTORICAL
GENEALOGY COLLECTION

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01418 9200



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2019

<https://archive.org/details/bloodofenglishma00mors>

BLOOD OF AN ENGLISHMAN

. . .

Copyright 1943 By Edward C. Morse

. . .

Published by Jones of Texas
Abilene, Texas
1943

1907068

CS
71
.M885
1943

✓
Morse, Edward Clarke, 1890-
Blood of an Englishman ... by Edward C. Morse. Abilene,
Tex., Jones of Texas, 1943.

4 p. l., 301 numb. l. 29 x 22½".

Reproduced from type-written copy.
History of the Morse family.

49557

1. Morse family (Anthony Morse, 1806-1836) 1. Title.

44-28064 .

Library of Congress (CS71.M885 1943
(3)

BLOOD
OF AN
ENGLISHMAN

.....

The United States of America began in a savage wilderness, by scattered groups of English families, whose later migration - augmented by newer arrivals from Scotland, Ireland and Wales, and from many other parts of the world - absorbed not a little of the territory, the blood, and the culture of the Dutch, the French, and the Spanish, which they met in their paths towards the establishment of a great nation.

The story which follows, is a personal narrative of one such family through those three centuries: the life, environment and activities in peace and in war, of ten consecutive generations, father to son - which entirely constitute a continuous thread in that all-important background, without which, the greater personages in our nation's history could not have played their glorious parts.

.....

BLOOD OF AN ENGLISHMAN

Table of Contents

1

ANTHONY CROSSES THE SEA - - - - -	1
The English background: Voyage overseas in 1635:	
Settlement in America: Puritans and Indians.	

2

PETER AND HIS COMPANY - - - - -	14
An early 'Western' migration: The Dutch:	
Rebellion of 1671: The "people called Quakers":	
Witchcraft in America.	

3

TWO JOSEPHS AND THEIR BRETHREN - -	30
Colonial plantations: African slaves:	
A tide-water industry, 1700: American	
yeomen and gentry.	

4

ISAAC, THAT 'QUAKER DEVIL' - - - - -	45
Whig and Tory: War of Independence, 1776:	
The End of the first British Empire:	
The Union of the "States": Western	
Insurrection in America.	

Table of Contents
(Continued)

5

NATHAN AND HIS GEOGRAPHY - - - - -	58
Spain and France in America: The Ohio and the Mississippi: Louisiana Purchase: War of 1812.	

6

ISAAC E. AND THE REST OF THE WORLD -	96
England re-visited, 1832: The Mexican War, 1846: Annexation of Texas: California: 'Fifty-four forty or fight': The Canadian Boundary: The Panama Isthmus.	

7

PORTER AND THE BIRTH OF A NATION - -	143
The Old America versus the New: The Civil War, 1861: Reconstruction of the Old South: Tilden and Hayes: South American neighbors.	

8

AND GENERATIONS NINE AND TEN - - - -	202
The Spanish-American War and the Insular possessions: The Pacific ocean and the Navy: Responsibilities of a World Power: The First World War, 1917, and its aftermath.	

APPENDIX - - - - -	223
--------------------	-----

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS - - - - -	299
---------------------------	-----

Table of Contents
(Continued)

5

NATHAN AND HIS GEOGRAPHY - - - - -	58
Spain and France in America: The Ohio and the Mississippi: Louisiana Purchase: War of 1812.	

6

ISAAC E. AND THE REST OF THE WORLD -	96
England re-visited, 1832: The Mexican War, 1846: Annexation of Texas: California: 'Fifty-four forty or fight': The Canadian Boundary: The Panama Isthmus.	

7

PORTER AND THE BIRTH OF A NATION - -	143
The Old America versus the New: The Civil War, 1861: Reconstruction of the Old South: Tilden and Hayes: South American neighbors.	

8

AND GENERATIONS NINE AND TEN - - - -	202
The Spanish-American War and the Insular possessions: The Pacific ocean and the Navy: Responsibilities of a World Power: The First World War, 1917, and its aftermath.	

APPENDIX - - - - -	223
--------------------	-----

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS - - - - -	299
---------------------------	-----

Chapter I. ANTHONY CROSSES THE SEA

"He either fears his fate too much,
Or his desserts are small
Who dares not put it to the touch,
To gain or lose it all."

- Marquis of Montrose.

England, by the end of the sixteenth century was rapidly passing through one of the several stages of development which was to make her ultimately the center of a great over-seas empire. A young nation still politically distinct from Scotland, Ireland and Wales, and whose population constituted but a fourth of that of France, she was as yet uncouth and crude as compared to the older civilizations of Spain, France or Italy. And probably because she was so rustic in temperament and background, there had developed within her borders a class of people which fit well into that fair countryside. These, the freehold yeomenry had no exact counterpart in the society of the continent, and while socially they merged above with the gentry, and below with the dependent farmers, they were withall a complete strata of society in themselves. Due, however, to several factors then prevalent, not a few of these yeomen and their sons were gradually as a class facing extinction. They were becoming squeezed, as it were, between the gentry above and the dependent farmers and cottagers below. It so happened, however, that there was still a third avenue open to them. Trades and crafts were, at that time, becoming an increasingly popular field, and even some of the sons of gentry but particularly many of the sons at the yeomanry were entering this new type of occupational pursuit. Some were highly successful in their new undertakings. Many, however, were not; and all, no doubt, whether they became gentry, cottagers, tradesmen or craftsmen, missed something of the freedom and independence of their earlier days, and became uneasy and dissatisfied. It was perhaps natural, therefore, that many came to look upon conditions as a whole as responsible for their own economic plight.

And in their search to discover whatever might account for their uneasiness, they thought they found the causes--or at least some of them--close at hand. For the Age of Queen Elizabeth, Drake, and Shakespeare, glorious as they were, had wrought certain easily recognized changes in the older England they loved. At the time, England, flushed with a vision of a great future, perhaps, was obsessed with the splendor and extravagances of the unreal. And politics and religion, two of the most important parts of 17th

century existence, and which no man in those days could conceive of as independent each of the other had both fallen prey to the prevailing shallowness, sham and show, which to so many was considered intolerable. It was, therefore, quite a rational reaction when a great number of the yeomanry, and "ex"-yeomanry as well indeed as many of the gentry, found themselves at the time in full accord with the attempts then in progress to "purify" the Church (and therefore the State) of its gradually accumulating disorders. This so-called new school of thought -- which, in fact was but an ancient one, and as old as man himself, was called by its opponents, "Puritanism".* Over half of the people of England, in some degree or other, were indeed sooner or later, to be of this school, and in the efforts to discourage this supposedly radical group, and one so obnoxious to the Cavaliers and High Churchmen, then in power, propaganda of all sorts was frequently resorted to. In an age which knew no bounds in villifying opposing groups, whether Roman Catholics, Cavaliers, or Puritans, the latter, often referred to as "Saints", received their full share of jibes and taunts.

"Of all those monsters which we read
In Africk, Inde, or Nile,
None like to those now lately bred
Within this wretched Isle.

The Canibal, the Tyger fell,
Crocodile and Syncophant;
The Turk, the Jew, and Infidel,
Make up an English "Saint".**

And the early printing presses of the time were not slow to print any and all materials that would fill the pages of their pamphlets and books. The technique of appeasement or tolerance was little known, and to the sturdy, stubborn Englishmen of the time, such jibes hurled by opposing groups only helped to provoke their antagonisms to the situations which they had hoped to correct. And failing to remedy conditions as they saw them, these loyal Englishmen, called "Puritans", were considerably disturbed. Many of this school of thought, especially those whose hereditary acres had dwindled in size, and whose ventures into the channels of crafts and trades had not been as successful as they had anticipated, looked longingly overseas to the English possessions in the New World. Of these there were two main colonies, one at Plymouth and another at Jamestown; but neither of these quite satisfied their purposes. The Jamestown colony was frankly antagonistic to Puritanism, and the group of Separatists at Plymouth were quite beyond their ken.

* See Appendix 1 ** See Appendix 2

By 1628 several prominent and wealthy Puritans, doubtless more influenced by the religious aspect of the cause than by an economic one, determined upon a brave course of action. If they could not change conditions at home, they could at least provide in the new world, under the English flag, what they felt could be an "ideal England". From the King, they obtained a large concession -- ostensibly for commercial purposes -- in the hitherto relatively neglected part of the English possessions in America. And by visits and by pamphlets, urged many of their fellow Englishmen, in good standing, and those not adverse to Puritanism, to migrate overseas. By 1633 when conditions toward the Puritans were increasingly rigid at home, and many began to take a definite stand in the matter, a great migration set in.* In the decade ending in 1640, when over 60,000 Englishmen left their native shores to settle under the English flag along the fringe of a naked wilderness from the Caribbean Sea to Newfoundland, some 20,000 went to the Puritan colony called "The Massachusetts Bay". Of these the great bulk was the sons of yeomen -- of all shades of "Puritanism" -- whose quest for a livelihood had forced into trades and cities, neither of which satisfied their inherent yearning for the fields and meadows for which they had been bred.

Among these was Anthony Morse of Wilts. Anthony, as did almost all of his overseas companions, belonged to a landed yeoman family. His grandfather, William Morse, yeoman, of "Edward's House", had possessed no less than five farms; another relative, also a yeoman, was the owner of a library valued at forty pounds, and at his death had bequeathed money to aid the poor students at Cambridge; Lionel Morse, yeoman, remembered in his will the indigent of over a dozen parishes, and to his heirs left a considerable estate including his "black corselet of harness with all the furnishings thereto belonging". Some of their farms, which lay in that beautiful Wiltshire countryside between Marlborough and Hayden-Wicke, had been stocked with hundreds of sheep: these white faced variety peculiar to their Shire, with the long spiral horns bending downward. Many had owned numerous tenements, silver plate, and spoons with "Apostle's heads"; and when they died were buried with fitting honor under the aisles of their parish churches they loved so well. Many an old English yeoman in good times could well have satisfied the requisite estate that would have entitled him to be classed as a "gentleman".* The immediate family, to which Anthony belonged, was a minor branch of a main stem which had settled in Suffolk since Sir Hugo de Mors, -- a banneret knight whose title emanated from his

* See Appendix 3

* See Appendix 4

services in the field, -- had enrolled in France under the banner of the English King during the Hundred Years' War. He had been one of those many Netherlanders, those allies of the English, who had espoused the cause of Edward III, and who had formed the greater part of the cavalry force of the English Army on the Continent during that part of the 14th century.* In the dim past an adventuresome Viking expedition from the North of Denmark, had carried the name of Mors up the River Rhine to found, in the course of time, one of the most powerful families in the Netherlands, whose ancestral castle, west of that historic stream, and 100 miles easterly from Antwerp, survives to this day as a military museum. The Counts de Mors for half a century were Dukes of Westphalia. *

From Suffolk, where the English branch of the family first settled about the middle of the fourteenth century,* and where the head of the family in that section is today officially represented in the person of the Lord of the Manor of Kessingland, branches migrated to Norfolk, Essex and Wilts. By the time of the American migration, they were in a large part Puritans, although more than one were Roman Catholic, and Henry Morse, a Jesuit priest, -- whose diary is a prized possession of the British museum -- was imprisoned more than once for his activities on behalf of the Papacy, and finally, was executed at Tyburn prison, a martyr for his faith. Several of the family, at the time of the American migration, were "gentlemen", a number were owners or part owners of ships, and more than a score were educated at Cambridge. But it was only the yeoman branches which gave their sons to the American adventure. And in the early days, very few, other than yeomen, or yeomen's sons, left England, voluntarily, to settle overseas. *

Anthony, son of Anthony Morse, Sr., was born in Marlborough, Wiltshire, in 1606, within a few years of the death of two of England's chief personalities, Queen Elizabeth and William Shakespeare. It was also the same year, that two companies (the London Company and the Plymouth Company) were chartered by James I for the purpose of establishing colonies in Virginia, as that broad territory extending from the later Canada to the later South Carolina was then called. Left fatherless at the age of 14 and with little estate save his father's dwelling house at Marlborough, he, and his brother William, were both apprenticed by their stepfather to a cord-wainer or shoemaker. By the time he was twenty-nine years of age, with a household consisting of his wife, formerly Anne Cox, and their several

* See Appendix 5

* See Appendix 6

* See Appendix 7

* See Appendix 8

children, and with a financial "Depression" at hand it was felt that the outlook at home was a poor one; and heeding the glowing accounts of America, they determined to risk the future in the New World across the sea.

By early March in that part of England the Ladysmock and Blackthorn blossoms were beginning to show, and along the lanes, the hedgehogs could be seen stealing beside the fences that skirted the orchards of apple trees then just beginning to flower. Impressive is Marlborough Downs, with its "purple shadows", Hackpen Hill, and the "grey wethers". The piping of the snipe and the warble of the lark, announced that spring was close at hand. But despite these invitations to remain, Anthony with his brother William, and some twenty odd others of the neighborhood, began the many tedious duties necessary for one embarking for America -- a destination further in fact than the North Pole, and an adventure considerably more hazardous than would be a journey, today, to Kamchatka, or Dorneo. Passage was arranged and purchased on the ship "James", out of London, but scheduled to pick up passengers at Southampton but forty miles below Marlborough. Multitudinous affairs had to be arranged; provision made for the support of his family, which for the time were to remain at home; necessary equipment for himself selected; and appropriate clothing for the cold American winters to be gotten together. Each man bound for The Massachusetts Bay Colony carried with him four pairs of shoes, Norwich gaiters, two suits of doublets-and-hose of leather-lined with oilskin, a musquet, bandolier, a corsolet and pike. There was little opportunity in the new colonies for anything but the simplest of purchases.

It was almost April of that year of 1635 before Anthony's last farewells had been made to his numerous kin and kith whose dwellings dotted a beautiful landscape from Marlborough north as far as Hayden-Wick and Chisleton. If the venture was a success, his family were to follow.

The time of departure at last arrived. The small company took their final glimpse at ancient Marlborough, crossed the bridge which spans the River Kennet -- 'for silver eels renowned' -- and journeyed on, southward through the 'Downs' to the coast. In passing the cathedral at Salisbury, made richer by bequests of relatives, Anthony paused, and sent up a prayer for the safety and success of the perilous adventure about to be undertaken. He knew he would greatly miss olde England. No longer would he be a participant in the beloved festivities of his native land, and the revels, wrestling matches, back-sword fighting, and pig racing, held annually in the fields near the parish church, would henceforth to him be but a memory.

Through the old stone portal, that lead to the quay at Southampton, the ship "James", as it swung at anchor amid a cordon of smaller craft, was readily recognized by its bulk. This, Home for the next several weeks, was a large vessel -- three hundred tons -- and the skipper, Captain William Cooper, was a rugged old sea-dog and more than once he, or Capt. Graves, had steered this vessel across the upper part of the North Atlantic sea to his Majesty's Dominions in America. The smell of tar and brine, and the peculiar odor ever-present on ships, bespoke of the vessel's fitness.

At last on April fifth, 1635, at least three years before there was any indication of open strife in England, with the English flag -- the red cross of Saint George -- flying at her mast; with sails set; seamen on the alert; hawser ropes cast aboard; the vessel took the outgoing tide.* The fifty-three passengers some with their families, and a half dozen or so "servants" aboard, bid farewell to England. Below deck, neatly stanchioned, were some dozen or more cattle and sheep, sharing the hold with the baggage and provisions of the voyage, and as the purple shores of England faded into the horizon, there was many a heart-tug; for all knew that this was perhaps the last occasion which most of them would ever again see their native shores.

In general, the breezes helped them task readily westward, but at times the wind went against them, causing the crew to deviate frequently from their normal course. At other times "there was but a little breeze, or none at all, and during the calms the seamen fished for cod or mackerel or halibut, and brought up many a welcome dinner to break the monotony of cheese and beer. As the casks of fresh water and beer got low, all hands aboard turned to, to fill the empty casks with salt water to maintain the balance of the vessel. Numbers of whales were to be seen, as well as huge grampusses rolling about the sides of the boat." And finally after weeks at sea -- fifty-eight days in all -- the new shore was dimly seen through the morning mist.

On the third of June, 1635 the staunch vessel anchored off the then wharfless settlement of Boston, a location which but five years before had been but a wilderness. And decades before, this "wilderness" had been a part of North Virginia; for the old Virginia of earlier days had comprised this entire English overseas possession. The newcomers from the "James" were duly welcomed, and immediately offered a proprietary share in a former Indian settlement called

* See Appendix 9

"Quascacunqun", on a river of the same name not far from the sea, at the northern frontier. This point had been partially settled some months before as a Garrison Post, and the population recently augmented by another group from an older settlement below, for it had been determined to build up and strengthen this gateway to a rich Indian territory which lay beyond. Free-booters in the vicinity, it had been found, had been active in deviating trade with the Indians from the Colony. In such out-posts as these every Englishman was a soldier. The new settlement, Newbury, was named from the town in England, the former residence of Reverend Thomas Parker a prominent member of the party.

They had scarcely settled themselves in their rude temporary huts when a great storm -- doubtless a disturbance following a tropical hurricane, as are occasionally felt in those regions -- occurred. Had the journey to America been delayed but a few short weeks, the entire crew and the passengers of the "James" may have perished, for this storm so severe in intensity, would doubtless have capsize the vessel. According to a report by William Bradford, further down the coast at Plymouth: "Such a mighty storme of wind and rain as none living in these parts, either English or Indeens ever saw....it blew down sundry houses and uncovered others; diverse vessells were lost at sea, and many more in extreme danger....it caused the sea to swell above twenty foote, right up and down, and made many of the Indeens to climb into trees for their saftie."

After the storm had abated, the group of colonists had opportunity to examine the soil and vegetation about them, and to compare them -- perhaps with a touch of despair -- with their fertile farm lands at home. But they could not help but be impressed as others had been, with the beauty of the landscape and the nature of the waterways about them. Captain John Smith, the great explorer of old Virginia, less than a quarter of a century before, had expressed a marked preference for this "Massachusetts" coast over all other American regions. As soon as conditions permitted, they replaced their temporary huts with houses similar to those they had left behind them in England, and in a short time "all the wigwams, * huts, and huddles which the English dwelt in at their first coming (were replaced by) ... orderly, fair and wellbuilt houses, well-furnished, many of them". Thus wrote Edward Johnson, an observer of that decade.

The typical house closely resembled the dwellings to which they had been accustomed. The same second story over-hang, -- which

* See Appendix 10

in fact was an ancient medieval device, -- was faithfully reproduced in the Colony, and the small diamond-shaped window panes and generous chimneys were reminiscent of home. In such a house, a half-mile south from the cemetery, in what was to be known in later years as "old Newbury", on a slight eminence which for centuries was called "Morse's Field", lived Anthony and his family. For after a few months his wife and children had joined their husband and father in the great adventure. So well were these early houses built that the foundations of Anthony's original house were intact for over two centuries.

Each married settler had been granted twelve acres of land for his "Home lot", as well as other property, and an undivided interest in the land held in common. And thus -- by the "Old Towne River Alias ye Parker", -- lived, thought, worked and even wrote in the old Elizabethan style, this band of sturdy Englishmen and their families.

Separated from each other by dense wilderness, uncharted and mostly unknown, this group was but one of several other European settlements along the fringe of the New World. Beyond, through the unpenetrable forests, inhabited by strange savages and claimed by the rival nations of France and Spain, these early colonies were veritable outposts in the new hemisphere. Even the wildest dreamer could scarcely have visualized the future of the vast continent, to the border of which these sturdy Englishmen had migrated.

All outposts of civilization, then and now, have certain distinctive features in common, the free booters, the anti-social hermits on the out-skirts, and the class of hard visaged tough-living seamen, who looked as if they had been born and reared on the very ships on which they lived, were all visitors to Newbury. Then there was a sprinkling of French from Canada, some Dutch from the trading colony below, and the American savage. These Indians or "Americans", as they were called, were a strange people. They were thought to be of a nation allied with the Devil himself, and to have been organized -- with their own kings, princes and courts, and it was long to be a debatable question as to whether the Indians were a kind of beast to be shot at, or a degenerate specimen of the human race to be Christianized. If the Indian himself had been asked his preference, he doubtless would have preferred the former fate. On the other hand, to the Indian, the "Yanqlies" were likewise a strange race, with a white, often hairy, face, and a body which was completely covered with a mass of leather and cloth, and who often worked in the fields and gardens as did their common "squaws". Half devil and half god, the white man ruined the hunting grounds, then

paid good wampum for bare land itself; he traded them whiskey and rum on the one side, but would punish them severely when they drank it; and the diseases they spread were quite as deadly as their loud and boisterous gunfire. The early colonists learned much from their Red brothers; not the least of which was that these Indians were not amenable to slavery; were grossly ignorant of the grave pronouncements of his Majesty's wigged and learned Jurists; and could not drink their liquor like Englishmen. Although face to face in their new destiny, perhaps there were none, of all human creatures, who were more utterly apart in all realms, than the American savage and the Puritan.

Even in the New World, however, "the typical Puritan", was not always the drab and gloomy thing he was afterwards painted. The Puritans in America dressed in much the same attire as did others of their class at home, and much the same punitive measures were necessary to control much the same infractions of law and order as were necessary for their fellow-Englishmen and Englishwomen, at home. Living at a time when "upstart insolence", drunkenness and dissipation were rampant, they fought for a return to the less pretentious and more 'decent' ways of their forefathers; and when they drove out newer religious cults, they were but protecting, in a very practical way, their very own political safeguards.* And even when they tried women for Witchcraft or hung or plotted to sell into slavery the Quakers -- William Penn in one instance -- they were acting in no way different from the current superstitions and narrowness of Englishmen at home or people in Europe generally.

For seven long years these Puritans at Newbury had been struggling with the rocky soil and frigid winters, when, the "Great Migration", having run its course, there was a marked depreciation in the value of their cattle and lands and a corresponding scarcity of commodities and ready money. Many of these people who by now were fully appreciative of the fact that their overseas settlement was in climate and fertility more comparable to Iceland than to their native English shires, thought seriously of moving elsewhere. There was much talk of removing to the West Indies or Barbados, or even to the Dutch settlements of New Amsterdam. Some indeed were planning to return home to England. Governor Winthrop pleaded with them, however, and impressed upon them the unfairness to their fellows should any of them desert their present habitat; for, -- he told them, and truthfully, -- they all had counted upon each other to stay on, and so these men and women of deep conscience remained on

* See Appendix 11

that bleak and sterile shore. * They were determined however to abandon the thankless task of attempting to cultivate that stubborn soil, and moved down towards the mouth of the river where they soon acquired some measure of success fishing, whaling and trapping. They were learning an early lesson in American adaptability.

Some of the younger men, it is true, left for the South* or home; and a cousin of Anthony's returned to England in time to serve as a colonel under Oliver Cromwell. Newbury, admittedly a failure as an agricultural project, was on its way, -- favored as it was by deep channeled waterways and a wealth of forests, -- to become a great ship-building center.

Anthony had lost no time when he arrived in the New World to qualify as a "freeman" of the colony. This signified membership in the accepted church and bestowed the suffrage right -- a right which was by no means universal in those early settlements. In his group of seventy colonists admitted as freemen with Anthony were several of note: John Winthrop, the later President of United Colonies of New England; Colonel Philip Elliott; John Coolidge, the ancestor of a future President of the United States; Samuel Appleton; and William Townsend.

It was in 1643 that Newbury was again the mark of a great catastrophe. Was nature bent on inflicting a "baptism of fire" to these sturdy yeomanry who had dared to settle overseas? Another severe storm brought great destruction. Trees were uprooted, one falling upon and killing an Indian and many roofs were demolished, including the roof of the Meeting House, then filled with the assembled populace. And five years before, an earthquake had been experienced in New England. The winters at Newbury were very severe for those Englishmen and women, accustomed as they were to the milder climate of southern England, and temperatures of from twenty to thirty degrees below zero and heavy snows, was a real hardship.

These colonists lived under the social customs and laws of England, but as in the older Anglo-Saxon or Teutonic groups, the entire body of citizens met regularly to conduct the affairs of their local government. The Meeting House, or local Government House, was also used for church duties on Sundays, and it was one of the tasks of Anthony to ring the bell for assembly -- an honor of some import in those early days, and the usual duty of the Towne clerk. As time

* See Appendix 12

* See Appendix 13

went on, Anthony added to his original holdings, and became, indeed a substantial man of the colony. In the society of the times in which the value of a person's property quite frankly determined his social status, he had a sufficient estate to appear in "great boots"; and his wife, Anne, to wear silks, and sit in a prominent pew in the meeting house of a Sunday. * Anthony had been appointed a Supervisor of the town Constable, and the Custodian of the fines collected; and in 1663 was one of the "fence viewers", or surveyors. All men of military age, or "fencibles", as they were called, were enrolled in a militia and Anthony's son was an officer in the early Colonial force.

But due to the very set-up of these Puritan Colonies in America, there was to shortly develop, a sort of dictatorship "by the Clergy". The Puritan clergy of the day, and notably those who had ventured to America, were particularly over-zealous in their attempt to better the world, and many a Puritan who had come to The Massachusetts Bay was rudely shocked at the intensity of the fanaticism and enthusiasm which was developing the colony into a real theocracy. Anthony, on more than one occasion, went on record with others of Newbury, in pleading for a modification of many of the penalties imposed on his fellows. Among his most intimate friends was Captain Daniel Pierce, whose residence, the former Spenser property, survives to this day. Others were Thomas Hoyer and Tristram Coffin, to both of whom he refers as "my loving and Christian friends". It was the latter who kept the Ordinary and Ferry for many years and resided in a dwelling which later became the home of Anthony's great-granddaughter, Margaret Morse, on her marriage to Joseph Coffin. The house is still preserved.

While there was always a constant defense set-up against potential Indian invasions, this colony, fortunately, was comparatively safe. Although the age of chemical warfare was as yet a long distance in the future, nevertheless the virus of smallpox was a silent though unsolicited ally of these Englishmen in their dealings with the Indians; and this scourge, so deadly to the Red man, provided for a time, a period of comparative peace on the frontier. Not a leisurely peace, to be sure, for it was to be at least another half century before there could be found in North America any person other than the Indian, the jailbird, or the tramp, who could be found at leisure. All were expected to work and rely upon their own resources. "Resettlement" by government supervision of "Relief" as we were to come to know it, was not in

* See Appendix 14

their vocabulary. John Morse, for instance, a town clerk in a neighboring village, and but lately ransomed from the Indians, was fully expected to continue his interrupted career from the very ashes of the ruins of his burnt dwelling, irrespective of his desire to tarry for a while under the good graces of his fellows. "Be thee gone out of Watertown within fourteen days next ensuing" read an order of the town's selectmen, "or give good and sufficient security that ye be not chargable to the town". This was perhaps a crude application of the spirit of the hunting field, -- "every man for himself and the devil take the hindmost".

In their Elizabethan houses in America, these Englishmen lived much the life they had been accustomed to at home. Beer was the usual drink of all, men, women and children alike. The use of water as a common beverage was looked upon with some astonishment, and when it was found to be quite palatable and healthy, these Englishmen were not a little surprised and amazed. Those with sufficient time to partake in hunting found much game in the neighborhood. Wild turkeys were plentiful, and even as far south as Newbury, huge moose, some as heavy as a thousand pounds, were still to be found roaming in that country.

As in all more or less isolated communities there was much participation in social gatherings, and many intermarriages among the descendants of these Englishmen, and there were to be very few in that part of the Bay Colony, in the course of time, not related by blood or marriage to Anthony. To mention but a few there were branches of the families of Emery and Ilsley; Adams and Emerson and the Lowells, Noyes, and the Sargents. But perhaps Anthony's most illustrious descendant was Samuel F. B. Morse, painter and inventor of telegraphy.

By 1663 two of Anthony's twelve children, Peter and Robert, both of whom were born in England, were intent on a distant horizon. Tarrying a while at Rowley and at Boston, they cast their eyes far southwesterly to distant lands for "better accomodations".

There had been, indeed, for several years past, a gradual expansion of English settlements towards the west and south, and Lieut. Lion Gardiner, one of whose descendants was to be the mother of the sixth generation of this story, had been foremost in the advance on that area known as Connecticut and Long Island.

Peter and Robert, however, were to join a movement which was more than an adjacent extension of the older borders. They were to join the first truly western migration from this quarter.

Chapter II. PETER AND HIS COMPANY

"By the bitter road, the younger son must tread
Ere he wins to hearth and saddle of his own."

- Kipling.

In the seventeenth century, among the English, the above stanza was true, with one outstanding difference, as it was when Kipling penned the situation two centuries later. For decades upon decades it had been a custom for the bulk of the father's estate to descend to but one, usually the eldest, son. While this was not universal amongst the yeomanry, nevertheless, it was not unusual. In New England, however, as also in some localities in old England, this procedure, - designated as it was to carry on the family's responsibility, - was not infrequently reversed and the younger son, instead of the elder, often became the heir to the essential part of the parent's estate. This was known as "Borough English". And thus it was with Anthony's family. Two of his oldest sons, Peter and Robert, were well acquainted beforehand, with their future expectations, and had been provided, by their father, with adequate means for setting themselves up in some new quarter. It was thus, the custom for these, the lesser heirs, to look over prospective fields of endeavor, and in America, join with a company about to embark into a new section of wilderness.

Although traveling in the early days was somewhat more of a formidable undertaking as compared with that of later centuries, the sons of these early colonists not infrequently made journeys to and fro not only among the smaller settlements in the vicinity, but often beyond the very frontiers. One of Anthony's sons, Robert, had ventured, as far away as the Dutch territory beyond New Amsterdam, Nieuw Nederlands, it was called and according to tradition, as early as 1657 had negotiated a private purchase from the Indians, residing thereon, of land across from Staten Island. Many of these early English attempts to force a settlement into Dutch territory had been promptly beaten off by Dutch troops; and as for the practice of individuals privately contracting with the Indians for land, without a special warrant from the government, it was soon to be made strictly unlawful procedure, in all the colonies. In this venture into the Dutch territory, Peter Morse, the second generation of this tale, may have journeyed with his brother. By 1663, however, Peter accompanied by Robert had travelled to Long Island which, at that time, was a disputed area between the Dutch and the English. If this migration was accomplished over land, it was along the old Indian trails worn deep with centuries of Indian traffic. Perhaps the journey was made by

water, and this would have been by far the less tedious method and the more popular one, for all the men of the period were greatly skilled in the handling of all types of watercraft.

Peter eventually arrived at a tiny new settlement laying but a few miles easterly of the large Dutch trading post and town of New Amsterdam, and under the Dutch influence, if not indeed under its jurisdiction. At this area were not a few Englishmen as well as some seafaring Dutch from the shores of Virginia and Maryland. From here it was an easy sail down New Towne creek to the greater settlement on Manhattan Island. Here was to be found even then a most cosmopolitan community, although the greater part of the inhabitants were Dutch families who had established themselves there more than a decade before. Among them was Claes Martenszoon Van'T Rosenvelt, the founder of a family which was to become so prominent in the America to come.

On the western portion of Long Island Peter and Robert found themselves in a most complicated political territory. The gradual encroachment of Englishmen towards, and even into, the Dutch claims, was creating a situation wrought with considerable embarrassment to both the English and the Dutch authorities. The English had rumors that the Duke of York was shortly to "take over" the entire area. The Dutch, sensing the same, nevertheless were powerless to act, and by some agreement it was determined by both parties, English as well as Dutch, to consider these western Long Island settlements a sort of a semi-official Confederacy of English towns.

Peter and his brother "upon ye disbursement off ffour pounds a peece" joined-up with a company comprising, in the end, some eighty men -- "wel disposed men of sober and peacefull conversation", according to John Winthrop, a contemporary and the most scholarly man of the day in New England. Their object was the "purchase" of land "beyond the bay", or at "Affter Kull -- (as it was called, by the Dutch) -- situated some 15 miles Southwest of Manhattan Island, and not unfamiliar to Peter's brother and to the agents of the "company". A most fertile and healthful area, it seemed destined by fate to be but waiting for them to occupy. But forty-four years before, it had been seriously discussed as a landing place for the Mayflower Pilgrims, later as a proposed Grant to that staunch old Dutchman, Augustus Hermann; and in 1638, as the destination for Anne Hutchinson and her followers. Thus, although thrice threatened, it still retained its wild and primitive nature, including a number of Indian settlements, yet undisturbed. Peter and his company were unsuccessful, at first, in consummating the proposed settlement. For a half dozen years groups of New England men, many of them old hands at founding new settlements elsewhere, and for the time being living

on Long Island, had attempted to make satisfactory arrangements with the Dutch, for a peaceful groups occupancy of some of this area. A "company of honest men that dezier to sit doune ther to make a plantation" they styled themselves. And failing in this, some twenty of the most daring had actually attempted to force a settlement, only to be beaten off by gunfire from a detachment of the soldiers of the Dutch Company. Some, perhaps a little discouraged by their unsuccessful attempts, were beginning to discuss the possibility of a settlement in some other territory of His Majesty's Dominions; perhaps in the island of Jamaica, or in Carolina, or even in Maryland, -- whose northern boundary in those days extended as far north as the later city of Philadelphia and where not a few Puritans were beginning to migrate.

It would be another decade before William Penn -- for the moment forgetting his Quakerism in his haste to his station aboard his father's flagship -- was to conceive Pennsylvania.

The doggedness of the English generally has its rewards. Finally, in August of 1664 a fleet of three English warships filled with troops ready for action anchored off the Dutch settlement of New Amsterdam. The Englishmen on Long Island -- especially those heretofore unsuccessful in completing satisfactory arrangements to settle within the Dutch controlled area -- armed themselves for an expected attack on the Dutch force. Peter Stuyvesant, that grand old Dutch soldier, "fumed and swore, and stamped his wooden leg" at the cool demand for surrender. But the merchants, and more practical members of the Council, saw at once the helplessness of armed resistance, and on September 8, 1664, the town capitulated. New Amsterdam, then with a population of about 1500 people of many nationalities, became New York. But under the new flag the Dutchmen and their culture remained to leaven this westward advance of the English. And thus the flag of St. George, much to the expressed disgust of the French commandant of Canada, to say nothing of the annoyance of the Dutch West Indies Company, was planted on the old Dutch claim from Canada to Maryland, uniting geographically at least, all the English settlements along the Atlantic. It was not until some three years later, that the peace of Ereda confirmed the English title to this conquered area. Although Peter and his company did not fully appreciate its true significance, it was but a preconceived step in the crown's overseas policy, now intent on crystalizing colonial claims. In the entire conquered territory, from Canada to Maryland, now to be called the "Territory of the Duke of York", they were less than ten thousand people, most of whom were scattered at far distant trading centers.

The first of these is the fact that the
the second is the fact that the
the third is the fact that the
the fourth is the fact that the
the fifth is the fact that the
the sixth is the fact that the
the seventh is the fact that the
the eighth is the fact that the
the ninth is the fact that the
the tenth is the fact that the



the eleventh is the fact that the
the twelfth is the fact that the
the thirteenth is the fact that the
the fourteenth is the fact that the
the fifteenth is the fact that the
the sixteenth is the fact that the
the seventeenth is the fact that the
the eighteenth is the fact that the
the nineteenth is the fact that the
the twentieth is the fact that the

the twenty-first is the fact that the
the twenty-second is the fact that the
the twenty-third is the fact that the
the twenty-fourth is the fact that the
the twenty-fifth is the fact that the
the twenty-sixth is the fact that the
the twenty-seventh is the fact that the
the twenty-eighth is the fact that the
the twenty-ninth is the fact that the
the thirtieth is the fact that the
the thirty-first is the fact that the
the thirty-second is the fact that the
the thirty-third is the fact that the
the thirty-fourth is the fact that the
the thirty-fifth is the fact that the
the thirty-sixth is the fact that the
the thirty-seventh is the fact that the
the thirty-eighth is the fact that the
the thirty-ninth is the fact that the
the fortieth is the fact that the
the forty-first is the fact that the
the forty-second is the fact that the
the forty-third is the fact that the
the forty-fourth is the fact that the
the forty-fifth is the fact that the
the forty-sixth is the fact that the
the forty-seventh is the fact that the
the forty-eighth is the fact that the
the forty-ninth is the fact that the
the fiftieth is the fact that the
the fifty-first is the fact that the
the fifty-second is the fact that the
the fifty-third is the fact that the
the fifty-fourth is the fact that the
the fifty-fifth is the fact that the
the fifty-sixth is the fact that the
the fifty-seventh is the fact that the
the fifty-eighth is the fact that the
the fifty-ninth is the fact that the
the sixtieth is the fact that the
the sixty-first is the fact that the
the sixty-second is the fact that the
the sixty-third is the fact that the
the sixty-fourth is the fact that the
the sixty-fifth is the fact that the
the sixty-sixth is the fact that the
the sixty-seventh is the fact that the
the sixty-eighth is the fact that the
the sixty-ninth is the fact that the
the seventieth is the fact that the
the seventy-first is the fact that the
the seventy-second is the fact that the
the seventy-third is the fact that the
the seventy-fourth is the fact that the
the seventy-fifth is the fact that the
the seventy-sixth is the fact that the
the seventy-seventh is the fact that the
the seventy-eighth is the fact that the
the seventy-ninth is the fact that the
the eightieth is the fact that the
the eighty-first is the fact that the
the eighty-second is the fact that the
the eighty-third is the fact that the
the eighty-fourth is the fact that the
the eighty-fifth is the fact that the
the eighty-sixth is the fact that the
the eighty-seventh is the fact that the
the eighty-eighth is the fact that the
the eighty-ninth is the fact that the
the ninetieth is the fact that the
the ninety-first is the fact that the
the ninety-second is the fact that the
the ninety-third is the fact that the
the ninety-fourth is the fact that the
the ninety-fifth is the fact that the
the ninety-sixth is the fact that the
the ninety-seventh is the fact that the
the ninety-eighth is the fact that the
the ninety-ninth is the fact that the
the hundredth is the fact that the

Without further delay, the agents of Peter and his associates were now able to fully complete negotiations, and in late October of that year came to a final agreement with the Indians for a half million acres of fertile and well-watered land in that mild and comfortable climate, but fifty miles from the then upper limits of Maryland.

In exchange for this the Indians received from the company:

Two coats
Two guns
Two kettles
Ten pounds of lead
Twenty handfuls of powder
Forty yards of trading cloth, and
Eight hundred yards of white wampum. *

And the "English Company" in exchange for these commodities received title to a wide strip extending from the mouth of what became the Passaic river to the mouth of the "Raritans," and twice this distance, or thirty-four miles, into the wilderness beyond. This immense tract comprised about one-twelfth of the later state of New Jersey; and embraced the sites of such future towns as Newark, Perth-Amboy, Plainsfield, and Morristown. The Indian purchase was quickly confirmed by official Grant of Colonel Richard Nichols, Governor for the Duke of York. There is some evidence to indicate that Peter's father, Anthony, was seriously considering removal to this new area, the main settlement of which was to be within a short sail from the tip of Manhattan Island.

Each Associate, either a first, second or third lot participant, had a corresponding interest in this vast adventure.

This, the Achter Kol or Aftter Kull Grant to Peter and his companions, was dated December 1, 1664, and provided for "the setting up of plantacons thereon, and that none have Libertie so to Do without the Consent and Approbation of ye said Captain John Baker, John Ogden, John Bayly, Luke Watson, and their Associates"....and they "shall have Equal freedom, Immunities and privileges with any of his Majesty's subjects in any of the colonies of America." At the same time, the Governor set aside that "Liberty of conscience is allowed, provided such liberty is not converted to licentiousness or the disturbance of others in the exercise of the Protestant Religion"....and that the settlers "have liberty to make their

* See Appendix 15

particular laws and deciding all small causes with themselves"....
"the free choice of all their officers, both civil and military, and all men who shall take the oath of allegiance to his Majesty, and are not servants or day laborers, but are admitted to enjoy a Town-lott, are deemed freemen of the jurisdiction, and cannot forfeit the same without due process in law." *

The advance group of these Associates, many with their wives and children, lost no time in proceeding by sailing vessels along a course of some twenty miles by the several islands of the Bay, from New Towne Creek, Long Island, to their new destination. From then on, and for many decades to come, this route from Manhattan Island to the south and west, was to be the usual and common one. The "Jersey City" of a later century was then, -- at high tide -- a hundred acre Island called Pauls Hook.

The Sloops of Captain Thomas Young, and John Dickinson, and others deposited in groups the happy settlers, their baggage and their cattle, on the reedy banks of a beautiful stream; and as Peter, and his comrades, slung aside their clumsy muskets and bandoliers, their eyes fell upon an area of forests and fertile meadows. A contemporary described it, "grass as high as a man's knee, nay, as high as his waste, interlaced with pea vines and other weeds that cattel much delight in, as much as man can press through; and these woods also every mile or half mile are furnished with fresh ponds, brooks or rivers....and where, besides the pleasures of hunting, he may furnish his house with excellent fat venison, turkey, geese, heath-hens, cranes, swans, ducks, pigeons and the like, and where with ease he can go fishing, where the rivers are so furnished, that he may supply himself with fish before he can leave off the recreation." This indeed was a pleasant land * and was to prove a very fertile one for these Puritan sons of New England. They chose their settlement along the little river which the Dutch had called the "Achter Kol", at the crossing of the old Assinpink Indian Trail where the meadows gave way to the uplands, and about two miles upstream from the "Great River", -- later to be called Staten Island Sound.

Soon the clearing was all astir with the thudding ring of axe strokes echoing through the forests, the ever familiar odor of green lumber and burning underbrush, and the crashing of falling trees. Rude habitations or wigwams were constructed on both sides of the stream, a rough survey was made to apportion home lots for the inhabitants, and, until suitable bridges were built, the stream was

* See Appendix 16 * See Appendix 17

negotiated by ferries. For the time being all the inhabitants were grouped about the Meeting House as a precautionary measure against possible attacks from the savages, for there were known to be Indians, hostile in character, just beyond on the Raritan and the Minnesink, and in the country beyond, called Mankackewockky.

Just to the northeast of the main landing was the Town House for the community, used both for civil and religious meetings, but despite the fact the usual inducements were made to engage a minister of the gospel, it was to be another three years before one could be secured for the infant colony. Close by the Town House was the Ordinary, an all important part of every new community. * Just above the Town House, or Meeting house was the "Trayning Green" where all the male colonists between 16 and 60 were subject to training for defense in the military company, commanded by Isaac Whitehead. As a further precaution against Indian Raids, the exposed walls of each hut and fence were constructed of eight foot high palisades, and the river served as an efficient means of communication by canoe to and from their dwellings, the Meeting House, and the general Headquarters. All the colonists were skilled in some sort of craft, and Peter, as were his fellow colonists John Winans and Matthias Hatfield, was a weaver, an occupation so needful in the English colonies that each early settler had been urged to see that at least one of his sons was so trained. So busy were these early pioneers in their subduing of the wilderness, that they had little time to construct their permanent homes, and for some time continued to live in their Indian type of dwelling, called "wigwam". But four finished houses graced their modest settlement; nor had they even yet decided upon a name for the infant colony (which they thought was to remain their own little community under the jurisdiction of the Governor in New York), when they were hastily summoned to the waterfront on a hot July day, in 1665.

A strange ship, flying the royal pennant, had anchored off the "point", Captain Philip Carteret stepped ashore, from the ship's pinnace, exchanged greetings with the group of husky Englishmen now gathered at the Landing and announced himself the new Governor in place of Richard Nichols. His ship had not come directly from England, but had arrived, first, at "Newporte Neuce", Va. He told them, as he had told Richard Nichols, in New York a few days before, that the territory had been subdivided, and Lord John Berkeley, Baron of Stratton, and Sir George Carteret, -- instead of the Duke of York, -- were now the Proprietors. * Carteret, their new Governor, and a relative of Sir George was pleased to find a town already under

* See Appendix 18

* See Appendix 19

way, and selected the unfinished clearing as the Capital of what was now to be called "New-Jersey." The location of the Government House for the entire province was duly selected, and probably in deference to the sympathetic and beloved wife of Sir George, the new settlement, as well as the Associates' tract of half a million acres, mountains, meadows, and streams, was named the "Elizabeth-towne Plantations", or simply Elizabeth-Towne, as it eventually came to be called. This method of designating a large section by the name of its prime settlement was, and often still is, in rural communities a not unusual practice.

The Elizabeth Towne main settlement, by the establishment of the Governor's Headquarters was destined to become a more important town than was originally planned. The completion of the puncheon houses -- sort of walled-in plaisades pierced with a few openings and topped with a roof -- was accelerated. Peter's six acres of Home Lott lay between the west banks of the Elizabeth river, as it was now designated, and an ill-defined path leading to the Minnesink trail, and adjoined his brother Robert's. The highways bordering these comfortable though primitive dwellings were made exceedingly wide, and served as a part of the "commons" where cattle and pigs ran wild and unattended. Near the principal landing -- shortly to be bridged -- the Governor shortly set up his residence and his official offices, and just north of the new bridge, John Ogden built his dam and mill. The town Meeting House was soon enlarged and eventually was topped with a weather vane, mounting a ball and a weathercock. In order not to interfere with the day's work, town meetings were held in the evening and the colonists were summoned to assemble by a loud and prolonged blast of a horn, until sometime later when a bell was acquired. From time to time new members of the Association were added to its Rolls, but only after careful scrutiny and proper assessment. The presence of the Governor in their midst was to prove both an advantage and a handicap. The Achter Kol or "Elizabeth-town" Associates, still believing themselves to be the essential element of the population were becoming annoyed from time to time by the new arrivals from Governor Carteret's ship-load. These latter people, some thirty men and women, including the Governor himself, were indeed much more French than British in their background and culture, so that these English yeomen even yet incompletely adjusted to the prevailing Dutch environment -- to say nothing of the Indians -- found it difficult to fit in readily with Carteret and his followers. *

* See Appendix 20

And then there was a matter of land titles which had been secured not under the present Proprietor but under the Duke of York's regime, and which indeed worked to the disadvantage of Captain Carteret's own company of settlers. The legality of these was actually beginning to be questioned in some quarters. The combination of factors offered a potential cause for friction, and when some of the "Associates" evidently sensing future trouble, sold their interests and moved out of the colony, the Governor should have begun to appreciate the difficulties that might be in store for him. The igniting spark came in 1671. The Governor in direct violation of the Nichols' Grant, apportioned some of the Associate's land -- but a few acres of it, to be sure -- to one of his own party, Richard Mitchel, without the Town's sanction. As soon as the populace learned that Mitchel had accepted the lot, they decided in regular town meeting, to pursue drastic and practical measures to forestall any such future encroachments upon what they considered their rights. By a majority vote they ordered the demolition of the fences of the property in question, thus leaving open for destruction the garden, crops and orchards to the cattle, pigs and sheep which customarily roamed at will beyond the unfenced areas. Stephen Crane and Robert Morse, next door neighbors, and the latter a brother of Peter's crossed the highway from their dwellings and in their zeal, helped not only to destroy the fences, but even tore down some of the clapboards of Mitchel's new dwelling, and a rebellion, in fact, was begun. The Governor refused to confer with the populace, and as the revolt gained headway, the citizens took the situation in their own hands, and James Carteret, another relative of the Governor himself, taking the side of the people, was duly elected "President of the Country" by the "rebels". It was the People versus the Proprietor; a virtual mutiny in America.

This was one of the many revolts in the new English world that eventually were to lead up to a more general rebellion in later years. The decade 1670 to 1680, in America, furnished several such sporadic episodes, which perhaps signified that an overseas people which up to then had been completely occupied with the confining and arduous work of conquering the wilderness, found their energies for the moment free to enter other fields. As a trivial example of the trend, Peter's aged father, Anthony in Massachusetts, despite the fact that he held several official appointments in the community wherein he lived, abruptly joined a secession from one church to another -- an offense which cost him a fine of "one Noble". And down in Virginia, in that decade, the people followed Nathaniel Bacon in their rebellion against the Governor. The English in America were not always blessed with far-thinking or efficient Governors.

From Elizabeth-Towne, meanwhile, sensing real trouble, and with no adequate means to suppress it, the Governor fled, and from a safe distance sent a Proclamation by his Secretary, William Pardon, to these unruly "Associates" to declare their submission within ten days, or he would proceed against them as "Muteeneers and as Enemies of the Government". In reply to this ultimatum, John Ogden as chief magistrate, and the most prominent member of the community, issued a warrant for Constable Meeker to "Assemble four men of good report and with them to repair to the said Secretary's house, (where it was said some recent town legislature had been unlawfully secreted) and attach not only the legal documents, but other moveables as well". Peter, with his brother Robert, were two of the four men selected for this mission, and promptly proceeded to the house, which by this time was encircled by a goodly crowd of their fellow citizens. The officials surrounded the dwelling, and Peter, himself, climbed through a window and opened from within, the door for the rest of the searching party. The Governor, promptly advised of this, appointed a Deputy, and thereafter embarked for Europe to discuss with the Proprietors, the rebellion at hand, and the future action to be taken. *

The Deputy Governor, Berry, condemned Constable Meeker to forfeit his entire estate, and Peter, -- with the others involved -- was fined the goodly sum of ten pounds. These, indeed, were serious times for the young settlement. The affairs were still in a state of uncertainty: the Deputy Governor was preparing to strike with a heavy hand; and Counter Petitions were being dispatched to England; when a Dutch fleet of Warships, under the Command of Admiral Cornelius Evertsen, with sixteen hundred troops aboard, sailed up from the West Indies to "Port May" as the Bay of New York had formerly been called.

Gunfire from the Dutch ships was directed towards a small English garrison on Manhattan Island, and it was said this fire was quite ineffectively although stubbornly returned. However, when the enemy landed 600 troops, near the rear of the present Trinity church grounds, the final outcome of the attack was no longer in doubt. There had been but eighty English troops in the New York garrison to oppose this armada, and New Netherlands, Achter Kol, and the inhabitants of the vicinities surrendered and allegiance to the Prince of Orange was demanded of all. The English inhabitants, however, took their oaths with a reservation -- "provided that we shall not be forced in arms against our own nation if they are sent

* See Appendix 21

on a lawful commission from His Majesty from England". They would accept their new political status as victims of the fortunes of war, but they gave notice they would never -- despite their recent disputes with the Governor -- draw their swords against their English king.

The fifteen month occupancy by the Dutch, was in fact, a period of comparative rest and tranquility for the population of Elizabethtowne (Elizabeth-Towne). After peace was declared in 1673, when England regained by treaty, her prewar territory, and when the New Jersey governor had returned to Elizabethtowne (Elizabeth-Towne) from a two year's absence abroad, a "General Amnesty" was announced for all rebellious acts done between 1670 and 1673 -- except for those fines and confiscations already meted out. This referred to the English revolt just prior to the Dutch occupancy. Nevertheless the Associates were forced, under threat of forfeiting their estates to take out new Patents for the lands they already possessed. Impatient to establish themselves on their out-plantations, the colonists all eventually complied, although with extreme reluctance, and without in any way abandoning their claim of the yet undivided parts of the original purchase.

Before the spring of 1675 Peter had acquired land towards the Wood bridge area to the south, nearby which had settled a group of Quakers, many of whom were exiles from the Massachusetts Bay. In 1676, Peter, now calling himself, "Yeoman, formily weaver", * received a Patent for over two hundred acres. A hundred and forty acres (two parts: 130 and 10) of this was in a choice section, near his Wood bridge purchase, less than 4 miles south of the main Elizabethtowne (Elizabeth-Towne) settlement. This was the area of his brother's independent though not officially recognized Indian purchase years before. The tract was an especially well-watered one, readily accessible by boat, and even by way of a narrow Indian path, an off-shoot of the old Assanpink Trail, -- sometimes called the "Old Dutch Road," -- in its course towards Wood bridge and the Falls of the South, or Delaware River. Here, were being set up the plantations of many old neighbors and friends, such as the Olivers, Winans, Marsh's, and others, as well as his brother Robert's plantation on a neck of land, 130 acres in extent, immediately across the creek. This quarter, called "Neck of Land at Regawiakki", derived its name from an old Indian of the adjacent tribe of that designation, who lived in the region. It was not long, however, before these words were finally

* See Appendix 22

shortened to "Rawack" and in later decades to "Rahway", a name which was eventually to be given exclusively to the settlement on the southwest margin of the Neck.

Peter had sailed back and forth from this spot on many occasions, and much clearing of his land and planting of crops "in this remote dessert part of the world never formerly inhabited nor Cultivated", had been already accomplished by the time he and his wife Mary permanently took up their abode there.

Rawack Neck,* for the most part, was an almost level "Ruff and woody wilderness", rich in woods of linden, oak, elms, and ash, and wild fruit and strawberries. The upland, so called, extended roughly southeast into what soon became known as Trembly's Point, -- and northeasterly, to a much less degree, to the future Morse's Point, a small projection, scarcely warranting the name. Between these points and due east to Achter Kol, later to be further corrupted to "Arthur Kill", was a large "fen" or salt marsh, -- greatly prized for the winter pasturage it afforded, -- dotted here and there with several tree-topped "islands" of higher ground. The most boggy part of the fen was to be called "Rawack Swamp". In this tidal marsh or fen were to be found at the proper season innumerable ducks, geese and other wild fowl, -- a veritable hunter's paradise. This game, with the fish, oysters, and clams that abounded in the many salt creeks and ponds, provided well for the tables of these Englishmen and their families. The northern boundary of Rawack Neck, was a wide tidal creek, first known as Thompson's Creek or Nine Mile Creek, formed by the junction of West (or Two Mile) Brook, and Peach Garden Brook. In time, Thompson's Creek and its main tributary, West Brook, became known as Morse's Creek, a name which it retains to this day. This creek -- which is less watered communities would be called a river, which it is in fact -- was always noted for a peculiar clearness and brightness of its water. In its meanderings to the Kol, or Staten Island Sound, bordered as it was by thick reedy banks of brown and green, it resembled in time not a little some wide Holland Canal, and with the fluttering of wildfowl overhead, and the lapping of its waters against the sides of a solid sailing craft, it was a glorious sight to behold. Today, this ancient stream is all that remains of that once picturesque countryside, whose spell held these Englishmen and their descendants for so many generations.* The Southern boundaries of Rawack Neck, was the river of the same name (Rahway River).

* See Appendix 23

* See Appendix 24

Peter's tide-water plantation was in two joining surveys, embracing Morse's Point, and extending westward from the south bank of the creek that was to bear his name, along the borders of the marsh or meadows. As if physically to consolidate these two initial holdings, he erected his dwelling at their juncture, and immediately at the edge of the creek, no doubt, as a measure of safety from Indian attack,* and to be convenient to his boat - a necessary adjunct for all early tidewater planters. This vessel -- of such size and importance as to be particularly mentioned some years later when he drew up his will -- was a two-masted shallow-keel affair with a wide beam, serviceable for transportation of a lighter sort, and capable of easy sailing to Elizabethtowne, as well as to New York, and Long Island. His plantation dwelling was more pretentious than his house in the main settlement. He, however, continued to retain his "towne house" for at least another decade -- although he later disposed of a part of the adjacent grounds and buildings that lay along the Elizabeth river. The early permanent country dwelling of the time in that section had sidings of shingles, was a story and a half high, with a large central chimney, and a lateral wing. However, the initial out-plantation dwelling was a simple palisaded hut, which became a part of the permanent dwelling. After sufficient timber was cut by axe, the clearing of land was often done by "girdling" of trees, and burning of underbrush, a practice learned from the Indians, who resorted to this means in order to clear the forest for easier hunting. In due time, Peter's plantation took on the appearance of order and fertility. He enlarged his land holdings either by purchase, or by exchanging other of his properties situated in further parts of the "Purchase". The old English custom of distributing the several lands allotted to any one individual, in various and separated areas, as well as a share in a general "commons", had indeed prevailed here, but accessibility in New Jersey was quite different than it had been in England. Thus, from an initial "official" distribution of land to the planters a secondary person-to-person distribution ultimately occurred. Thus Peter, exclusive of his undivided share in other parts of the "Purchase", acquired almost 300 acres of adjoining upland, meadows and marsh at his "Home plantation" on Rawack Neck.

The life of a landed yeoman was indeed, although strenuous, one of great satisfaction and freedom, and Peter and his family were happy in their new home. *But events of grave family importance were happening in Massachusetts.

* See Appendix 25

* See Appendix 26

Soon, after a letter from his father telling of the current gossip in Newbury, of his own good health and success, and of his appointment as Inspector of Leather for the town, another message a few weeks later in that year of 1680 contained sad and tragic news. Peter's uncle, William Morse, at Newbury, a sincere and lovable old man, and doubtless no less superstitious than were his fellow Englishmen, was led to believe that his dwelling-house was "bewitched". A precocious grandson, adept in pranks, had caused no little stir in the community, and notably at his grandfather's residence, the old Garrison House at the end of Market Street in Newbury Port. By the use of strings and weights, this perverted inventor of a boy, had caused several household objects to "disappear as if by magic", or to ascend the broad chimney, while the aged couple sitting by the fire wondered and were truly amazed. Finding no cause for these several phenomenae, which were repeated from time to time, they -- very indiscreetly it proved -- called neighbors to confirm their beginning suspicions. In the end, William's own wife, Elizabeth, Peter's aunt by marriage, was accused of Witch-craft, and the grand jury after long deliberation cited her "for not having the Fear of God before her Eyes -- being instigated by the Devil -- Contrary to the Peace of our Sovereign Lord, the King, his Crown and Dignity, the Laws of God, And of this Jurisdiction". Fortunately, but only after months of suspense, the condemned prisoner was finally reprieved of her conviction and happily escaped the fate of some 17 or 18 other good wives and spinsters of New England, who paid with their lives for the current superstitions of the times in which they lived.

Such occurrences caused a great shock to the families and relatives involved. Anthony, but a few months a widower, was severely broken up. In New Jersey, Peter and Robert -- now gradually broadening their views by wide contact with people of different origin and opinion -- felt perhaps not a little disgust for official recognition of such outworn beliefs.

By 1681, -- that year that LaSalle sailed down through a virgin wilderness and took possession of a vast slice of North America in the name of France; and the year before the father of Benjamin Franklin had arrived in America, or William Penn settled in his Pennsylvania, -- Peter's plantation was alive with activity. The proprietorship of East Jersey, having been disposed of to the Quakers, was the opportunity for many more of that sect to settle here, and many established themselves near "Rawack Neck". This occurred at about the time of the hardest winter ever experienced by the inhabitants up to that time. -- It was said that the Sound

to Staten Island was completely frozen over and "snow fell almost continuously from Martesmas to Christmas". The new Quaker governor, Gawn Laurie, soon began building more passable lanes and roads in the colony. Thus the pack-horse and the dependency on waterways was eventually to give way to more ample and quicker methods of conveyance.

In the autumn of 1686, Peter's father, died in Newbury. His heir, Peter's younger brother, Joshua, then thirty-three years of age, married and with two children, inherited the bulk of their father's estate, and Peter and Robert journeyed to Massachusetts to sympathize with their kin, to receive their separate bequests, and revisit again their many relatives. Anthony left an estate of over f340, a goodly estate in those days. In addition to his housing and lands, cattle, horses, sheep and swine, he left in his will -- according to custom -- many of his common household utensils, all typical and expressive of the life (and spelling) of the early English colonist in America. To his several sons and daughters were bequeathed such articles as: "platers, peringers, drinking pots, spoons, brass cettels, a belmettell scillit, water pails, barrills, and tobes". Then there were the more intimate articles of his house such as "blinkits, several pairs of shetes, pillos, bolster and coverlits, bedsteeds, feather beds, and mats". The latter was the ordinary name of the rug of the time. From his barn was listed his plow, harrow, chains, shovels, as well as his "yowkes, axes, howes, spad, and grind-stoen". Some of these articles found a new abode in New Jersey.

Peter and Robert, on their return from the Massachusetts Bay to their Jersey homes, found many changes rapidly taking place. Among these changes was the new attitude toward the 'American' savage. It was felt by this time that danger of hostile savage attacks was finally over. * Not that the stockade built by the little community for use in case of an Indian attack was dispensed with, or that there was an absence of Indians in the neighborhood, but the Indians now were invariably more friendly to the white man. In groups of four or five, usually in file at intervals of eight to ten feet apart, they not infrequently would be encountered on the smaller trails or even on the crude 'roadways' or 'Ridings' of the countryside. Indeed on Peter's own plantation, near the creek and but a few yards northwest of his dwelling, was an old Indian burial ground; and although the earthly remains of those Red men had been some time before disinterred by their brothers and buried elsewhere

* See Appendix 27

-- as was their custom on leaving old hunting-grounds, -- nevertheless decades later there were still to be found there many relics of the savages, such as arrow heads, bones of animals, and abandoned tommyhawks. But there were no hostilities now between the English and the Indians; and although the old defense policies against attacks persisted for many decades thereafter, there was no bloodshed or conflicts. * And then, in addition, the white population of that part of New Jersey was further increased in number when many Scots, driven from their homes abroad, had found refuge and hospitality in the eastern part of the Elizabethtown tract.

Despite the improvement in highways through that territory travel by boat still remained the common and popular method of transportation. And as the arduous work of settling a plantation became lessened, and opportunity for leisure and amusement correspondingly greater, it was not unusual for Peter and members of his family to sail his Ferianger, pleasure bent, to New York or Long Island. On such occasions Peter would replace his Buckskin apparel with his "bevar hat, silver buttoned coat, striped vest, 'dress' breeches, worsted stockings and great buckled shoes." And among the amusements of the period, not the least was the horse-racing. Before the town could boast of its own race-course, these were held semi-annually on Hempstead Plains, Long Island, where "you will find neither stick nor stone to hinder horse's heels, or endanger them on their races, and (where) once a year the best horses in the Island are brought hither to try their swiftness." A Silver Cup, presented with due ceremony, was awarded to the owner of the foremost racer.

While the English Revolution in 1688 had its repercussions in East Jersey, there was no appreciable sensing of the situation in the quiet of Rawack Neck.

Peter in his advancing years looked back upon a work well done, and a large plantation cleared and productive. Of the dozen or more property owners on Rawack Neck, he and his brother Robert were by far the largest landowners, and Peter, with the possible exception of Jonas Wood, was the largest single landowner resident in the area. Although a widower during the last several years of his life, he was surrounded by his sons and three daughters, the latter well on their way to womanhood. Of his four sons, Joseph had at first followed the lure of the sea, but marrying, had settled down on the western portion of his father's estate, with his brother Amos, a bachelor. Joshua and his small family were

* See Appendix 28

living at their widowed father's with his three young sisters; and Robert was on another family holding at the main Elizabethtowne settlement. Besides his brother and others in the community, Peter's "well beloved friends," as he called them, were Joseph Marsh and Samuel Oliver, both nearby neighbors of Rawack Neck.

In May of 1702, at the age of some seventy years, he passed to the Great Beyond. His last resting place is unknown. A hundred and fifty years later in Medfield, Massachusetts, his name was inscribed on a Memorial, as one of a related group of "Seven Puritans Who Emigrated from England to America". And among his close friends and neighbors, (whose simple faith he himself may have embraced) - were "those people called Quakers". *

* See Appendix 29

Chapter III. TWO JOSEPHS AND THEIR BROTHERN

"A handsome house to lodge a friend,
a river at my garden's end."

- Swift

"The Great Charter of England, alias Magna Carta, is the only rule, privilege, and joint safety of every free-born Englishman" --* wrote the Freeholders of New Jersey about the time that Joseph Morse, I, the third generation in America, was ushered into this primitive American world. A son of Peter and Mary, he was born on his father's plantation at "Rawack Neck" about the year 1677. He was named for an uncle, whose death occurred prior to his namesake's birth -- a name which was to be a common one in the family hereafter. The eldest of his brothers and sisters, -- all of whom were to miss a great deal of the education which their parents and grandparents had enjoyed -- he led them all in learning the ways of the woods and the water courses. To Joseph I, who could sail his father's skiff before he could read, it was but natural that the sea sent out to him a strong appeal, and this was the decade of unusual activity along the coast and rivers of North America. There is no doubt but that the sea had a strong fascination for the young adventuresome sons of early America. Perhaps indeed it was the dangers that accompanied this career that made it so attractive, for in those days pirate ships lurked outside many colonial ports. It was the time of Captain Kidd, the former respectable naval commander, turned pirate, whose activities touched in no small way the seaport of New York as well as the borders of New Jersey. Some of these vessels which flew the "blood red flag" carried as many as twenty guns and crews of over 100 men. * But notwithstanding this, there was much legitimate colonial shipping along the coast and Joseph I, as a mariner before he was twenty, sailed as far north as Newfoundland, and as far south as the West Indies. * Sometimes these mariners engaged in whaling for a voyage or two, for at this time it was a flourishing industry, particularly at Elizabethtowne, and young hands were needed to man the several vessels which followed this trade. Whales were extremely plentiful on Long Island Sound, and despite the possibilities of pirate attacks coastwise whaling at that time on the Atlantic seaboard was a popular and remunerative industry. It is said that the father of George Washington, in his youth, had followed the sea; and that his distinguished son, some years later, was only prevented from following this career by the letter from his uncle in London: "..... a common sailor before the mast has by no means the common liberty of

* See Appendix 30

* See Appendix 31

* See Appendix 32

the subject....and if he should get to be master of a Virginia ship (which is very difficult to do), a planter that has three or four hundred acres of land and three or four slaves, if he be industrious, may live more comfortably....". Doubtless Joseph I was the recipient of some such similar advice, and gave up the sea to join his father on the family plantation. * Or perhaps he might have anticipated that New Jersey shipping, after a rather auspicious beginning, was doomed to give way to the neighboring and now fast growing rival port of New York, where Queen Anne's cousin, Lord Cornbury, directed the policies of both New York and New Jersey,-- now both Royal Provinces.

This was the period that the Old World was to give for the first time some real consideration to the determination of more exact boundaries in the new hemisphere. France, impressed with her western territory, and more familiar with the geography of that quarter had just (1699) met an English fleet ascending the Mississippi, set upon establishing British claims in the interior. It is said that the French sea captain in answer to the inquiry, "Is this the Mississippi River," replied in the negative, and the "English turn", a point a few miles below the Indian portage where New Orleans was to rise nineteen years later, remains a perpetual memorial to the ingenuity of those Frenchmen who sent the English to search the plains of Texas for the river from which they were hastening to emerge. To the "New Jersey" men, however, the only concrete evidence of the French activity, of that decade was when a privateer of that nation, landed off the shores of their province, and caused considerable anxiety in the colony by plundering several dwellings.

Joseph I had lost his father in 1702, and his brother Amos, a bachelor, had died a few weeks later -- in the course of a small-pox epidemic in which there was a mortality of almost a fourth of the total population about New York: and East and West Jersey combined had a total population at that time of but little more than 15,000 people. By these deaths Joseph I had inherited the greater part of the family estate at Rawack Neck; and by subsequent purchase, acquired the entire well-stocked plantation of Peter, his father. For a time he settled his family -- consisting of his wife, Susanah, and two young children -- at the little Dutch cottage on the western part of the plantation, upstream, at a bend in the creek, a half mile west of the dwelling of his late parents. This cottage -- later to become a part of a more exten-

* See Appendix 32A

sive family dwelling -- was destined to remain in the possession of his descendants for over two hundred years. The main, or "Keeping" room, was approximately eighteen by sixteen feet with a great Dutch type of door hung with long wrought-iron strapped hinges, and flanked on either side by windows with solid wooden shutters. All the flooring was of wide boards and a pine chair-rail extended around the plastered walls. At one end was a large, wide fireplace, provided with a long-armed iron hook for the teakettle. Over this was a high mantel, and at two corners of the room were neatly paneled corner cupboards. The kitchen wing, two steps down, had a hand-hewed beamed ceiling with walls of plaster and pine, and a huge chimney with a very wide fireplace with swinging cranes for kettles and pots, flanked with the customary built-in ovens and pine panels. Beyond the larger room was a smaller one; and adjoining this, but accessible only through the kitchen was a small pantry, two steps below the kitchen and floored with brick, with a winding stairway leading to the loft above. This attic was used for storing articles of clothing and food, and through a tightly fitted door in the chimney access was made to the chamber where the lean venison was hung to dry. The entire structure was on three levels and like the earlier Dutch structures in America the front was protected by a generous over-hanging roof directly in line with the roof itself. To the northeast, beyond the herb and fruit garden, and but little more than a hundred feet away was the boat-landing, and the creek itself. * Dwellings of this type were white-washed, with doors and shutters a dull blue-green which in time faded into a soft bluish hue.

The early living room of this dwelling was the kitchen with its wide fireplace, often with two or three separate fires burning, which gave sufficient light for all purposes required. The rest of the house was lighted when necessary by "tallow-tips" or by burning whale oil in lamps. Much of the furniture was handmade and the eating utensils invariably pewter. What little silver plate there had been, in East New Jersey, had been generally melted down and used for currency or for taxes -- the latter having been extremely high at that decade -- And every house had its spinning wheel.

Hardly had Joseph I been established as a planter when he determined, in addition, to erect a tidal water-mill. Selecting a spot adjoining the old dwelling of his father's, half a mile eastward, he set about the building of Mills and a Dam -- a project which involved an expenditure of some 11000, according to the

* See Appendix 33

records of those days -- Although rebuilt on three later occasions, and always at the exact original spot, this mill was to remain in the possession of his descendants for many generations. Unlike the ordinary "Race" stream mill, the tidal mill was a more complicated affair, and was not so common among the English as it was amongst the Dutch. Perhaps Joseph's father, during his stay on Long Island just before his settlement at Achter Kol, had learned something of the workings of this type of mechanism from the old Dutchman, Garritson, and had transmitted much of his knowledge to his son; or perhaps old John Ogden's mill in Elizabethtowne proper had been the object of study. They were in all three tidal mills on Rawack Neck: Oliver's, Marsh's and Joseph, I's, but the latter was to outlive them all. "Morse's Mill," consisted of a wheel less than fifteen feet in diameter, with a dozen or more broad floats or cross-paddles, and while, in the course of its long life, it underwent changes in much of its secondary make-up, the basic mechanism remained the same. Often during the long years that this mill was to exist and serve the neighborhood community -- there were to be accidents to the equipment, and fires, for it was found that when the stones were placed too close together, sparks from friction with foreign particles sometimes ignited the "dust" -- on three occasions this mill was to be destroyed by fire. There was a dam across the narrow portion of the creek, with a water-gate which let in the incoming tide and which were closed before the ebb. The power was transmitted by an angle-cog to the stones placed parallel to the floor of the meal shop, one above the other, and to the area between them, was poured the coarse grain. The operation of such a machine required great skill and knowledge of the various parts, such as the bottom-spout-clank, the sill to the flume, the mud-sill, bridge-tree, stringer, flume-post and the tidal shaft. All operations were subordinated to the tides, and when activities were in progress there would be as many as four and a half hours of continuous grinding. At the sound of a blast on a horn, the laborers on Joseph's farm would drop their routine labor, and hasten to their duties at the mill.

The operation of such an extensive undertaking -- farm and mill -- required many hands, and in addition to free labor and indentured servants, Joseph I, - to the disapproval no doubt of his Quaker neighbors, - invested in the purchase of African slaves, then a ready commodity at Perth Amboy * and New York. Farming was indeed a slow and tedious process -- oxen were used exclusively for farm work -- and each team, - composed of four beasts, - required the services of two men and a boy either for ploughing

* See Appendix 34

or for hauling those peculiar "dry-land" sleds or drags peculiar to the tide-water section of this province. Unlike the plantations in Maryland or Virginia, where tobacco was early found to be a most profitable product for export, in New Jersey, where land was more expensive, there was a long period of experimentation with such crops as indigo, tobacco, even rice and cotton, before corn and wheat were ultimately to become recognized as the staple crop. Corn or maize comprised the chief elements of diet in the early colonies, and with the increased acreage of that crop, the Mills took on added and more profitable activity. Neighbor's ox teams lumbered down Morse's Mill Road, where for the usual fee of a fifth of the product, their corn was ground into flour and the owner's portion reloaded on the peculiar carts and drags of the period. For the storage of the accumulating products, between such times as it could be conveniently carried aboard Joseph's boat to Elizabethtowne or New York, additional buildings and sheds were required, so that in time the Mills gradually took on the air of a small settlement in itself. This was greatly accentuated when Joseph I eventually erected a new dwelling for himself and growing family in that quarter. This dwelling was a two and a half story structure built of "common red" brick baked on the plantation, with mortar seasoned with ox-blood. As was the custom, the thin brick walls were encased on the outside with wide shingles. At one end was a broad chimney beyond which was the kitchen, the ceilings of which, as well as of the house proper, were barely seven feet from the floor. As time went on and as the descendants increased, this same dwelling was enlarged to accomodate the members of a growing family. And as was the old Dutch cottage, which was to become the property of Joseph I's eldest son Amos, the new dwelling near the Mill, was also of several different floor levels.

The accessories of the colonial farm dwelling were many and varied. There was the ever-present smokehouse, the goosehouse for the proper ripening of game, the larder or salt-house, water-well shed, weaving shed and tool houses. Nearby were the slave quarters, and the barn. Most of the "cattle", a term which included the small scrubby horses of the period as well as the reddish colored Devonshire breed of early American horned cattle, roamed with the pigs at will in the woods on all portions of the plantation not protected by the zig-zag fences of split rails. These fences were of wood split into lengths of six or seven feet, and three or four inches wide, and laid upon each other crosswise. Sometimes there would be used fencing of wood stuck into the ground -- a sort of "chevaux de freize" arrangement; and even the later common post and rail fences.

The weaving house, or spinning house, was not the least important of all the adjunct's of a colonial farm dwelling. Joseph I and his family, as other yeoman planter families, were obliged to supply from their looms almost their entire needs in the matter of clothing; for clothes purchased in the colonies were twice as expensive as in England. Clothes were made at home, and flax and wool were among the chief products of the plantation. From flax, linens were made; and from the wool of their own sheep were manufactured woolen garments. A combination of the two materials, was a common product in the American colonies. This, -- linsey-woolsey, -- was peculiar to those times. The shearing of the sheep, the preparation of the flax, the spinning of the product, the dyeing, and the final thickening of the goods in a fulling mill (there was one at Elizabethtowne), as well as the weaving and tailoring of the cloth was a long, continuous, and consecutive task. Much of this was done entirely by the household or the servants or slaves of the household. The herb garden furnished many materials for simple home remedies, * which consisted of materials for the preparation of infusions, of digitalis, diuretics, stimulants, purgatives, and counter-irritants. These herb gardens adjoined the flower gardens, which, in this part of New Jersey were most profuse and decorative due to the influence of the Dutch, with whom the culture of flowers was a popular and colorful pastime.

Joseph's household had its dogs -- invariably of the mastiff breed -- which in the earlier days of the colony had been used as a protection against the Indians, and also as a means of hunting the wild wolves which infested the territory. Wolf hunts, as well as fox and deer hunts, were not uncommon and were popular sports as well as being most helpful in the preservation of the farm crops. The plantation was almost self-sufficient; leather was tanned for the harness, yokes were fashioned for the oxen, boats built on their own staves, even tobacco was raised. The outside purchases were mainly salt, powder, and shot.

The journey from the Morse plantation to Elizabethtowne was a matter of about an hour and a half over the poor trails and roads of the day; or even by sail from their Landing to the Towne landing place but a few yards below the Meeting House. On Sunday, however, according to the general practice in that region Joseph I and his family often spent the greater part of the day in town; the mid-day meal was brought along and the repast generally spread on the green. This also was the opportunity to visit with their

* See Appendix 35

many friends and relatives in the main settlement. This all-day sojourn in Elizabethtowne was also necessary during the training period when the militia executed their close order exercises on the Village Green just above the Meeting House. In accord with the custom prevailing in the colonies, the "Ordinary" or Tavern was located nearby for easy access, and during intervals in the long Sunday sermons, as well as during the intermission in the military exercises, it was usual for the participants, officers and men, minister and congregation to step across for refreshments. Such games as shuffleboard, quoits, and bowling-on-the-green played during those all-day affairs developed many skilled in those sports.

While purchases were often made in town on the occasions of these "meets" there was no lack of peddlers either by foot, by pack horse, or by boat, to the outlying plantations of the neighborhood. The articles they offered were of various types and descriptions: and buttons, cloth, jewelry, perfumes and musical instruments were but a few of their several wares. Many of these peddlers were Dutchmen or the ambitious sons of some New England farmer, and to these peddlers must be given the credit for the improvement by practical and continuous traffic of much of the trails and roadways of the period.

Social life on those Jersey tide-water plantations was in no sense barren. "Frolics" and "Bees" had come to be one of the earliest forms of community gatherings in the American provinces, and were even more emphasized here in "Rawack Neck" than in many an adjacent countryside where churches were more conveniently situated. For the people of the colonies the churches provided not only their 'religious' environment but a local assembly point of great importance, as well. The husking of corn and the raising of a dam, the building of a barn or a dwelling in Rawack Neck, therefore, provided an especial excuse for a grand rallying of the neighbors of the vicinity. Primarily started as a neighbor-help-neighbor affair, they had become indeed more an opportunity for social contact than a frank rendition of service one to another. Here old neighbors met, their children became acquainted, politics were discussed, and the gossip of the times was threshed out. The relative isolation of country life drew together the inhabitants in a way that the later more modern way of living was not to offer. The gatherings at weddings, christenings and funerals also played a large part in the meetings of the community, and there were few families in the vicinity not in time related or connected one to another. This was particularly true of the families of the Morse's, Marsh's, Woods', Bonds' and Winans'. And the young folks were

married at a rather early age. Joseph's cousin, Mary Mitchell, was but fifteen years old when she married John Ogden, the grandson of the original associate of the same name.

On the numerous occasions of neighborhood gatherings the good wives and daughters of the successful yeoman-planters, put away their more simple attire, and turned out with much the same perfumed garbs as were prevalent in such centers as New York or Philadelphia. For the women, the vogue of that day demanded a loose overdress hung from the shoulder, over a large hooped petticoat of blue, green, or similar vivid colors, capped with a camlet hood of various shades; -- or a cap of muslin tied under the chin. The most daring often adopted the very high headdress of the time as well as face patches, then just coming into style. And there was no dearth of rich apparel, for not a little material was constantly being brought into the colony by smugglers or pirates; who were still frequently to be met with, in the adjacent seaports. Joseph I on these social occasions was probably most uncomfortable, as he climbed into his straw-filled wagon headed for a neighbor's, attired in a periwig, or with his hair tied in the back, and a long dress coat lined with buckram.

There were no newspapers until after the first quarter of the 18th century, and this era in British-America, and even in New Jersey, -- cosmopolitan as it was in the main, and within such easy distance of two adjoining centers of culture, -- there was a sense of deep provincialism, a sort of "lull" as it were, in the history of our country.

Joseph I, "yeoman", died in 1729, at his plantation which he loved so well. He bequeathed to his six children and widow, a considerable estate which included at least two negro slaves, "Peter" and "Joseph". * He was the first of his branch of the family to have been born, lived, and to have died, in America. -- At his funeral, (similar to those of the time, of persons of like estate) there were mourning rings, over-abundant crepe, and a large concourse of neighbors and friends entertained with a sumptuous repast, whiskey and rum, with the children, and servants all garbed in black. *

His elder son, Joseph Morse II, the fourth generation in America, was twenty years of age when his father died. By his parent's will, his sisters and mother were amply provided for, and the entire plantation and stock thereon were equally divided between him and his only brother Amos, three years his junior. To Joseph II

* See Appendix 36

* See Appendix 37

was left the new dwelling house lately begun near the Mill, and the Mill itself, as well as the entire eastern portion of the plantation. To Amos was left the western portion, including the little Dutch cottage. As Amos grew into manhood and married Susannah Trembly, a name perpetuated by "Trembly Point", he preserved the little cottage, which, with an extensive addition of a two-and-half story main section of brick sidings and gambred roof, erected about 1750, "in the London taste", continued so long in the possession of his descendants. He called his portion the "Homestead" farm. The plantation having become much less isolated since the days of its primitive beginning, both sons had been able to receive an excellent education.

Joseph II, improved the Mills, * perfected his farm -- improved his dwelling and in looking about for further activities on which to expend his apparently tireless energies, took up the profession of surveying, the elements of which he had perhaps learned from his father, whose familiarity with the compass was an early lesson at sea. Contemporaries, realizing no doubt that Joseph II deviated from the standard complacency of the times, called him 'eccentric'. That he was an unusual character, cannot be denied. On one occasion -- it was said -- he indignantly proceeded to a neighboring farm, armed with a loaded musket, and followed by his unwilling and badly frightened negro slave, "Pomp", to insist on a more careful maintenance of fences (the poor repair of which had permitted cattle to overrun his premises). On the other hand, Dr. Craig, a sort of biographer of the section, describes how on one occasion, having arrived to survey the line between two adjoining properties some distance from his home, Joseph II discovered to his chagrin, that he had left the "Needle" of his compass behind. Apparently unconcerned, he traversed the disputed line backwards and forwards, and finally directed the owners, both of whom were present, to each plant stakes where they each thought the proper line should be. There was but a few feet difference between them. After some time spent in adjusting his compass (without a "needle") he withdrew to a distance, and directed the parties to each adjust their stakes according to his signals, until in time he had them all in one line -- in the very center of the disputed property. Then putting down his instruments, he authoritatively informed them of the correct and true boundary line, and further disputes, it was said, were thereby ended. This must have been an extraordinary occasion, however, for Dr. Craig emphasizes that "he was a very reputable Land Surveyor and Conveyancer; and stood so high in this respect that few important cases were determined without the prac-

* See Appendix 38

tical examination by compass and chain made by Joseph Morse."

In 1736 -- the year of the birth of Patrick Henry -- the "Committee of Seven" of Elizabethtowne appointed him Surveyor for some 25,000 acres in the area that was to become in time, Morristown, Basking-Ridge, Chatham and Peapatch. With the aid of William Coursen of Staten Island, and five assistants, the project was "duly and faithfully performed" in about two years. Not, however, without some real difficulties. Ever since the day of the original "Indian Purchase" there had been considerable dispute in land titles. Mr. Cooper complaining that Joseph Morse, the Surveyor, "by walking over his green wheat", had unlawfully trespassed on his land, instituted the well known litigation "Cooper vs. Morse", a law-suit which was to hold a prominent place in New Jersey annals for so many years. Surveying was a most popular occupation in America in those days of disputed boundaries and new settlements. And this was the decade when one George Washington, in the little frame cottage on the Ferry Plantation beside the banks of the Rappahannock, in Virginia, was to begin the study of that profession which was to stand him in such good stead in his after career.

The Morse plantation, participated in the neatness and order that prevailed in the entire community -- a condition noticeable by all visitors during that half century and before. Kalm, the Swedish Naturalist, remarked in 1748: "Elizabethtowne is a small village....the houses are mostly scattered, but wellbuilt, and generally of board with a roof of shingles and walls covered with the same. There are likewise some stone buildings. A little rivulet passes through the town, west to east; it is almost reduced to nothing when the water ebbs away, but with the full tide one can bring up small yachts. Here were two fine churches, either one of which made a better appearance than any one I had seen in Philadelphia...both in and about the town were gardens and arches; and it might truly be said that Elizabethtowne was situated in a garden. The ground hereabouts is even and well cultivated...the country is low on both sides of the river and consists of meadows. But there was no other hay to be got, but such as commonly grows in swampy ground; for as the tide comes up...these plains were sometimes overflowed when the water was high. The people hereabouts are said to be troubled in summer with swarms of nats or mosquitos, which sting them and their cattle".

No doubt the malaria infected "Nat" or mosquito was quite prevalent in that community, but, the greatest dread in America

was yellow fever. Yellow fever, by the middle of the 18th century took the place of the earlier epidemics of smallpox, a disease which in fact even then was being controlled by a crude form of inoculation. No doubt the prevalence of the yellow fever mosquito in those parts was due to the fact that it was able to survive in the open water-pails so common on board the ships coming from the West Indies. There was much traffic with these Islands, and from the West Indies had also come the grog (rum and water) which was the common alcoholic beverage in New Jersey as well as in the other American colonies. Grog indeed had taken the place of the earlier beverage, beer, which a generation or two before was universally consumed in all the households on the Atlantic seaboard. While the smoking of tobacco was prevalent with all, the use of snuff was almost a universal practice in the 18th century both in America and in England. * The yeomanry in America usually had snuff boxes, of silver or tortoise shell, to carry about with them, while the "mull" -- originally called a mill -- was a large table snuff box for guests, fitted with an arrangement to pulverize the more crude tobacco. This was generally kept on a table in the living room of the dwelling of the time. "The New Jersey Men", wrote Burnaby, an English traveler in that area some years before the Revolution, "are like most country gentlemen; good-natured, hospitable, and of a more liberal turn than their neighbors (of adjoining provinces) ... they live altogether upon their estates, and literally are gentleman farmers". Travelers from abroad generally remarked upon the sturdiness and earnestness of the British people in America in those times, and they were referred to as "a very kind and loving people, kinder than in Scotland or in England".

In New Jersey, the average "yeoman", -- a term which existed in America as late as the middle of the 18th century -- had "six or eight servants, a dozen cows, eight or ten oxen, horses, breeding mares, and flocks of sheep -- but, let the sheep not run the woods for fear of their being destroyed by wolves"

Many of the newer immigrants had come over as indentured "servants" -- that is to say they bound themselves by contract for a specific period in order to pay their passage. This practice persisted for many decades. And years later, Thomas Cooper, an Englishman who made a close personal study of America, wrote "the country... furnishes nearly enough (servants) -- and the immigrations of all kinds, from Germany, from Ireland, from Scotland and from England, amount to about 10,000 a year; these together with the liberated

* See Appendix 39

"blacks" furnishes a sufficient supply to the states north of Maryland....few servants are kept for show, owing to every person being of some ostensible profession. For instance I know only one professed "Gentleman", i.e. idle, unoccupied person of fortune in Philadelphia. Their time is not yet to come". In this, Cooper, of course, was using the term "gentleman" in a narrow and strict sense as used in England up to that time, and evidently did not take into account the several Lords of the Manor in Maryland, Virginia and New York, who were as much at home in London as they were on their extensive plantations in America.

In 1755 Joseph II, along with Robert Ogden, Thomas Clark, Jonathan Crane, and a half dozen others, was listed among many freeholders in Essex County as an "esquire", -- a title emanating perhaps from his office of Justice of the County Court, which office incidentally he may not have filled to the complete satisfaction of the Crown; for the Government in one official communication expressed its displeasure for his alleged negligence in the case of certain seamen who were deserters from the English vessel, "Ferret". *

It was this year of 1755 that General Braddock, the first British general to lead a campaign of any size into a wild region, -- with George Washington as one of his Aides -- was defeated by the French, in Western Pennsylvania. There was no doubt that now England was taking full notice of the importance of her American colonies; it was just ten years since the King, in recognition of extraordinary service rendered, had knighted, for the first time a native of one of the American colonies; William Pepperell. It was indeed in the two decades, 1743-1763, that marked the end of a simple provincial existence and the beginning of wealth, prosperity and a great future for the "American" people. It was within these two decades that William Pitt sent American and British troops to break the power of the French on the Ohio river, and thus, with the conquest of Canada, assuring a great western and northern country to the English-speaking people. Many Americans -- George Washington as one notable example -- were, within these two decades, to receive thereby a training in the art of war -- without which they may not have been able to have won their later independence. And as for England, with a national debt more than doubled by the American exploits, the question of taxes was soon to be a real problem - And it was in this era that American provincial society began to embrace, for the first time, gentlemen of leisure with means to satisfy their aspirations. A great many of the landmarks of future days -- dwellings and public

* See Appendix 40

buildings -- date from that time; and Mt. Vernon, the home of Washington, was then beginning to take on its manorial dignity.

In the so-called French and Indian Wars of the period none of the immediate family of Joseph Morse II were of military age, but many of his New England relatives served in the King's army, and not a few of his cousins enlisted in the Foot troops and Horse companies recruited from within the boundaries of Elizabethtowne. At Governor's Island in New York was stationed the Royal American regiment, recruited in a large part from New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Virginia and Maryland, and which had been with Wolfe when Canada was gained for the British Crown. This Royal American Regiment still survives; and eventually became the King's Royal Rifle Corp, 60th foot, of which the King of England is the Commander in Chief. Over two hundred years after its organization in America, in a great World War (1918), it was to fight side by side with American regiments from the same vicinity from which it had originally sprung.

There was little doubt that the English colonies of North America, north and south, during the two decades before the American Revolution were a most happy community. It was almost a perfect England overseas; and Elizabethtowne was to be called "the handsomest town in New Jersey". Joseph II, and his family and relatives and friends, as did so many of the county gentry in New Jersey and elsewhere, lived a happy life of plenty in their comfortable houses surrounded by fertile fields and meadows, and pleasant neighbors. They drank their tea, read the meagre literature available, sent their children to schools, and were waited on by their faithful negro slaves. * In New Jersey the rigors of Puritanism had been considerably modulated by contact with the Dutch, Scots and the Quaker, as well as with some French Huguenots, such as were the Trembly family of Rawack Neck. That the tidewater plantations of New Jersey never reached the magnificence of those in Virginia was perhaps but an accident due to the crops and the fertility of the soil. There was no James River tobacco to be grown on the banks of the Raritan. But deep down there was nevertheless a marked difference -- even from the beginning -- between the two sections. New Jersey did not offer to the Cavaliers who flocked to America after the Civil War in England, the cheap lands or the gayer life that was to be found further South. And Philadelphia and New York obscured much of the otherwise normal social development of the Jersey countryside.* It was truly a middle colony. In real culture and

See Appendix 41 See Appendix 42

education however, the average Jersey man was far ahead of his brothers south of the Potomac; indeed he was far ahead of his brothers at home in England. For in England, as late as the quarter century preceding the American Revolution -- to judge from a survey of a typical English country parish -- more than half of the population could not write.

The merchants and planters in British America were reaping the reward of the labors of their forefathers. In both the North and the South great mansions were now to be seen, recently built, and replacing the more modest structures of their ancestors. No doubt the greatest wealth was to be found in Virginia and Maryland, although in the Middle Colonies and in New England many elegant buildings were erected. As a rule these houses copied the architecture of England. It was in this decade that Joseph II's brother, Amos, built his large dwelling -- the most outstanding in that community -- designed after the Philadelphia Quaker manner. With front and rear of exposed brick, and massive chimneys, it commanded a site on the old plantation a half mile west of Joseph's dwelling, and joined to it, was the old Dutch cottage of early years. This "new" house was well fitted with paneled closets and window bases, a graceful stairway, and flowery papered walls. The thick brick walls and partitions extended throughout the height of the house. Throughout Colonial America in that time there was also great changes in the furniture and utensils of the household, and Silver in place of pewter, and china dishes were becoming prevalent. The more massive furniture of early days was slowly replaced by the more delicate pieces of the new era. Even the drinking habits were effecting a definite change. The less delicate grog or rum was taking second place to the more expensive and less crude drinks, such as claret and other wine. Despite the religious revivals of the period the younger generation were not far behind in their participation in the growing prosperity of the colonies. Ice-skating, originally a utilization of transportation, became a means of pleasure to the young-folks. This form of winter sport was directly learned from the Dutch, and the mill-pond at Joseph II's mill was not an uncommon site for such activities. Here the younger members of the household, and of the families in the neighborhood would gather in cold winter afternoons to skate, and to spend the intervals by great bonfires on the bank. The Taverns of the day -- like the night clubs of two centuries later -- were of two kinds; the respectable and the boisterous. In New Jersey it was popular for the young people to arrange sleigh rides which ended at one of the Taverns of the time sometimes six to twelve miles distant, where dancing or "frolicks" was commonly indulged in. Even the church in Elizabethtowne was not entirely

immune to the prosperity of the times. Silk hangings and cushions were a great advance over the simpler arrangement in the earlier days. The old custom, however, for the men and women to sit in separate sides of the church still prevailed; and the sexton was continually busy keeping the children from running in and out and making noises. One of his difficult tasks was to see that the white boys and girls were kept from the gallery and the steps. During that decade the pastor was the Reverend James Caldwell, a well-beloved Virginian, and a relative of a later famous statesman; - John C. Calhoun, of South Carolina.

Joseph II was married twice; his first wife was Hannah or Rachel Bond, a descendant of Robert Bond, of the original English company, and at one time a member of the Governor's Council, and prominent in the Elizabethtowne community. Of this union were born four children, two of whom were ultimately to marry into the Marsh and Winans families of the neighborhood: - a grand-daughter, Mary Winans, was to marry a cousin of the Winans surname, to become the mother of Ross Winans of Baltimore, Maryland, the founder of a distinguished family of that state. The second wife of Joseph II, whom he married a few years after he became a widower, was Anna Wood, herself a widow and formerly Anna Winans, a member of the family of that name, and a descendant of Cornelis Melyn an early Proprietor of Staten Island whose name is a familiar one to all students of Dutch-American history.

Isaac, born August 5, 1758, was the youngest child of Joseph II and his second wife Anna.

Chapter IV. ISAAC, "THAT QUAKER DEVIL"

"For forms of government let fools contest;
What 'ere is best administered, is best."

- Pope.

Isaac Morse, the fifth generation in America, was still in his teens, when as a student of medicine he lived at the stone dwelling and offices of his preceptor, Dr. William Barnet in Elizabethtowne, not far from his Majesty's Military Barracks on Cherry Street. Passing through the kitchen one day, lugging a bag of medicinal paraphernalia, he conceived the brilliant idea -- when the cook's attention was diverted elsewhere -- of dropping some mercury into a pot of dumplings cooking on the fire. By the time he had discreetly retired into the house, a terrific sound of excitement and consternation came running from the kitchen. The cook declared that some demon had gotten into the pot and was throwing the dumplings about as if they were bewitched, and such popping and spitting she had never seen or heard before in all her born days, and "God forgive me if I have ever done harm to deserve." "WHERE IS THAT QUAKER DEVIL, ISAAC? THIS IS SOME OF HIS WORK." -- thundered his preceptor, well knowing, apparently without the need of closer inquiry, that only that lad who hailed from the area toward the Quaker settlement below the town, could instigate such deviltry.

A small episode, perhaps, but true, and one which foretold the mirthfulness and fun which Isaac was to emanate throughout his entire life. He was well named; for Isaac, in the old scriptures, means "laughter". He had inherited much from his Dutch mother, not the least of which was the blood and disposition of the intrepid old Patroon of New Netherlands. From his early youth, too precocious for the steady, more or less isolated life on the plantation, it had been determined to train this boy, whose very life seemed to depend on mingling with people and places, to be a physician. This meant in later parlance a country doctor. It was to prove a good choice. He was well schooled in the essentials of learning of the day, and his early education had been obtained in the selfsame school in Elizabethtowne where Alexander Hamilton, the lad from the West Indies, was prepared for college and for his great destiny in years to come.

The usual method of obtaining a medical education in North America, was for the applicant to apply to some older, successful, practitioner, to teach the "art of Physick and Surgery" through a several years' apprenticeship, in exchange generally, for whatever assistance was to be agreed upon. Of the three or four thousand

physicians in the Colonies, less than one-eighth had the degree of M.D. and these, had obtained their diplomas from foreign universities before coming to America. Edinborough was the school from which the greatest number had come. Isaac's time was indeed fully taken up with the various duties incumbent upon his position, but nevertheless from time to time he was able to visit the scene of his earlier boyhood, and in his small skiff may have met by chance, another youth of about the same age, in a similar pleasure-bent expedition. Aaron Burr, then sojourning in the neighborhood was an enthusiast for exploring every inlet and creek near Elizabethtowne.

Often Joseph II and Isaac's mother would drive into Elizabethtowne to see their son. They would exchange gossip with their friends, and witness the drills and parades of the red-coated soldiery, a detachment of His Majesty's Regiment of Foot stationed at the low brick barracks near Dr. Barnet's. On such occasions, Joseph II now an "Esquire" would be attired in his cocked hat, periwig and knee breeches, and Isaac's mother in her damask brocade hoops and French curls and her hairnet or head-dress of Indian muslin. And while Mrs. Morse would spend a long afternoon on visits to their numerous relatives, "The Squire" would drop in at the "Sign of the Marquis of Granby" or "Red Lion" or the "Nags Head", the tavern-clubs of the day, to exchange views with his kith and kin. There was indeed much to be talked over -- the bloodshed in Massachusetts between the Troops and Colonial Militia, and the New Acts of Parliament, as well as the enforcement of some old ones; and the relationship between the "western country" and the seaboard colonies. Joseph II, at sixty-five years of age, had retired from his active surveying expeditions, had served his term as Justice of the County Court of Quarter sessions, and at this stage of his life, in addition to the management of his plantation, he was confining himself more and more to Land Conveyancing, an early type of attorneyship. American legal education did not truly begin until several years after Joseph II's death, and although a few lawyers had indeed received training in London, in that century legal education even in England was at a low ebb.

In the latter part of April, 1775, after several years of rumors, speculations, and mixed feelings on both sides of the Atlantic, news came to New Jersey from Massachusetts, which was to mean the onset of what was to be at first a civil war. Under date of April 24th of that year, the colonists read:-

"Be it known, that this morning, before break of day, a brigade, consisting of a thousand or twelve hundred men,

landed at Phipps Farm, at Cambridge, and marched to Lexington, where they found a company of our colony militia in arms, upon whom they fired, without any provocation, and killed six men and wounded four others."

Men read, perhaps wondered, and eventually went their individual way. To the great majority it was not apparent that this was to be the beginning of something much more than a simple clash between the King's soldiers and the King's people. Many of the Colonists were loyal to their Sovereign, * and felt that they were quite as good Englishmen as their cousins across the ocean. Many other "Americans", as they now began to call themselves, felt that they had served their time in apprenticeship as Colonials, and since this period had passed, it was their right and privilege to fill their niche in the ordinary scheme of English society, side by side with their cousins at home. They strove not so much to gain new liberty, as to regain the liberties which they felt were theirs, and which, they thought, were gradually being encroached upon.

On the other hand the people in England, particularly the wealthy merchants, still looked upon the Colonies as merely a part of a great empire trade. Not a few considered the Americans --- when they considered them at all --- as a somewhat inferior breed of their own race. For many decades it had been thought in some quarters that ultimately there would be a definite separation between the mother country and her American Colonies, but many felt an equitable adjustment of difficulties could be made. On the surface, the present breach resembled to many but a conflict between the Cavaliers and the Roundheads, between the Blue and the Buff, the Tories and the Whigs. * Month by month the situation became more acute. In July, 1776, New Jersey declared her independence of the authority of George the Third, King of Great Britain, with the unique proviso that should a reconciliation take place, the rebellious action was to be considered "null and void." It was not until 14 months later, that New Jersey assumed the title of "State" in place of "colony".

In the meanwhile preparation for defense had begun in earnest and Dr. Barnet, in February of 1776 had closed his offices, dismissed his medical student, and joined the rebel forces in the field.

Isaac, not yet eighteen, had, however, seen enough of the

* See Appendix 43

* See Appendix 44

fascination of medical life to desire to continue his studies. Dr. Jonathan I. Dayton agreed to become his preceptor, and thus for several months, despite the distraction of the Theatre and the Coffee Houses, Isaac devoted his time to the several opportunities that New York, a town of twenty-five thousand souls, even then, offered to the medical novitiate. He had hardly gotten comfortably settled in his new environment, however, when as a bystander, he was to witness a Colonial Army of militia-men commanded by a Virginian, George Washington, drawn up in Review on the spacious Commons -- flanked by St. Paul's Church, public buildings and Broadway -- and heard for the first time, the "Declaration of Independence", as it was read to the soldiers in the ranks.

At that time New York did not extend beyond Corlar's Hook and embraced but the very tip of the island of Manhattan. Above Vesey Street, except for King's College, there were few houses, although Bowery Lane, leading to the Boston Post Road, was fairly well built up. There were no numbered streets, and a corn field covered the later Union Square to-be. The fashionable quarter was centered about Fort George, Wall Street and the Battery; and there was Maiden Lane, Bowling Green and "The Fields", and such street names as Duke, Queen, Princess, and King.

On September the fifteenth, 1776, covered by heavily manned positions near Brooklyn, the King's Troops swarmed across to Kips Farm on the East River, and bottled up the town, which, in the meanwhile the "American" Army of raw militia had but lately abandoned. Dr. Dayton was still nominally an adherent of the Crown and due no doubt to his influence, as well as to the age of the young man involved, Isaac -- who doubtless at first took pains to publish his sentiments, -- was detained within the enemy lines, as a "Rebel", under the custody of his preceptor. But the exigencies of the occasion, while nominally holding Isaac a prisoner of war, at the same time tended to make for a less strict observance of the duties and requirements of a medical education. The British Command, with more important duties at hand, quickly forgot the beardless youth, and had no way of knowing that Dr. Dayton, the Loyalist, was soon to become Dr. Dayton, the ardent Patriot. Although having learned to be discreet while in New York, Isaac lost little time in capitalizing on his familiarity with the most convenient routes and possible conveyances between New York and his home fifteen miles away. And apparently with no difficulty whatsoever he frequently traveled between the two points, by whichever route or means, he knew at the time was the most expeditious -- thus risking arrest, and regardless of the fact that another young man, (Nathan Hale) but two years his

senior, and in the garb of a Dutch school-teacher had been but lately apprehended by the King's troops, and hung as a spy. During a part of 1777 and 1778 while George Washington's army of 10,000 Continentals were in winter quarters, this "rebel prisoner" passed back and forth to the New Jersey shore and served as Surgeon's Mate in Colonel Silvanus Seely's Eastern Battalion of Morris County, New Jersey Militia -- that same body of troops which a year before had valiantly aided in delaying the advance of the enemy hard on the track of General Washington's troops marching toward the capture of Trenton.

In July 1778, a confederacy "The United States of America" was born. New Jersey was indeed the "cockpit" if not the battlefield of the War for American Independence, and the Bounds of Elizabethtowne were in a great measure its "no-man's-land". After Bunker Hill, the King's Army evacuated Boston and established their stronghold for the duration of the conflict at Staten Island, where, at times, as many as 30,000 troops, many of them Americans and Hessians serving under the English flag, and almost a thousand sail, were in camp or in moorings, across the Sound from Elizabethtowne; -- as the otherwise most accurate British military maps had it. As a result of its exposed position, many of its inhabitants were soon to find it wise to move to safer quarters. Morse's Mills, however, as it was situated on a sort of "dead end" road, almost a half mile from the lower road between Elizabethtowne and Rahway, or Spanktown, (as an adjacent part of Rahway was called) was considered a comparatively safe place, and Isaac's parents, now growing old, continued to reside at the home they loved so well. Even Isaac's Uncle Amos, whose dwelling was in a most exposed quarter, a half mile east, preferred to remain at his post, and from his "Riding Chair" defied His Majesty's troops to put him out of his comfortable home, the largest and most substantial dwelling in the neighborhood. To the American Patriots at Elizabethtowne -- which included many, but not all of the Morse family -- there had been much consternation and chagrin when on the heels of General Washington's retreating and gradually diminishing force driven out of New York, General Cornwallis, at the head of well-mounted and equipped British soldiery, in splendid bright uniforms, had occupied the town and sent out out-posts as far South as Morse's Creek. To many it was the first glimpse of an "enemy" which was destined to encamp on their very doorsteps for seven weary years, and, amateur military critics as were many of the inhabitants, they could not refrain from comparing this well disciplined corps with their own disorganized and poorly equipped "rebel" militia, whose crops and concern for the welfare of their large families were to many of them their real and prime concern.

For almost a century and a half, the Morse family, as other English families, had lived and prospered -- in America -- as loyal British subjects. *

In all, nine of the Morse family in New Jersey, including Isaac, joined the Colonial forces; while at least two (brothers of Isaac) served their King; one as a trooper in His Majesty's Service,* the other, by aiding in selling supplies to their armies -- the latter, a not uncommon offense of the period, called "London trading". The one suffered the confiscation of his property and the other was apprehended and confined in "goal". On the other hand, Isaac's first cousin, Captain Amos Morse, Jr. of Colonel Moses Jacques' battalion so distinguished himself in the service of the Colonists, that special details of His Majesty's detachments were sent out from time to time to capture him dead or alive. Thus was New Jersey, and some of the other colonies, divided. Many believed this a civil war,*-- a war in which the Commander-in-Chief of the Colonial forces, out of a quarter of a million men of military age, could scarcely muster together more than 20,000 at any one time. It has been estimated that twice that number of Americans served in the Army of the King; -- and another large group maintained a sort of cash-and-carry neutrality. It is to be remarked that for the first year of the war, the rebellious colonists still carried the English flag, with the addition of 13 red and white stripes.

The Morse plantations, hitherto so quiet and serene, were not to escape this holocaust of conflict. In 1777, a thousand troops under General Sullivan - many of whom were Smallwood's Marylanders-* made an attack on Staten Island * by way of Halsted Point at the mouth of Morse's Creek, and in the same year many civilians from Elizabeth-towne escaping before another incursion of His Majesty's forces, passed over Oliver's Bridge on their way to safer quarters.

The winter of 1778-1779 in New York with snow four and six feet deep, was the worst experienced by any then alive. But it was not the severe weather, nor the strenuous duties of a busy physician's assistant, or the recent strengthening of the enemy's pickets, that detained Isaac, "the rebel prisoner" in New York. It was the young niece of his preceptor, Amy Conklin, a niece also of Colonel Elias Dayton of the Colonial Army, who had journeyed up from her home at East Hampton, Long Island, to pay a visit to her uncle and aunt in New York. Isaac and Amy were married near Christmas time in 1778, and the drums of war, but dimly heard by the newly married pair,

* See Appendix 45

* See Appendix 48

* See Appendix 46

* See Appendix 49

* See Appendix 47

18 and 20 years of age, was apparently an insufficient urge to exchange their comfortable quarters at Dr. Dayton's for the precarious existence of war-ridden New Jersey. But Isaac soon would find a way to wear a path -- if one can wear a path across the Hudson -- between duty and love. His father's death on August 25, 1779 called him to his home at Morse's Mills. On the day of the funeral a large gathering of relatives, Whigs and Tories, neighbors and friends of the late Joseph II, forgetting for the time their differences in the great conflict, followed bare-headed the funeral procession to the private family burial ground almost three-fourths of a mile away on the far border of his brother's plantation, and in the rear of that slow moving procession, limped his faithful old negro slave "Peter", now soon to be given his freedom and provision for future maintenance by his Master's Will. To his eldest son, Joseph III he left his lands, "beyond the First Mountain", and to Isaac and John he bequeathed his plantation and Mills.* and to his widow, a life interest in Isaac's share.

There was much urgent business for the time being to keep Isaac in close touch with home. Forage parties from both sides were not too particular in the matter of obtaining cattle and crops for provisioning their respective armies. And while Morse's Mills had not suffered much as yet from these raids, the dwelling of Amos, Isaac's Uncle, on the adjoining plantation had more than once been the unwilling host to the King's soldiery. On such occasions they would occupy the first floor of the dwelling, pasture their mounts in the adjacent fields and in the morning drive off all cattle of the neighborhood not hidden on some unfrequented island in the nearby marsh. *

Trembly Point was a convenient and not an unpopular landing place for these numerous British expeditions from Staten Island, which indeed had become much more active since the greater war scene had shifted to the South, with the resultant transfer of many of the colonial regiments away from New Jersey. On a dark night in January, 1780, by the route which lead through the Morse plantations, a force of the King's Infantry and Dragoons entered Elizabethtowne and burnt and destroyed many important structures. It was at this time that Morse's Mills were put to the torch -- a reprisal it was said for Isaac's status as a "Rebel" officer and for his providing of plantation material (fire-wood) to the American troops. In 1780, and thenceforth, to the close of the War three years later, Isaac was Surgeon for Captain Craig's and Captain Scudder's companies of the

* See Appendix 50 * See Appendix 51

First Regiment of Foot, New Jersey Troops, a part of the command of Gen. Matthias Williamson. But this force, employed on outpost duty and operating in the defense of Elizabethtowne was not sufficiently organized or supported, to resist, in June of that year, a strong force of the King's troops, including the even then famous Coldstream Guards, which advanced in well ordered ranks through the streets of Elizabethtowne. According to an eye-witness: "The column was headed by a squad of Dragoons, "the Queen's Own", with drawn swords and glittering helmets mounted on large and beautiful horses. The infantry followed clad in new uniforms complete in canopy and gorgeous with burnished brass and polished steel".

And if Isaac, in one of his frequent clandestine visits to his young wife and infant daughter in New York, during the year 1782, had ventured past the Headquarters of the Royal Command, he would have met there an English descendant of his own ancestors in the person and uniform of His Majesty's Service, Colonel Robert Morse, later Lieut. General Sir Robert Morse, of the Engineer Forces.

There is little doubt that Isaac's status as a medical officer, and not as an officer in the combatant force of the American "Rebel" Army made it easier for him to evade arrest or detection. For many of the troopers in the six battalions of the loyal American regiment, including Isaac's own brother, were from New Jersey. These Tory regiments of American troops, commanded by General Courtlandt Skinner, assisted by Colonel De. Lancey of New York and Major Stockton of New Jersey, were composed of many officers and men to whom Isaac was no doubt well known; for despite the policy of transferring these soldiers for service away from their home areas, nevertheless many remained on duty about New York and New Jersey. Despite many precautions, there was in New Jersey at least, much free trafficking of citizens and soldiers through the lines. As far as the Tories were concerned, there was at least one well recognized insignia of identification of friendly dwellings; - a white chimney with a black band at the border. Many families in New Jersey were divided in their sentiment towards the war * and ill-feeling created by the conflict was in some cases, to persist for years.

Finally, the seven years war, which began as a revolt of the less conservative groups of overseas Englishmen and which ended in American Independence, was over. Aboard the troopships which carried the King's officers and men across the ocean home again to England, there was ample time to reflect and to study the first hard lesson in

* See Appendix 52

the difficult art of maintaining a loyal and satisfied overseas Empire. They had also learned something of the great advantage of fighting with lines of skirmishers rather than by the out-moded technique of operating in solid platoons.

The desolation of war-torn Elizabethtowne did not escape the Morse properties. * At Isaac's plantation the mill had been burnt to the ground, fences broken down, ditches overgrown and the neglect was deplorable. Nevertheless there still remained the clear, placid creek, the broad fields and along the marshes, the mud hens, sandpipers, and rail birds were still plentiful as of yore. It was good to hear again the even desolate booming of the bittern and the loud screams of the wild geese. * In Elizabethtowne, proper, the old Presbyterian church and the parsonage across the river -- the birthsite of Princeton University -- had been burned by the King's troops, and Church services were still being held in the old red storehouse where it was said the minister, an ardent patriot, had often preached with two pistols at his side. The 'American' refugees were gradually returning to their old homes, and many of the Tories were leaving for other parts. *

Isaac continued his journeys back and forth from Elizabethtowne to New York where his little family was still located. General Washington and his troops had entered the city soon after the King's army had departed, but several mementos of military occupancy still remained, and about the upper battery most of the dismantled cannon were still lying about. In 1785 Isaac's mother had died and was buried beside her husband at the little private cemetery on the road to Trembly Point. In the following year - but two years after a certain young German immigrant named John Jacob Astor arrived in New York - Isaac established his home and offices in Elizabethtowne. His wife, Amy, then twenty-six, may have preferred to have remained in New York, where her three children -- the youngest an infant in arms -- had been born. But Isaac had fallen heir, so to speak, to a great part of the practice of old Doctor David Craig, lately deceased, a practice which was to grow to such an extent that his two wheeled gig was to be a common sight in many parts of several counties in the vicinity. He had purchased from John, his brother, now settled in New York, John's share of their father's plantation, and Isaac became the exclusive and sole proprietor of "Morse's Mills", as the plantation now came to be called. He soon, without serious interruption in his growing practice, set about improving the fields,

* See Appendix 53

* See Appendix 54

* See Appendix 55

restocking the barns, repairing his fences and constructing new ditches and "driftroads", and rebuilding the Mill. As prosperity eventually returned to the land, he shipped to New York in his vessels from his own Landing, the products of his mill and farm. Not infrequently, accompanied by his wife, he would sail aboard their craft, and spend a day in that town or in the outlying villages of Greenwich, Chelsea or Murray Hill. New York had indeed lost heavily in population after the War, as indeed had many other parts of the country, and it has been estimated that some 75,000 people of Loyalist sentiments, many of whom were among the most prominent people of the day, left the several states for Canada, West Indies or England, after the American Revolution. And it was said that the treatment accorded their American properties was clouded, in many instances, with gross unfairness.

As early as 1787 the "Fourth of July" or Independence Day was duly celebrated in every town and hamlet of the "States" -- which were now very rapidly, in spite of the depletion of population, taking on airs of activity, progress and splendor. This was to be particularly manifested a few years later, when triumphant arches were erected by the enthusiastic citizens of Elizabethtowne as they cheered and applauded General Washington on his passage through the town to board a magnificent barge, manned by Thirteen Master seamen -- en route to New York to take the oath of office as the First President of the United States under the new Constitution. And that pact, was a most timely paper. * The Thirteen Sovereign States in the interval between their successful rebellion and the adoption of the Constitution, were indeed in a sorry plight. Foreign nations had refused to make commercial treaties, Algiers declared war against them, and was permitted to prey upon their commerce without restraint. At that time the entire Army consisted of but eighty men. A Navy had been proposed, but the proposal had not been followed through, and England refused to send a Minister to her overseas cousins. It was at the instigation of Virginia and Maryland that the inadequate condition of the Thirteen Colonies was formally recognized, and steps were soon inaugurated to effect a more perfect union of the different sovereign states. The Constitution of 1787 was indeed a great achievement, and even if a great civil war, seventy-four years later, was necessary to a complete understanding of the meaning of part of the text of the pact, it was nevertheless the keystone of a great nation to be.

Isaac and Amy were happy at their Elizabethtowne dwelling which stood at the corner of East Jersey and Bridge (later Scott)

* See Appendix 56

Street. While there were indeed many newcomers since the war, yet there were a sufficient number of old friends and relatives in the vicinity to make them feel fully at home, at last. Amy's uncle, General Elias Dayton, lived nearby, and was one of the most prominent men in the little town. As a captain with the English Army "before the war" he had participated in the expedition against the French in 1764, and his career as an officer in the American Army during the Revolution had been a most distinguished one. He had led his regiment of New Jersey Continentals in many a battle, and at Yorktown, Virginia, had been put in command of the New Jersey brigade. His post-war activities were to be equally outstanding. Amy's first cousin was the wife of General Mathias Ogden, brother of Aaron Ogden, both influential citizens of that area.

Adjoining their dwelling was Isaac's office, and his medical practice was a most extensive one and embraced all branches of that art and science. Not a little of it, indeed, included tropical diseases such as ship fever, yellow fever; and these were by no means a rarity as far north as New York. *

In 1790, two years before the great Depression of the period descended upon the people, the same year Trenton became the capital of New Jersey, Isaac was instrumental in organizing a medical society for the eastern district of New Jersey, and for a number of years was its Secretary. He was also among the thirty original subscribers to the Public Library of the town. But along with this more serious side of his life, he could not refrain from levity and was constantly playing practical jokes on his neighbors and friends as well as upon his own household, and anecdotes concerning him, still preserved, number well over a dozen. The love of fun was evidently born in him and in the "History of Essex District Medical Society", it was noted that "he was a man of 'bon homme', and his face almost constantly wore a smile. His society was universally courted. While he was overflowing with mirthfulness he had courage, firmness, constancy and perseverance (and) although he was a very accomplished scholar and a charming and intelligent companion, ever welcome in all circles, Dr. Morse was so fond of practical jokes that he was not infrequently rude." Like his father, Isaac was also considered by many as an eccentric character. If Harry, his negro servant could return from his final resting place, he could relate many acts of kindness on the part of the doctor. "I knew Harry very well," wrote Dr. Craig. "He was of African birth -- as black as a crow -- with teeth white as snow, and was almost as eccentric as his Master, the doctor."

* See Appendix 57

In stature and make-up Isaac closely resembled that interesting personality, Washington Irving's "John Bull".

The year 1794 was remarkable for the treaty with Great Britain, the beginning of our Navy under the new Constitution, Wayne's defeat of the Indians on the Ohio, the invention of the cotton gin, and the Whiskey Rebellion. It has been said that the Federal Excise tax, which instigated the "Whiskey Rebellion" and particularly the subsequent successful dispatch of American troops to support it with their bayonets, was a deliberate attempt on the part of Alexander Hamilton to try-out or test the strength of his Federalist Party in the matter of the future policy of our government. But to the two young lads of twelve and ten, Isaac's sons Joseph and Nathan, it was a glorious spectacle of drums and music, prancing horses and gay uniforms, as their father, Regimental Surgeon of the 4th New Jersey Infantry, rode off in that crisp autumn morning to help quell the Western Insurrection. This force of militia, joining similar Regiments from Pennsylvania, Maryland, and Virginia, was put under the command of General "Light Horse Harry" Lee of Virginia, whose son, another General Lee, sixty-seven years later was to lead a great American army in gray. The New Jersey troops avoided Philadelphia, where an epidemic of yellow fever -- The great epidemic of 1793 in which the mythical Evangeline and Gabriel, the exiled Acadians of Longfellow's poem, met at the deathbed -- had been raging. Crossing the Delaware above Trenton, they headed for those rough and muddy roads through the beautiful mountains and fair valleys of Pennsylvania. The roads which the insurgent mountaineers could not readily transport their crops by wagon unless converted into alcohol or whisky nevertheless carried these regiments and their cumbersome baggage trains. There were many who prophesied that this, the first venture into armed enforcement of the newly semi-centralized government, was doomed to failure. For there were not more than four regiments in the entire Federal Army at the time, and none of these were available for services in the field. And so important was this question considered by President Washington himself, that he left the seat of government in Philadelphia, and with Hamilton, accompanied this militia force along part of the three-weeks' march to Western Pennsylvania. At Carlisle, even then an old military station, the Militia of New Jersey, some 2100 men under Governor Howell, were reviewed by the Commander. At Bedford, formerly Fort Bedford, and the meeting of several old Indian trails -- 200 miles west of Philadelphia the troops rested for 4 days. This was a historic spot. Thirty-six years before Brigadier John Forbes had made it his rendezvous for the attack on the French at Fort Duquesne, now Pittsburgh, and by the old Log fort had passed in review the troops of the Scots Highlanders, the Royal American Regiment and the Provincial Regiment under Colonel Washington.

Isaac had arrived with his troops on the nineteenth of October, 1794, and the "Army of the Constitution" as it was called was soon reinforced by the other contingents from Virginia and Maryland, which had marched up from Cumberland, Maryland. In all there were fifteen thousand troops in the "Army of the Constitution" and completely uniformed and equipped, the entire body was reviewed in fitting ceremony by its Commander-in-Chief, General Washington. It has been said this was the largest number of soldiers he had ever commanded in the field. The four-day rest at Bedford was well-earned, and did much to carry the battalions through the following days of mud, wet clothes, and discomfort occasioned by heavy rains as they crossed the mountains. After a three weeks encampment below Pittsburgh, the mission having been completed successfully, they resumed their return march home.

The officers and the men could not but have been struck with the great differences which existed between the people on the Atlantic seaboard and those beyond the Allegheny mountains. The latter were the rough, hardy, backwoods men -- "Whiskey men" they were called -- living for the most part in their crude dwellings amidst meagre clearings in a wealth of primeval forests. No doubt these "westerners" regarded their fellow-citizens on the tidewater as effete. On the other hand, Philadelphia at that time was the social and financial center of the eastern coast, and many of its successful merchants and their wives had gradually set up an excellent imitation of life in the gay European cities. Philadelphia at this period presented a social life which it had never before had, or which it has been said the country has not witnessed since. No doubt a great influx of persons from England and France to that city after the Revolutions had set the pace for a social life eagerly followed by the wealthier merchants of that town. Although many of the smaller towns along the Atlantic may have attempted to copy the magnificence of Philadelphia, they were never able to quite reach that distinction. Garden parties, salons, coaches drawn by four horses, and liveried servants, drew many to that little London. Very few of the country gentry were able or willing to participate in this great orgy of splendor. But New York, New England, Maryland and Virginia, as well as New Jersey, nevertheless, all contributed to this great American salon. And it has been written "perfectly known in the society of the metropolis, (Philadelphia), though residing generally on their domains in New Jersey....were....the Daytons and Ogdens".

In a few years, however, Thomas Jefferson, fresh from the influence of the French Revolution, was in a measure to democratize even the sea-board region of the American states. *

* See Appendix 58

Chapter V. NATHAN AND GEOGRAPHY

"Westward the course of empire takes its way."

- Berkeley.

Isaac, sunburned and hardened by his bivouacs in the bloodless, though arduous duties of the "Western Campaign", returned in good time to take up again his civilian practice, inspect his farms and mills, greet his numerous friends, and prepare for Christmas at his home. His family consisted of himself, now thirty-six, and his good wife Amy, two years his junior, Nancy fifteen, Joseph twelve, Nathan Morse, age ten, the sixth generation in this narrative, Margaret four, and Elizabeth one. They had lost one daughter in infancy but in another few years were to become parents of their seventh and last child -- a daughter named Joan. Isaac's home was a large two story yellow-stuccoed dwelling surrounded by flowers and plants, and covered with wisteria, on a plot of ground almost an acre in extent at the southwest corner of East Jersey and Bridge Streets. Attached was his office, and in the rear yard was a stable where he kept his three or four horses, and his gig or sulky and chaise, and over which Harry, his negro servant, shared quarters with the fodder for the animals. In the spacious yard near the detached servants' quarters was a laundry, summer kitchen, well house, and pens for poultry and fowl; several fruit trees, grapevines, and a garden. In all it was a most comfortable menage, and Isaac and Amy -- when he was not joggin' about the not too easy roads -- were quite contented and happy. And but a few doors away was Abraham Terrell's Tavern, where, companionship and a glass of grog were always available. * Three of the children were in school and both boys at the "Elizabethtowne Academy" where Aaron Ogden and Jonathan Dayton, connection and kin, were two of the eight trustees, and where David Young, fresh from Yale, was Headmaster. Joseph, whose middle name was Dayton, -- the name of a Long Island family from which his mother was a descendant -- was to spend his free afternoons at Morse's Creek, which he loved so dearly and which one day he was to inherit, and in due time pass on to his own offspring. Nathan, on the other hand, devoted much of his spare time to more urban recreations, and Elizabethtowne in accordance with the French influence then prevailing in the colony, had its dancing schools, balls and French lessons. But most of all Nathan loved to pore over his geography and dream upon the future of this great "western country" beyond the frontier.

At Christmas dinner the home was decorated with holly and mistletoe brought in by Harry from "Morse's Mills." In the same

* See Appendix 59

load with the "Yule log" he had brought up the huge goose, a small pig and the ordinary produce fresh from the farm, now all prepared and decorated and displayed on the candle-lit table which groaned under the weight. Madeira for the grownups, and just a sip for the youngsters, started them off in a lively mood. Isaac would relate the story of the western mountains, the Indians, and the beautiful river beyond, which the French had called "La Belle Riviere", and the great tour of that country made by George Washington himself in the year of Nathan's birth. * Dinner was no short meal even in the late eighteenth century, and there was fun and laughter, and jollity and more tales of the Great West, where so many of Isaac's relatives had gone with Judge Symmes to open up a new frontier. Daniel Marsh, whose wife was Isaac's first cousin, was in Ohio, as also was Jonathan Dayton, * a first cousin of Nathan's mother, and many others. Nathan, ever keen on travel and adventure, missed not a word, and these tales of the Western country were to greatly influence his after career, just as it did many other youths of the Eastern seaboard, both then and in years to follow.

In addition to his professional duties, Isaac found time to increase the capabilities and output of his Mill. On his own sloop he shipped boatload after boatload of flour for the New York market, and in the rise of the price of bread in the half dozen years following 1795 he was able to amass a considerable profit, to a much greater extent than had his father or his grandfather before him. Many a barrel marked with his name, passed through the old Williams Street bakery in New York. On his plantation Isaac developed also those primitive clay beds that bordered the uplands and the marsh, and though for the past hundred years bricks had been manufactured on the plantation -- generally for home use only -- Isaac conceived the idea which was later to be developed by his descendants, in embarking on an undertaking of brick-making on a greater scale than heretofore. While the New Jersey brick was not of the best quality, nevertheless many of these prepared from Isaac's plantation went into the construction of the new houses then going up in the city of New York.

Nathan attended the then renowned "Elizabethtowne Academy" which had been burnt by the English troops and later rebuilt by lottery several years before Nathan became a student there. * Here he tussled with the usual school books of the era, including a geography which had been produced by a distant cousin (fourth) Jedediah Morse -- a book which was the first of its kind in America

* See Appendix 60.

* See Appendix 61

* See Appendix 62

-- a geography for the use of schools.

By 1804 Nathan had finished school and was completing his course in reading Law with his father's old friend, Aaron Ogden. Another young man born within a few months and within the distance of a few houses of Nathan's natal place, was likewise, at the time, engaged in studying for a career in law. He, Washington Irving, was soon to abandon the Law, however, and to embark on a career which was to mark the beginning of North American literature. For a time, in 1804, Nathan, with John W. Seymour, was an instructor at an Academy on St. Georges' Avenue in Rahway "near the Jardin Marble Works", and it was that very year, that the bounds of "Elizabethtowne" had again been diminished, and Morse's Creek, as far up as Oliver's Bridge was the dividing line. This placed Morse's Mill, Amos' plantation, and the neighboring countryside, of the old "Rawack Neck", under the jurisdiction of the new township of Rahway. Four years before, the nation's capital had finally been settled in "Washington", at the Forkes of the Potomack; although none of the public buildings were as yet completed, swamps and wilderness were everywhere still present, and most of the officials were obliged to reside in the neighboring town of Georgetown, several miles away.

In the year 1805 Admiral Nelson at Trafalgar defeated the French Fleet off the coast of Spain and paved the way for Britain to again assume for so many subsequent years its role as "Mistress of the Seas"; Napoleon Bonaparte, at thirty-six, now Emperor of France a year, was apparently invincible in Europe; and as a result, no doubt, of these impending events the United States had found itself two years before, possessed of an immense, though incompletely defined territory, Louisiana. It has been said that fear of the English fleet was a predominant factor in Napoleon's decision to sell Louisiana to the Americans. It was true that a Corridor to the sea was a crying need of those of the American people along the Ohio, but as for the jungles, swamps and deserts that were thought to lay beyond the Mississippi, there was very little, if any, desire; and Thomas Jefferson strained his powers as President by annexing this "white elephant" -- or at least it so appeared to many hugging the Atlantic Seaboard. By 1805 more than a decade and a half had past since the "Northwest Ordinance" enacted by the tottering government of our then loose Confederacy had opened up for serious settlement a long disputed area northwest of the Ohio, formerly claimed as a part of Virginia. One of the chief settlements was being developed by John Witherspoon of Princeton, Jonathan Dayton, U. S. Senator, and Chief Justice Symmes.

To this -- a sort of New Jersey colony -- had come many former officers of the Continental Army, and the principal town of the settlement became known by the name of the Society to which so many of these men belonged: * Cincinnati. And now, with the Louisiana Purchase, and consequent assurance of a free outlet to the sea, the Northwest Territory looked upon a most promising future.

Early in the year of 1806, Nathan, the sixth generation in America, heeded the old call of the frontier, and resolutely set about, as many before and after him have done, to seek his fortune in the "West". Then twenty-one years of age, a newly fledged lawyer and equipped with his luggage, letters, and law books he adjusted his saddle girth, mounted his horse, and bade good-bye to the land of his ancestors, * to his family, and to Elizabethtowne. Partings are ever sad, and as the sound of the click of the hoofbeats and the rumble of the escort wagon died away in that early morning light, there were few dry eyes in that group, white or black, assembled on the porch and steps of Isaac's home. In the journey to the "West" the first stop out of Elizabethtowne was at Princeton. Here, after a rest at Nassau Tavern, he surveyed the old college which had had its first beginning in the town in which he had lived, -- Elizabethtowne --, and which many of his descendants in later years were to enter as students. *

With eyes set toward Cincinnati, he continued his way. Many of his neighbors and relatives -- Jonathan Dayton, Judge Barnet, Daniel Marsh, and Peter Ogden, as well as his own cousin, Joseph Morse, -- were already at that region, - now an oasis in a primitive environment. But on the other hand the several weeks journey to reach Cincinnati from Elizabethtowne was rather difficult and not without some hazards, for gangs of outlaws, referred to as "the enemy", were not infrequently met with on the Ohio. The way as far as the mountains in western Pennsylvania, - the "Apalaches", the French had called them - was easy enough, if one was not too particular about the inns and taverns along the way, but beyond Bedford, the crossing of the Alleghenies was another matter, for the mountain passages that Braddock cut in 1758 were even in worse repair than when Nathan's father rode over them a little over ten years before. The greatest migration to the West had not yet started and, although a stage coach line had been advertised two years before, the mountain roads and fords were not adapted for wagon transport.

* See Appendix 63

* See Appendix 64

* See Appendix 65

Pittsburgh, at the site of the former French Fort Duquesne, was reached after nineteen days of traveling. * Refreshed by a well-earned rest the party disposed of their horses and secured accommodations for the final lap of the journey down the Ohio River. There were many and varied types of craft on the "Western Waters", but they all had certain features in common -- they all were poled with long "sweeps" from a gunwale on either side of the boat; they were steered by a larger sweep in the rear; and were navigated by a reckless, hard-drinking, fighting class of men "half alligator and half horse", -- a type well adapted to the hard life they lived and for the work at hand. The speed of these "Noah's Arks" on the Western Waters barely averaged eight miles an hour. Nathan secured modest quarters aboard one of the more pretentious boats, with a "living salon"; and which notified the traveling public that; --

"No danger need be apprehended from the enemy, as every person on board will be under cover made proof against rifle or musket balls, and convenient portholes for firing out of. Each of the bunks are armed with six pieces carrying a pound ball; also a number of good muskets amply supplied with plenty of ammunition; strongly manned with choice hands, and the masters of approved knowledge....conveniences are constructed on board each boat so as to render landing unnecessary, as it might at times be dangerous."

Traveling through frontier regions always requires, among other things, a hardy constitution, a strong stomach and a well guarded purse; and without postoffice, telegraph, banks or comfortable inns, the trip from the Atlantic seaboard to the western waters in 1806 was not the casual affair it was later to become. Indeed about the only casual affairs in the English-speaking America of that day -- exclusive of the government itself -- were birth, marriage and death. The Ohio --which had so fascinated the French whose control of the area was not beyond the memory of its oldest inhabitants -- was one of the most beautiful streams in America. Great massive trees vied with each other in magnificence. In the spring the foliage of dense forest which stretched from the very banks of the tortuous stream to the distant hills was of various hues and shades, and the tedious rate of travel afforded ample time for the more appreciative to dwell upon that ever-changing panorama.

* See Appendix 66

Great flocks of wild pigeons, some requiring as long as two full days to pass a given spot, were often so thick as to obscure the sun.

To the more rough and hardy of a boat's company there was little to occupy their leisure but gambling, reading and drinking. Perhaps the ideal traveler combined all three in proper proportion according to his bent, his capacity, and his bringing up. There was also the common sport of testing one's skill by shooting at trees and driftwood along the river banks. Discussion of the state of the Union and politics in general were favorite topics of conversation during those long hours.

On the Virginia shore, Wheeling, boasting of upwards of eighty houses, was one of the first settlements encountered, and further down was Marietta, named in honor of Marie Antoinette, who would have been put quite ill-at-ease if she had been set down all at once in its midst. Probably the point of most general interest, however, was the extensive island estate of Harmon Blennerhassett, a then wealthy and cultured Irishman, whose fascinating guest of just a year before was to prove the undoing of the genial host. Aaron Burr, the ex-Vice President of the United States, whose legion of friends included many of the more eminent in America, and whose political enemies were to call the "Conspirator" had but recently visited along the Ohio. He was a man of many estimable qualities, but for the present, it was said, was in "bad odor" in Washington, and he had attracted not a few of the younger men of New Jersey to his not illogical plan of organizing a new country out of a tottering Spanish regime west of the Mississippi. Perhaps, indeed, it might include some of the Western territory that the United States had begrudgingly taken over three years ago, as a sort of necessary evil in securing possession and control of the mouth of the Mississippi River. And many of the settlers of those lands along the banks of the river -- by no means exclusively those Tories who had gone there after the American Revolution -- felt keenly their political isolation from the more conservative and self-satisfied East. The West and the East felt that they held little in common and were fast drifting apart and, indeed, in but a few years, two of the original thirteen states in the northern (New England) section were to prepare to secede from the Union which at that time they deplored.

The destiny of the "United States" was yet in the balance. Another sixty years would elapse before the complete nation would be fully effected. It was but three decades since the British

colonies had declared themselves independent sovereign States.

At Cincinnati, Nathan found a town of about fifteen hundred people. Securing lodgings at Avery's Tavern, he set about delivering the several messages and letters entrusted to his care and calling upon his acquaintances. Among these was George Burnet, son of his father's old preceptor and in whose Cincinnati Law Office at the time was Nicholas Longworth, who had come from Newark three years before. Nathan soon set up as an attorney-at-law and awaited the wheel of fortune in a country where land-claims made up a large part of the legal practice. Perhaps he found himself confronted with more formidable competition than he had expected to find in such a distant land, or perhaps in the general conversation of the hour, he was impressed with the presence of a yet more fertile field of endeavor further off. Many of the older members of the bar in the West were advising the younger candidates to look a little further beyond Ohio and Tennessee, and set themselves up in the new territory then forming. Andrew Jackson at Nashville -- for one -- had given similar advice in no uncertain terms to another such embryo lawyer "Act quickly; somebody may get in before you", he told young Alexander Porter in advising settlement in the Orleans territory, "Be off at once, look for a good place, and when you stop, stop to stay; and let all you say and all you do look to your advantage in the future." Sound advice, this, and somewhat similar advice, no doubt, prompted Nathan to undertake a second lap of his western journey -- a journey that took him to perhaps the most westerly settled spot in all United States geography -- New Iberia, in the Territory of Orleans. And a good month's journey of travel it was. Nathan, therefore, having written home to Elizabethtowne of his new destination, set out for the territory which was in five years to become -- despite the opposition of New England -- the State of Louisiana. "If this bill passes", spoke John Quincy of Massachusetts, when in 1811 the citizens of the Orleans territory had petitioned Congress to be admitted as a State, "it is my deliberate opinion that it is virtually a dissolution of this Union." "It will", he said, "free the original states from their personal obligations, as it will be the right of all, so it will be the duty of some, definitely to prepare for a separation, amicably if they can, violently if they must." But many of the very people from this same Eastern seaboard, the shores of the Hudson, the Delaware, and the Chesapeake, as well as New England, and the Carolinas, were now moulding below Virginia the "Deep South".

It was during these very weeks of Nathan's western tour that a war between the United States and Spain, over the western frontier,

was believed imminent; and at the same time Aaron Burr was engaged in finally assembling and organizing his expedition.

If Nathan was among those supporters of Burr's dream of a great Western Empire he would have been in the company of many of his old friends and relatives. It has been said, on the other hand, however, that on more than one occasion immediately after the final dispersion of the expedition, he was called upon by the authorities to aid in the identification of persons apprehended in the Mississippi Delta and believed to be Aaron Burr himself in a garb of disguise. Nathan knew Burr well, and Matthais Ogden, the Princeton chum and Revolutionary War companion of Burr, had married Nathan's cousin Hannah -- "the best of women", as Burr himself had called her.

Perhaps the well-known opposition of Napoleon to a war between the United States and Spain at that time, rather than the proclamation of Jefferson, averted a new Western nation.

In that year of 1806 there were no less than three separate expeditions set on foot for the purpose of conquering and settling parts of the Spanish possession in America. Less than six years before the Crown of Spain had possession of more than half of the entire American continents. The Indies, as it was called by Spain, had been divided, for purposes of government or administration into several parts, -- presided over by Supreme Council, for the past three hundred years. There were Viceroys, Governors and Intendants over the various portions of the Spanish overseas empire. Gradually, however, the American "Indies" were to break up, and in less than a quarter of a century were to revolt and declare their independence. The separation of Louisiana from Spain in 1801 was the first sign of the coming disruption of the Spanish control in the New World, and when the new owners -- France -- ceded it to the United States in 1803 it was contrary, as the Spanish asserted, to an unwritten agreement with France. Nevertheless, the transfer was duly made; and as a result, no doubt, of the growing sensibility of the increasing weakness of Spain, the several expeditions were soon on foot to move into the old Indies. * In the same year that Aaron Burr was organizing his armada, General Miranda with four hundred men and three vessels, sailed undisturbed out of the harbor of New York, bent on the northern coast of South America. Three months later a British expeditionary force landed further south on the Atlantic coast line of the same Spanish territory. The American Expedition, under Aaron Burr, was attempting -- so it was said --

* See Appendix 67

to enter the Indies by way of that part called Mexico -- the northern boundaries of which extended well up into the present state of Louisiana. All three of these attempts failed.

Thomas Jefferson, at the year of the Louisiana Purchase, had said: "If it should become the great interest of these nations (formation of a new Confederacy embracing all the waters of the Mississippi) to separate from us, -- if their happiness should depend on it so strongly as to induce them to go through that convulsion, why should these Atlantic states dread it? And if they take their interest in separation, why should we take sides with our Atlantic rather than our Mississippi descendants? It is the elder brother and the younger son differing. God speed them both and keep them in union if it be for their good, but separate them if it be better."

The Mississippi River has born many names since the early Indians called it "Meschacebe", but no designation could fairly describe this "Father of Waters" which so effectively constituted an ever-flowing yet ever-changing divide between the two parts of the lower North American continent. In the days when waterways were the usual and common means of travel and shipping in the "West" it served as a great and important highway. But in that year of 1806, and indeed for several years to come, the Mississippi River was mainly a one-way road, and many of the boats, on arrival at New Orleans, were broken up and their timbers converted into shacks and sidewalks about the Crescent city or in the little settlement immediately across the river. The boat crews, after having disposed of the cargo and passengers, and -- incidentally -- having spent most of their money in New Orleans, would take the old "Natches Trace" back to their starting point, to begin again their circuitous existence. Unless the traveler of the day wished to spend a third of a year on the trail, he generally took return passage by a sailing vessel from New Orleans, around Florida and Hatteras to New York.

Nathan on his determination to embark for the territory of Orleans, was in for a good four weeks existence on that tortuous river, whose snags, eddies and channels, ever-changing, were developing a special type of river navigation. The country where the clear waters of the Ohio mingled with the muddy Mississippi resembled ancient Egypt, and it was said that the larger stream was spiritually closely akin to the Nile. And indeed, from our American Memphis, Cairo and Thebes, were to go, in due time, river boatmen to conquer the waters of that Egyptian river -- the only navigators the British Government would consider for the purpose.

Down the yellow torrent, a well maneuvered boat carried Nathan past Fort Massac, Fort Pickering, the Memphis-to-be, and the old Spanish Fort Nogales, where Vicksburg was to spring up five years later. On it bore him alongside of old Fort Rosalie and Natchez, with his immediate destination, New Orleans, less than three hundred miles away. Gradually the increasing wealth of sub-tropical foliage, the more noisy wild life and the Spanish moss indicated the approach to the Delta. The warm soft air of the deep South announced in languid terms the approach to his destination. And, at last, in a crowded harbor of odd craft and ocean going vessels, the pulse of the outside world was again apparent. New Orleans, that French and Spanish town, further west indeed than Central or South America, lay dreamingly behind a breastwork of levees. Tying up along the side of the levees of Tchopetoulas Road, Nathan stepped ashore and said farewell for the time being to the river which he was to know so well. He spent but little time, at that moment, in New Orleans, and proceeded to make the necessary arrangements for the journey to a small settlement a hundred miles or more due west, then known as Nova Iberie.

Nathan followed the customary route from New Orleans, and took passage up the Mississippi for some ninety miles to what is now Plaquimine. Thence by skiff through the winding bayous to Grande Lake and Fausse Point. Here, he, with his boxes and baggage, transferred to the more cumbersome ox-carts which in due time deposited their cargo at the Landing of the Bayou Teche. Henry Wadsworth Longfellow in his immortal poem thus describes this very route:

"They..entering the Bayou of Plaquimine,
Soon were lost in a maze of sluggish and devious waters,
Which, like a network of steel, extended in every direction.
Over their heads the towering and tenebrous boughs of the cypress
Met in a dusky arch, and trailing mosses in mid-air
Waved like banners that hang on the walls of ancient cathedrals,
Deathlike the silence seemed, and unbroken, save by the herons
Home to their roosts in the cedar-trees returning at sunset,...
...
..And before them
Lay, in the golden sun, the lakes of the Atchafalaya.
Water-lilies in myriads rocked on the slightest undulations
Made by the passing oars, and, resplendent in beauty, the lotus
Lofted her golden crown above the heads of the boatmen.
Faint was the air with the odorous breath of magnolia blossoms.."

New Iberia, or "Nova Iberie", had been sparsely settled by Spanish immigrants as early as 1780. It lay on an old Spanish trail that ran for over 2000 miles from San Diego to St. Augustine. Amidst towering live oaks which lined the west bank of the winding Bayou Teche, so named from its resemblance to a snake, were a few clusters of one-story houses, on both sides of the shade-covered road which a mile northward divided in a fork. One road lead to St. Martinsville, 8 miles away, the little "Paris" of that entire region. Here, where so many Royalist refugees from France and her Colonies had settled not many years before, there had arisen a great deal of gaiety and the social activities which only the French can so well develop. The other road led to Vermillionville, a small settlement later to be known as Lafayette. Another road led southwest from New Iberia to the prairies. So primitive was this clearing that there was no such thing as a post-office in the little village, all mail being obliged to be carried by post-routes from New Orleans. Along the banks of the Bayou Teche lived many of the original exiles or their descendants, who a half century before had found a happy welcome there when driven out of their homes in Newfoundland at the point of British bayonets. A poet was to call this, "Land of Evangeline".

One of the most outstanding features of this area was the great abundance of tropical or semi-tropical birds such as pelicans, herons and egrats, and even the scarlet ibis, whom Audubon called the "Ladies of the Waters". Here could be seen the mocking bird, Carolina paraquets, and even a variety of sub-tropical parrots.

New Iberia, or "New Spain", was the northeast gateway to the Spanish possessions in America. A sort of international border settlement, it also marked nature's divide of the rich alluvial lands of profuse tropical vegetation to the East, from the almost treeless prairie beyond. This prairie, which extended virtually to the Sabine River was a sort of no-man's-land of some 12,000 square miles claimed by the Spanish Crown, and not, it was rightfully said, within the true boundaries of the Louisiana Purchase. Herds of wild cattle roamed these prairies, whose numerous islands and waterways, especially along the border of the live oak country, teemed with innumerable wild geese and fowls of many varieties and description. The village was situated within the county of Attakapas, which, with the adjoining county of Opelousas, comprised two of the twelve subdivisions of the territory, and with Opelousas, extended westward from the right bank of the Atchafalaya River. These counties were soon to be reapportioned into smaller units, to be called "parishes" and the Attakapas of that day was in a few years to become the later

parishes of Iberia, Lafayette, St. Martin's and St. Mary. The name Attakapas was an Indian one and signified "eaters of men", the early designation of the Indian inhabitants, descendants of the Mexican aborigines whose temperaments and traditions were so different from those of the Indians of the North. *

In 1806 there were few roads laid out and a great part of the travel was done by means of the numerous waterways or bayous. This, indeed, was a land quite foreign to the upper Atlantic plateau region. New Iberia, as well as New Orleans and other several settlements, were in the Territory of Orleans -- a wide, elongated and irregular strip of land and water stretching along the uncertain banks of the Mississippi River to the Gulf, and bound in on the east and west by the lands of Spain. This territory comprised, in fact, approximately but two-thirds of the later State of Louisiana. To the north of this area and extending in some part even beyond the present Canadian boundary was that immense tract, just then recently explored by Lewis and Clark,*the Territory of Louisiana. The Red River met the Mississippi some seventy miles north of Nathan's new home, and near the junction of these two great rivers, it is said, was sunk to rest in 1541, the remains of Fernando De Soto, the Spanish explorer who found in that region fever and death instead of the treasures which he had sought. Nearby this spot was the extensive tract that Aaron Burr had recently acquired as a mobilization point for his Spanish filibustering expedition. For three hundred years, indeed, this section had been the scene of the adventurer. In the year of which we write, there was still along the Red River, outposts for a large Indian trade, and the river beyond Natchitoches was unknown. An exploring party, headed by Captain Sparks of the American Army, had been turned back that very year by a large detachment of hostile Spanish troops. At that time the entire Territory of Orleans had but a third of the population of New Jersey.

Nathan secured quarters at Mr. Murphy's Tavern, and at last, with his boxes, baggage and law books, settled down for a career as an attorney in a new west. There was much social atmosphere in the inns of the day, and Murphy's Tavern was no exception. Here ample facilities were afforded for the entertainment of the young men and old of the neighborhood, who not infrequently stopped in for their "morning bitters" before breakfast, or a mint julep and billiards before dinner. Thus in a short time Nathan became acquainted with almost all of the inhabitants of the region. *

See Appendix 68 See Appendix 69 See Appendix 70

The French language was the common medium of conversation, for in New Iberia and elsewhere in the delta there were very few "Americans", and, indeed, it was to be another few years before any great number of his fellow countrymen were to come to that section. However, the recent arrival of the family of the Civil Commandant of the Attakapas, appointed by Governor Claibourne a few years before, was to Nathan a spot of home. Edward Church Nicholls, an Englishman who had been disinherited by his family in Cornwall for his refusal to enter the priesthood, had sought his fortune overseas, and had come to Maryland just before the American Revolution. In Upper Marlboro he completed his law studies, and married Wilhelmina Hamilton, a member of a family of that region and, it is said, a descendant through her father, - an English naval lieutenant, - of a branch of an illustrious Scots House. "Le Grande Judge" as Nicholls was called, occupied what would be designated as the "Government House" on his plantation just south of the village. He was virtually the head of the American administration in that far away quarter. But to Nathan he was also the father of a most attractive daughter. Yes, life in the Attakapas was pleasant and the old diary of his future brother-in-law reveals somewhat of a tale of that old frontier:

(The diary reads)

"The population of Attakapas at this time was almost exclusively French; a few Americans who we occasionally met with, were of the low order with whom we could have little or no communication. We were consequently constrained to cultivate the Creole families from whom we received every polite courtesy and attention.. regularly every Saturday night, there was a ball in the neighborhood attended by all who choose to come. The dance continued until the party was dispersed by the appearance of the sun the following morning. The Creole girls I found beautiful and fascinating and there was a total absence of all parade and etiquette. Each person seemed to have come for the purpose of receiving and communicating pleasure, and everything was mirth and happiness. The young amused themselves with dancing and love-making, the old with cards and conversation. On Saturday evening many calaches would be seen on the prairie and on the bayou road. These were wooden vehicles put together with wooden pegs, not a particle of iron being used in the construction; the wheels were without tires, and the body of the carriage swung upon strips of rawhide and could be raised or lowered at will, as the rawhide strips were wound upon a little windlass at the back of the vehicle. These strange lumbering carriages would appear before sunset, filled with young ladies and old ladies on their way to the coming ball. On the floor of the carriages would

be one or two shot-bags filled with dollars intended by the old ladies to furnish the means of indulging in their favorite game of "vingt-et-un"..... About this time, Mr. Morse, a young lawyer from New Jersey, settled in New Iberia, and became almost an inmate of our family. His attentions to my sister were shortly of that marked description which indicated an intention of paying her his addresses. This circumstance was pleasing to us all. It was true that he was poor, as poor as we were, but he was an enterprising and energetic young gentleman with a good profession, a pleasing manner, and a cultivated mind. With him it was decided that I should study law. I installed myself in his office at old Mr. Murphy's -- the only tavern in the place -- and was soon buried in the learned law of Blackstone.....a change in the judiciary system rendered our prospects more gloomy than before. The counties were divided into parishes, and parish judges replaced county judges. My father did not receive the appointment and we grew more and more distressed. Mr. Morse in the meantime had married my sister and was living with us (the best house in the village); discovering the incapacity of my father, he took upon himself the entire control. Although his means were limited, I do not know how we could have gotten along without him....Thinking myself qualified to stand examinations for the Louisiana bar, I left home with Mr. Morse to attend the meeting of the superior court which was in session in Opelousas in the spring of 1809....I was pronounced competent and was licensed to my unspeakable joy." (Diary ends)

Nathan and Martha, the Commandant's only daughter, were married on June 9, 1808, and the wedding was a gala event in that little French village. * Among the guests were Madame Neville, M^{de} St. Laurent, and her mother, Madame Monge, M. Pelletin himself, the de la Houssayes and others -- many of them refugees from the terrors of the slave insurrection in St. Domingo, and now settled about peaceful New Iberia and St. Martinsville. The American guests were few. Besides Henry Johnson and John Palfrey and one or two others they were in a great minority in that region where the entire white population was less than 5,000 people. From Nathan's family in Elizabethtowne, in time, were to come boxes of wedding presents for the bride, not least of which was his father's gift, a handsome Duncan-Phyfe table, which was to follow the fortunes of their descendants for so many years.

Among Nathan's first cases was the "Prairie Basse" claim at Opelousas, and his growing practice -- a good deal of which was concerned with the overlapping of French, Spanish and American land

* See Appendix 71

titles - brought him into frequent contact with many of his colleagues at the bar, both in the Attakapas and in New Orleans. At the time of his marriage he had entered into a year's partnership with John Randolph Grymes, a gay young bachelor of about his own age from Virginia, who had established his office in New Orleans, and whose practice -- a large one even then -- was composed of a good deal of piracy and criminal cases. Grymes, a few years later, was to represent Lafitte, "The Pirate".

When Thomas Jefferson imposed the "Embargo Act" on American shipping in late December of 1807, as an effort -- in lieu, perhaps, of an adequate naval force -- to keep the nation out of the great European conflict of that day, he found his policies extremely distasteful to many classes of the American people. And that year of 1808, as provided for in the Constitution, marked the end of the slave trade. The stoppage of shipping -- and American foreign trade was up to then almost totally carried in its own vessels -- coupled with the discontinuation of legitimate importation of slaves, had three major results, in the center of which New Orleans was the heart. There was a great over-supply of competent seamen, a rise in the price of plantation labor, and a dearth of many of the luxuries which the growing prosperity of the people demanded. And Jean Lafitte, -- educated and a shrewd businessman -- was not the one to miss this golden opportunity. Sailing under the flag of a Central American country, he soon had organized a most effective trade in the products for which so many of the people in and about New Orleans were clamoring. Indeed, so prosperous did he become that in a few years time he was well able to pay the large fee of \$40,000 to John Randolph Grymes and Edward Livingston -- the two most eminent members of the New Orleans bar -- for defending him against the charges of the Administration. If his activities were to flavor of piracy, it may have been but an unsanctioned deviation from an otherwise career of simple smuggling. At least that is what, at first, was the apparent consensus of the people to whom he sold his wares; and intolerance of smuggling per se, had never been a virtue of the American people.

Nathan had occasion to visit many of the nearby islands and prairies about New Iberia. Petite Anse Island but eight miles away provided a most prolific game country for men like Nathan who loved the hunt. A part of this very island of so many acres was to become shortly the property of his cousin, Marsh, also from New Jersey and through him, to be transmitted to descendants to complete that vast estate, "Avery's island". * And then there was Isle Simonette -- later

* See Appendix 72

called Orange Island, - which many decades later was to become a winter refuge for that illustrious American actor, Joseph Jefferson. And under foot of these early hunters was a wealth of precious oil and salt yet to be discovered.

At about the year 1810, Nathan and his wife, and the year-old son, named from both his grandparents, Isaac Edward Morse, removed from the Attakapas and settled in New Orleans. *

New Orleans, then the island capitol of the Orleans territory and the Port of the great West, lay behind a rampart of levee before which floated, seemingly in utter confusion, a mile long array of oyster boats, flat bottom craft, and sea-going vessels. On the land side the town was still a walled city, guarded by five forts and a moat. Beyond, at the edges of the cypress swamps, the graceful palm trees swayed lazily with the ever present breeze from the gulf. At nine o'clock each night patrols made their rounds to see that all sailor men and negroes were off the streets. To Nathan and his wife, however, it was a return to civilization -- albeit a foreign one; to their son it was an unspeakable nuisance; but to the soft-voiced Indian negress nurse from the Attakapas, it was perhaps the fulfillment of her life-time ambition. New Orleans, a true and languid daughter of the Latin-rimmed Gulf, had met by 1810 the first vanguard of the American advance in that quarter. The city was slowly augmenting its sixteen thousand inhabitants. Two different cultures were meeting here face to face in the confines of a beginning nation. When Nathan and Martha settled themselves in their comfortable apartment in what was to become known in later years as the "Vieux Carre", they were in the midst of many friends. There was Mr. and Mrs. Garland and their daughter, Miss Euphemie Harang, the wife to be of William Brown, the two Virginians, John Randolph Grymes, - Nathan's recent law partner, - and Governor Claibourne; and Nathan's cousins, the Ogdens.

Of the sixteen thousand people then living in New Orleans, but thirty-five hundred were "Americans", and the greater number of these had, it seemed, lived there for years. And in that year a great immigration took place, when some 34 ships landed almost 6,000 refugees from Cuba and the adjacent West Indian Islands. Most of these settled permanently in New Orleans. The older French and Spanish families lived for the most part on their outlying plantations on the Mississippi river above and below the city. Many of the more prominent merchants were English, German or French;

* See Appendix 73

and among these foreign commercial agents, at the time, was one Vincent Nolte, whose life in New Orleans in that year is described in a later popular novel, "Anthony Adverse". In the year that Nathan and Martha settled there, New Orleans was an American city in name only. True to French exactness, the city was shaped as a parallelogram with the four corners manned with forts facing the points of the compass. Starting at the levee, which was crescent shaped to conform with the curve of the river, began seven parallel streets. Intersecting these at right angles, equally spaced, was twice that number; -- and the geometric center was the intersection of the Rue Bourgoyne and the Rue de Orleans. Between this geometric center and the river, but somewhat closer to the latter, was the Administration center, the soul of the town. Here was the Cabildo, the Government building, and the Church of St. Louis; -- and between this group and the levee was the parade ground, the Place d'Armes, with a gallows in the very center. On Chartres Street, facing the Cabildo, was the Pillory, where not infrequently were to be seen the victims about whose neck hung a card designating their name and crime.

As an ocean seaport, and the terminus of a great river trade, the levee was not free of disturbances among the different nationalities who manned the boats at the water's edge. Even the Garde de Ville -- each man armed with a half pike and a heavy sabre -- was scarcely able to successfully control the frequent rioting among the sailors and river boatmen. It was the immigration from the West Indies that gave to the city so much of its gaiety, night life and cabarets. The houses for the most part were one story and a half frame structures, modest in their appearance. Many of them soon to be replaced by the more stolid dwellings which were to give New Orleans its prominent character for after years. On both sides of the Place d'Armes were stores and shops -- the sites where some thirty years later were to be erected the Pontalba Buildings. Nathan's law office was at 71 Royal Street between Bienville and Conti, and it was the custom in those days to have the living quarters above one's offices.

No sooner had Nathan and Martha settled themselves in their comfortable apartments when the "Business Season"* was over, and Summer was upon them. Now summer in that climate, in that day, where drinking water was peddled on the streets, and ice an instant commodity, was a serious time for a year old infant. Nathan, and Martha, therefore, determined to close their apartments and his

* See Appendix 74

office for the sweltering season, and take their young infant for a visit north to his parents. They boarded one of the several trim sailing vessels which bore them around Florida and Hatteras to New York, -- and arrived in Elizabethtowne before mid-summer. It was a grand reunion, after the five years he had been away, and Nathan had much to tell of his adventures and his future plans. He found his parents both well. His brother Joseph was now living at "Morse's Mills", and he and his wife, formerly Polly Wood, were the parents of a daughter but three months younger than Nathan and Martha's child. Cousin John had been elected a member of the New York legislature, and had married Isabella Brevworte, -- and Nathan and Martha planned to visit them before sailing back to New Orleans. His sisters Nancy, Elizabeth and Margaret were happy with their husbands and children; the former was also now living in New York. while Elizabeth and her husband, Jonas Marsh, fascinated by Nathan's account of the Attakapas were determined to settle in that region. One of the Terrill's, likewise, soon set out for Louisiana. Even little Joan, the youngest sister, a child just twelve years old, was intrigued with the stories of that soft and languid climate. All at "Morse's Mills", as well as his cousins at the "Homestead" were well, and glad to see him and hear his tales of the Great West. His great uncle, General Elias Dayton had died but three years before, but his old preceptor, Aaron Ogden, was well and now a Senator in Washington. And there was much discussion about the successful experiment of Livingston and Fulton, and the "Clermont" in the application of steam for water navigation; and Nicholas Roosevelt was about to try this new contrivance on the "western waters". And Nathan had much to say about the difficulties that would be encountered on those turbulent streams. * The possibility of war, and the probability of statehood for the Territory of Orleans were also topics. On October the twenty-eighth, their infant, Isaac E., was christened at St. John's Episcopal church in Elizabethtowne, and a grand farewell party followed at the old wisteria-covered house of the Morse's on Bridge Street. Before their return to New Orleans, Nathan and Martha with the baby and nurse, journeyed down from Elizabethtowne to Maryland to visit Martha's many friends and relatives in Prince George County and in Washington, for it was just six years ago on a snowy day when she accompanied her family aboard the "Comet", sailing on that boisterous passage of thirty days to the Crescent city. Martha had been born near Upper Marlboro in Prince George County and through her mother, Martha Craufurd, was closely related to many of the families of that county and vicinity.* After a pleasant trip they journeyed back to Elizabethtowne and New

* See Appendix 75

* See Appendix 76

York, where they took passage finally for their home in New Orleans.

People in New Orleans had at an early date adopted the philosophy that floods, plagues, slave insurrections, and even political tragedies were destined to be a part of her existence, and therefore would come and go much as they pleased despite plans or wishes. It was therefore best -- so they thought, and possibly rightfully so -- to live exquisitely in the present. Perhaps in no other city of the country at that time, was there so much attention paid to the balls, the theatre, cards and racing. It was not that commerce or business lagged in that city of the delta; for the men of New Orleans despite the "noon siestas" had always worked hard in the banking houses, the law offices, or in the Exchange; and at that time there were almost a dozen large Commission Houses, all actively engaged, in either domestic or foreign trade. And there was a large number of distinguished members of the Bar and Bench. French was the prevailing, if not almost exclusive language spoken; three-fifths of the population being French, frequently Nathan, in the conduction of his cases, must address the juries in French as well as in English. But it was so ordained that all these matters of law and business, shipping and plantation matters, balls and the theatre, must soon be interrupted.

In 1812, the year that Louisiana was finally admitted into the Union, the war with England, lately declared, seemed but a far-away reality. New Orleans was so distant from the probable scenes of the conflict that she felt herself isolated and quite safe from any active participation in the war. But in late 1814 the city was truly aroused and shocked. A great British fleet, consisting of the "Royal Oak", the "Tonnant", and some forty-odd ships of war, loaded with troops, was headed for that city. The more serious minded felt that something must be done, and done quickly; and Nathan's friend, Edward Livingston, called a meeting at the old Coffee House to stir up enthusiasm, and prepare for a much needed defense. General Andrew Jackson was already enroute to the aid of the apparently defenseless city, but men and supplies must be gotten ready to augment his own not too numerous forces. By the end of November, militia and volunteers were being hastily gathered together. Nathan with many of the younger lawyers, bankers and brokers lay aside their civil pursuits and organized a troop of cavalry, and for a few weeks they were to be found hard at work drilling, riding, learning the use of the sabre, and military formations and deployment. Among his companions in this group, which called themselves a company of Mounted Dragoons, were William Nott, the prominent banker to be; Henry Johnson, later

governor of the state; George Waggaman, a later U. S. Senator whose appointment as minister to France was prevented by his untimely death in a duel; John Dick, the Attorney General; and Peter Ogden, 2nd cousin of Nathan's, who was elected Captain, had been one of those associated with Aaron Burr in his ill-fated Spanish expedition. On December the twentieth, 1814, they were duly mustered into Federal service as a Volunteer troop of Dragoons. *

When young Villere announced in breathless tones that the British had landed beyond his plantation, and were even then organizing for their advance on the city, General Jackson lost no time in acting, and found his now assembled army eager to meet the enemy.

At Chalmette, on that fateful morning of January the 8th, 1815, Nathan, from his post at the line, could see through the morning mist the slow measured advance of stalwart British Troops ---- massed in a seemingly never ending file. Drums beat and bayonets flashed on the misty rise of a winter's sun, and all along the American lines every eye and hand were coolly fixed in tense concentration.

Then, all at once, bedlam broke loose along that entire line of thirteen pieces of artillery, and double row of rugged soldiery between. The cannon barked and flashed as the assorted groups of smokey cannoniers wiped and loaded, and fired -- then again and again -- until one thought there could scarce survive mortal life within that smoke-hidden field of fire. But again and again, those sturdy men of steel reformed to come again upon them, only to be decimated by the constant blasts from guns of varied bore. One, a group of Lafitte's pirates, sweated and swore as they sent blast after blast over that already body-strewn strip that lay between the river and the swamp. Unconcerned were they of hazards, and little did they realize that at that very moment they were battle-partners, flanked on either side with the very crew of a U. S. ship sent down but a few weeks before to wipe them out. And great was the loss in killed and wounded among those British troops just fresh -- many of them -- from the battlefields of Europe. They were no green untrained soldiery; for the attacking force included the King's own Foot, the North British Fusileers, the Dutchess of York's Light Dragoons, and the Ninety-third Regiment of Highlanders who, years later, at Balaclava in the Crimean War, were to earn that enviable title "the thin red line". The same regiment, later, on combining with the old Ninety-first, became the famous Argyll and Sutherland

* See Appendix 77

Highlanders in which the son of Harry Lauder was an officer in a great world war a hundred years later. * These stalwart fighters, but shortly before the conflict on Chalmette plain, had seriously planned to eat their Christmas dinner in New Orleans. But little did they realize that these American riflemen and artillerymen could create such dreadful havoc. And this British attack fought with breechloading rifles and bayonets, unsupported by adequate artillery, proved a turning point in the technique of military attack. The stubbornness of the American defense was magnificent, and the accuracy of the muzzle loading rifles in the hands of the Tennessee and Kentucky militia, who never before had aimed them at white men in anger, was of intense interest to Napoleon Bonaparte as he read the accounts of the conflict in his exile. Perhaps nowhere again would such a band of assorted soldiers be grouped together to fight a common foe.

General Jackson's Army was composed of militiamen of four different states, units of the regular army, navy and marine corps, volunteer companies, a battalion of negroes, a company of Choctaw Indians, a detachment of pirates, and an ex-Mexican general. The last battle between England and America was well fought; -- and although peace had been arranged between the two countries a few weeks before, it was by no means an unnecessary conflict. The American soul, but recently much discouraged by their war record on land was, by this battle revived and strengthened; and henceforth, abroad, the status of the new nation was now to be readily respected and honored. * Not since the memorial day of the battle of Bunker Hill was there such rejoicing in America, at that great victory over the very troops which five months later were to be the conquerors on the battlefield of Waterloo.

The population of New Orleans, four miles in the rear, was in a state of great anxiety during that morning fight, but not all gave way to their great fear as did the traditional negro slave whose song was to become a melody in the decades that followed; the English translation runs as follows:

"The English muskets went bim, bim,
Kentucky rifles went zim, zim,
So I said to myself - 'save your skin'
When I got home I was almost sick
And my mistress knew I was back too quick,
So she had me whipped because I ran

* See Appendix 78

* See Appendix 79

Away from Master when the battle began.
But the whipping I got was better than
A musket shot from an Englishman."

Martha's two brothers were also actively engaged in that war of 1812 which Benjamin Franklin prophesied would ultimately take place and would constitute, in fact, our real war of Independence. Thomas C. Nicholls -- whose brother-in-law, Joseph Rodman Drake, was to be immortalized by those lines from a fellow-poet:

"Green be the turf above thee
Friend of my better days,
None knew thee but to love thee,
None named thee but to praise."

-- was a member of Major Plauche's battalion of Orlean volunteers. And in that three-hour engagement on Lake Erie, Midshipman David Craufurd Nicholls, U. S. Navy, commanded for a part of that sea-fight, the converted schooner, "Somers". It was in this battle on Lake Erie that the American commander, Commodore Perry is said to have declared: "We have met the enemy and they are ours". It was, indeed, the first naval victory of American ships acting as a fleet, and the antagonist, the English Commodore, Barclay, who had lost an arm at the battle of Trafalgar, was a gallant officer and foe. Nathan's third brother-in-law, although not seeing any active service, died in Washington, D. C. as a result of exposure sustained in camp during that war. The American victory in that war was indeed a true war of independence as Benjamin Franklin prophesied, for the British had been fully intent on regaining the lost colonies, and in the attack on New Orleans, her transports were loaded with all the necessary equipment needful for the setting up of a civil occupation of the hoped-to-be conquered territory. There was much rejoicing in New Orleans at the outcome of the battle, and the Commanding General and many of the officers attended the Mass of Thanksgiving held in the Catholic Church of that Creole city. Nathan and his fellow troopers were finally released to civil life * in the middle of March, and in the General Orders of the Commanding Officer, Captain Ogden's troop of Horse, was cited for its meritorious services. And on the tall flagstaff erected in the center of the Place d'Armes, where had flown the flags of France, Spain, France again, and now for the past seven years the Stars and Stripes, Old Glory continued to wave,* in the place of what many of the people thought

* See Appendix 80

* See Appendix 81

would be flown to the breeze after the conflict, the new flag of England.

There was a great increase in population and commerce following this war in New Orleans. The town had already outgrown its earlier configuration, and was expanding in all directions, but especially towards the Tchopitoulas Road, south-west of the old city. These lands, the old Jesuit plantation, which had been confiscated by the Spanish crown some decades before, were being cut up by the new owners and laid off in three or four city squares. Known officially as the Fauberg Ste. Marie, it actually was beginning to be the "American Quarter". Shortly after the battle of New Orleans, it was realized that "walled cities" were an outmoded part of the defense of the town of the day, and the final demolition of the old forts and palisades which had guarded New Orleans in the past, was begun. The most distant street of the old town, connecting the two forts of Bourgoyne and St. Jean, was the Rue des Ramparts. This, after being widened, was called Rampart Street. On the far side of this street and near the "canal", Nathan purchased property and was to soon establish a large dwelling house for himself and his family. This was to be his residence for many years. The "canal" which had encircled the old city, was soon filled up and from that section of the canal to the south-west of the city the great "Canal Street" had its origin. A wedge shaped elongated strip with two sides meeting at one point on the levee and separating Canal Street from what was to be called "Common Street" was the old Terre Commune.

The war, and perhaps the recent expiration of the charter of the old "Bank of the United States", caused not a little confusion and distress in banking throughout the whole country. Nathan's father, Isaac, in New Jersey, was appointed one of the Committee of Three to direct, inspect, and manage the Elizabethtowne "corporation tickets", a medium of exchange which was not completely done away with until specie payments were eventually resumed in 1817.

New Orleans rapidly took on great activity in commerce and in business. Many of the newcomers now dwelt in the newer part of the city beyond the old canal. Even old Charity Hospital was contemplating moving towards a less crowded area, and Nathan with his friend, M. Trahue, as counselors for the hospital, in the year 1819, prepared an appeal for architects, mechanics, and others to submit plans for a new hospital, one and one-half miles below the old city boundaries. In the same year Nathan led a

deputation to the state "Chamber of Representatives" for the chartering of a corporation to construct a new highway from the river to Lake Ponchartrain. Among the "Americans" in New Orleans in that era, and whose names have become immortalized for posterity, were John McDonough, Judah Touro, and Paul Tulane. * In addition to his law practice, Nathan was active in numerous real estate developments close by the levee and near the old "basin", as well as elsewhere in the old and new city. In many of these ventures he was associated with his friend, Mr. Benjamin Story; and there was also a business correspondence between Nathan and his friend, Nicholas Longworth, in Cincinnati.

By 1821, the year the "Riding Academy" was opened on Chartres Street and when the erstwhile muddy streets and "banquettes" were beginning to be paved, Nathan had seen the population of the city, practically trebled. This was the year that the country beyond the western borders of Louisiana revolted from Spain. Even in the lives of the population there was a definite trend toward modernization. This was notably expressed in the clothing of the people of the time; most of the young men had finally discarded the knee breeches of blue or green, and the bright colored coats, for long pantaloons with long tailed coats, adorned with silver buttons. New Orleans was rapidly making strides; and along with this many new faces were seen about; and here and there some old friends had died. Nathan lost his companion and relative, Peter Ogden, who had died the year before, of yellow fever. Young Ogden had come to New Orleans after his education at Princeton, and had married Celestine Du Plessis, and a son of this marriage had married Mathilda Waggaman. Ogden's niece was the Baroness de Pontalba. As a rule, however, most of the American families generally kept to themselves; most of the descendants of the older French and Spanish families, or "Creoles",* resided on their plantations beyond the city, where they lived a life quite independent of the busy metropolis.

It was in the Attakapas country, however, a hundred miles westward, where the country interests of Nathan and Martha lay for the great part. Here, just below "old" New Iberia, in partnership with his brother-in-law, Jonas Marsh, Nathan acquired a plantation along the Bayou Teche. Typical of the times it was a narrow strip, seven by forty arpents in size and dimension, and was stocked with over fifty sheep, some twenty horses, mares and colts, oxen, cows, mules, an "English" bull, a "Jersey" mare, a "Gig" horse and a herd of cows, and last but not least several dozen slaves. No doubt the

* See Appendix 82

* See Appendix 83

Jersey mare was an importation from Elizabethtowne. Among the largest landowners of that area at that time were the Grevenbergs, and the de Blancs; and "Albania", the immense plantation of the former family, is still preserved in the old original mansion house which still exists. A descendant of this family was to marry one of the 9th generation of this narrative.

Among the close friends of Nathan and Martha were William King and his charming young bride-to-be, ancestors of Grace King, the fascinating historian of New Orleans. And there was also James H. Caldwell, formerly of England, actor, banker, and promoter, with whom Nathan was closely associated in the opening of the American Theatre in 1823 on Camp Street between Poydras and Gravier, lighted by "gas" -- a product of the early New Orleans Gas Company, of which in 1829, Nathan was President. Caldwell, in later years became a man of great wealth, and his granddaughter, Marquise des Monstier de Marinville, erected in his memory, years later, "Caldwell Hall" at the Catholic University in Washington, D. C. * It was in 1823 that "Mardi Gras" festivities, suspended since the Aaron Burr "scare" seventeen years before, were resumed. That is, the public masked balls and street frolicking: the organized parades were not a part of these festivities until over a decade later.

Edward Livingston, a member of the New York family of that name, and whose cousin was the proprietor of "Liberty Hall", that outstanding estate in Elizabethtowne, had settled in New Orleans within the year that his brother -- with Monroe -- had negotiated the Louisiana Purchase. Livingston, so active in arousing support for the defense of the city in the late war, had almost completed his new Code of Criminal Law and Procedure, afterwards known in Europe and America as the "Livingston Code". Sir Henry Maine, referring to the code, spoke of the author as "the first legal genius of modern times". A member of the United States Congress in 1828, and referring not, however, to the above Code, but to one revising the Louisiana Civil Code, Livingston addressed Nathan in that year:

"Dear Morse, To get rid of my regrets that I could not be with you on the eighth, I made a full speech of which I send you a copy which I advise you to read when you wish to take a comfortable nap. In return let me know what our Legislature is doing and intends to do. Will they consider my Code? -- Will they appoint a

* See Appendix 84

commission to confer with me on its provisions?

-- Or have a General Session for that purpose?

"We were not fortunate to have the account of your Proceedings on the eighth and the fifteenth. All goes as well here, as one would wish.

Washington
Seventeenth of
January, 1828

Yours truly,

Edward Livingston." *

Horse racing was at that early date a popular sport in New Orleans, and in two decades was to make the Crescent city the foremost racing center in America. * In the early 1820's however, for the sake of novelty, and to prove -- it was said -- the relative superiority of the Louisiana plantation mule over the common horse of the day, and to give some dignity to these hybrid animals, a mule race was arranged to take place at the jockey club. Nathan believed he had in his possession an animal without a peer in speed or intelligence. And, indeed, as for speed, his mule was easily well ahead in the first part of that stirring field of curious mounts. But the greater intelligence of Nathan's mule caused, in the end, its downfall. Tired of the heat and dust of a two-mile track, the mule abruptly decided to quit and successfully scraped off his astonished negro rider, alongside the pales in the fence. Hereafter, it is said that most intelligent animal dubbed "Jack Morse" became somewhat of a notorious animal and lived to a ripe old age of leisure on the Wederstrandt plantation "Magnolia" just beyond the city.

Meanwhile, Isaac E., the ten-year old son of Nathan and Martha, had been sent North to his grandfather's, old Dr. Morse, at Elizabethtowne, from where he attended the local school. On his first trip North, by sailing vessel to New York, the lad was put under the care of Mr. James Brown, a friend of his parents, and himself en route to his post at the American Legation in Paris. Many of Isaac E.'s vacations were spent in New Orleans, -- or at the plantation "Magnolia Grove" in St. Bernard Parish, or "Harlem" in Plaquimine Parish where lived the Wederstrandts' close family friends. The "Phoebe Ann" was one of the staunch little vessels, Captain Silas Holmes, Skipper, -- which carried the young student back and forth from New Orleans to New York. *

* See Appendix 85

* See Appendix 86

* See Appendix 87

1825, in New Orleans, was memorable for the visit in that year of General Lafayette, then sixty-eight years of age. The Marquis de Lafayette always preferred the title "General", and for a man of his age and experience, he possessed a mind ever active and a body inured to an active life. A few months before, in the course of this, his last American tour, Lafayette had passed through Elizabethtowne where he was received with great enthusiasm. Two large triumphal arches had been erected along the road leading from Newark, and, after a formal reception and entertainment, the General was escorted to the residence of Nathan's cousin, General Jonathan Dayton, where he lodged. The next morning there was a breakfast with Governor Ogden and several other prominent citizens of the town.

In this tour of America the General was going to Louisiana. Many years before the United States Congress had made a huge grant to him of ten thousand acres of land in Pointe Coupee Parish, then in Orleans territory, and some fifty miles north of New Iberia. In addition, a grant of lesser acreage had been made close to the old fortification of New Orleans, but due to a conflict with other overlapping grants of the same territory, Lafayette had realized but a small part of this New Orleans property.

In preparation for his coming, the State of Louisiana authorized the expenditure of \$15,000 and chartered the river ship, "Natchez" which was one of the finest vessels afloat in the waters of the state. It was said to have cost some \$200,000 -- the carpets alone, it was rumored, accounting for \$5,000. Nathan, now a Colonel on the staff of that most popular governor and former fellow soldier, Henry Johnson, was one of the delegates to conduct the eminent visitor from Mobile, and to accompany him while in Louisiana. It was a beautiful April day on the Delta when the party aboard the "Natchez" entered the Mississippi. Below New Orleans, abreast of the battlefield of Chalmette, the boat anchored at a newly constructed landing. Little Miss Margaretta Wederstrandt, age seven, accompanied by her mother's maid, was the first to go aboard, to present the distinguished visitor with a laurel wreath, the first strawberries of the season, and a poem of welcome composed by her mother. In recognition of this reception, little Miss Wederstrandt, too young to join in the toasts, was presented with a nougat ornament from the Ship's table, and later was the recipient of a set of glass goblets and a purebred cow; -- the former are still cherished among her descendants, and the offspring of the latter, no doubt, still roam the Louisiana woods. Nathan, smilingly observing the little girl, whose family he knew so well, was in fact looking upon his future daughter-in-law. The party then landed, and were met with artillery salutes and with

a cavalry detachment drawn up at attention. There was an informal reception at the home of Mr. William Montgomery, the old headquarters of General Jackson; and after this, the guests and visitor proceeded the few remaining miles by carriage, to New Orleans. Here, General Lafayette was put up in specially decorated apartments at the Cabildo, where -- it was said -- the table was daily set for thirty people. He remained almost a week in New Orleans. There were balls in his honor, one of which eight hundred ladies attended. A theatrical performance, no doubt at Nathan's urge, at the new American Theatre of Caldwell's, and a grand reception by M. Pierre Derbigny, and at the Grand Ball -- for a very brief moment it is hoped -- was young Miss Wederstrandt and a companion of her own age, the later Mrs. Slocum.

According to a family memoir of those times: "A famous hairdresser was busy arranging the ladies hair for two days before the ball; and just prior to that he drove in his carriage from house to house to put the final touches to the coiffeuse and to put on the anotucti feathers, as a last touch to his handicraft. At that time (continues the memoirs) Margaretta Wederstrandt was living with her parents at the house of Mr. Nathan Morse and his wife; -- intimate friends of her family -- and she used to get up early to teach M. Beaumont, a cousin of General Lafayette's, to find the counties and parishes (on the map) in which lay the land given to the General. Her mother died when she was thirteen years old, and she assumed the duties of measuring all the medicines given to the colored folks and distributed a clothes basket of gingerbread to the little colored Sunday-school scholars on the plantation. She and her sisters, were sent to school at Emmitsburg, Maryland, and her brother, Dr. John Charles Wederstrandt, to Mt. St. Mary's College. Dr. Wederstrandt was the well-known physician at the head of the Charity Hospital and he was one of the first to declare that consumption was contagious and not hereditary."

On April fifteenth the guest and his party again boarded the "Natchez" and resumed their trip up the river. It was said he selected from the list of committeemen those he wished to accompany him. In ten days he reached St. Louis, and then he sped eastward to leave his beloved America for the last time. During this visit, Nathan and the General became close friends and corresponded thereafter for many years.* Just before leaving for France the General dispatched the following letter:-

* See Appendix 88

"Colonel Morse
Aide de Camp du Gouverneur
De la Louisianne
Nouvelle Orleans

September 4t
Washington

My dear Sir:

Permit me before I leave, with a very heavy heart this beloved American shore to recommend most particularly to you M. Adolph Barrot a deserving brother of my intimate friend Odillon Barrot, one of the ablest and respected lawyers of France and of any country. Any service you can render him will be a friendly and highly valued favor to me.

I had expected the pleasure to see Mrs. Morse on my going through the city of New York; she had condescended to announce her visit. I waited for fear of losing it; then I decided to call upon her as soon as I could; you have witnessed my difficulties of indulging those wishes; the fact is that I missed the opportunity to present my respects and could only see your son; receive the affectionate wishes of your grateful friend,

Lafayette."

Odillon Barrot, mentioned above, was active in the French Revolution of 1848; he and Thiers being appointed the new ministers.

In that year Nathan and Martha in the course of the General's entertainment visited New York, New Jersey and New England.

Nathan, however, had already reached home in New Orleans when on July the thirteenth, 1825, his father died. This was but a few months before a serious outbreak of Cholera occurred along the entire Atlantic seaboard. Dr. Craig, the attending physician, described the scene at the bedside of old Dr. Morse, "ever facetious, ever joking....On entering his bedroom I found him greatly prostrated and with the appearance of a fatal termination of his disease, -- and that in a short time. I avoided particular interrogation, and simply asked him how he felt, and what was the disease with which he was afflicted. He immediately replied to my last question in his usual quick eccentric manner, saying: that he had swallowed Gabriel Smith and that he should die. By this means of expression I learned from the family that he intended to convey the impression that he had, in his professional capacity contracted his disease while visiting the family of Gabriel Smith; several members of the family,

Mr. Smith included, having fallen victim to a very malignant dysentery. I conversed but little with the Doctor and at a proper time bade him farewell, and returned to my home, fully impressed that the remaining days of my old friend would be few."

And so he, like Kipling's:

"Lads from Galway, Louth and Meath,
Went to his death with a joke in his teeth."

Dr. Morse had lead an active and constructive life in the community in which he lived, it was said (History of Essex District Medical Society) that in those days of his active practice when "there were few physicians and they were frequently found in every portion of an extended region....the names of Doctors John G. Budd, John Dorsey, and Isaac Morse, loom up from that period. There were none that did not know them, and did not value their professional opinion." * He was buried in the old churchyard of the First Presbyterian Church at Elizabethtowne, and left a large estate to his widow, several children and grandchildren. To his son Joseph D. he left "Morse's Mills" and to Nathan the old home in Elizabethtowne, which twenty-seven years later was to be torn down for space for the erection of the Third Presbyterian Church. Many mourned their loss; for by 1825 the Morse family in New Jersey was of numerous branches, and either by descent or intermarriage was related or connected with practically all the early families of the area, including descendants of Lady Carteret, Abraham Clark, the signer, the Dayton's, Ogden's, Winnans, Bonds and Cranes. * In politics, unlike Nathan, Isaac leaned strongly towards the Federalist Party, - of which his wife's cousin, Jonathan Dayton, was a leader - preferring that governmental affairs be conducted as they had been by Washington and Hamilton rather than by Jefferson. The latter party savouring so much of the French Revolution was called generally, in local circles, the "French Party". It may have been due solely to his politics that Isaac, in 1815, had been so active in supporting his friend, Ogden, in the celebrated steamboat controversy with Gibbons and Vanderbilt. Isaac, always alert to the improvement of community affairs, was one of the earliest to promote the building of the turn-pikes of the state.

Nathan's only son, Isaac E., was sixteen years old in 1825 and had been a student at Captain Alden Partridge's "American Literary, Scientific, and Military Academy" at Norwich, Vermont for two years. Here, in view of the Green Mountains and the White Mountains,

* See Appendix 89

* See Appendix 90

ninety miles from Canada, and well north of old Newbury in Massachusetts, the young lad from New Orleans became gradually hardened and inured to the hard winters of that northern climate. Captain Partridge had graduated from the United States Military Academy at West Point in 1806, but four years after the establishment of that institution, and had served as an instructor there, and for two years -- until 1817 -- as Superintendent. He was extremely interested in the school systems of the country and felt that there was a great need of improvement along those lines. In 1819 he founded his famous school, and among the first students was Isaac E. In the initial prospectus of the institution Captain Partridge states: "I am forced to the conclusion that in every Republic the due cultivation of a proper military information is indispensably necessary for the preservation of Liberty;.... however, I beg not to be misunderstood as recommending a system of education for our use, purely military....I mean nothing more than that the military should constitute an appendage to their civil education, and thereby qualify them for the correct and efficient discharge of their duties as soldiers when their country may require their services in that capacity."

This was the first private military institution of its kind in the United States. And like General Leonard Wood, almost a hundred years later, Captain Partridge was a pioneer in the encouragement of military training for the youth of the nation whose essential pursuits were to be of a non-military character. His institution was to live on and become Norwich University of latter decades. When the location of the school was changed to Middletown, Connecticut, Isaac E. removed with it. At Middletown, about twenty-five miles up the Connecticut River from Saybrook, the institution was conducted in a three-and-a-half story brownstone edifice which is preserved to this day as the administration building of Wesleyan University. Later the school was moved back to Norwich, but this was after Isaac E. had left its walls. "I feel under great obligations from the beginning of my education which was continued in New Jersey, Connecticut and Massachusetts," wrote Isaac E. some years later, "but above all for the robust health and good constitution which I acquired among the mountains of that state (Vermont), and the almost Spartan military discipline of our old instructor, of whom it used to be said that there were three things that he hated; a horse, a feather-bed and a woman. I believed he would have confessed the first two, but I think that the last one was a slander, and late in life he gave the lie to it by marrying, and I believe has left a family to perpetuate the name and fame of Alden Partridge...In the year 1825, while a cadet, I accompanied a party

of thirty fellow-cadets on an excursion to Boston. During our stay there, Captain Partridge obtained the permission of Judge Adams, who resided at Quincy at the homestead, and was the son of the ex-President, to present to the venerable patriot (then past ninety), his party of young men. The old man was seated in a large arm chair which had been wheeled into the parlor, surrounded by his family consisting of his son and daughter-in-law, their children (one of whom, Thomas Boyleston Adams was a cadet with us) and a widowed niece, Mrs. Susanne Clark. As we were presented one by one, and our names and residences announced, we each in turn pressed the hand of one of the most remarkable men of our country; one of a Committee of Five appointed to draft a Declaration of Independence;....the Negotiator of the Peace between Great Britain and this country; the first accredited Minister to the Court of St. James; the first Vice-President of the United States; and the successor of George Washington in the Presidential chair...and while I was but a very small boy I had read enough of the history of my country to know that I stood in the presence of one of the most interesting men that ever lived...We had marched from Norwich with our knapsacks (mine weighed seventeen pounds). We returned by the same conveyance without Captain Partridge, who gave us three dollars and a half to pay our expenses home, -- 120 miles. Captain Partridge started us out on one bright morning, and that we might not 'the flowery path of dalliance tread' or linger too long on the way, the allowance he provided us with, was the real assurance...I was then 16 years of age...I do not know how it happened, whether I bought more milk and gingerbread than I should have, and which was all that in those primitive days we could get by the roadside, but certain it is that on the third night when we stopped within twenty miles of Norwich, I had but four bits, or fifty cents in the world. Here occurred one of the most terrible mental struggles, to know how to dispose of to the best advantage those fifty cents. I could easily walk the twenty miles home the next day before dinner, but having walked nearly forty miles that day, twenty five cents must be appropriated for a bed, and with the other twenty-five cents it was not so easy to decide what to do. Present hunger said "Eat a good supper tonight and let the breakfast of tomorrow go". Prudence answered "If you eat the supper tonight, you will be as hungry tomorrow and a walk of twenty miles on an empty stomach will be painfully disagreeable." It was a long time before I could make up my mind to do what I believed was the best; keep my money for the morrow, or to go ravenously hungry to bed. However, I told the landlord what was true, perhaps not all the truth, that I was very tired, and if he would show me a bed I would not wait for supper. My resolution almost gave way

when he enumerated the good things he had for supper, and said that it would be ready in a very few minutes. Had it been then on the table, I must have yielded at the risk of being sick from a walk on an empty stomach, the next morning. Surely "Lead us not into temptation" is the most striking clause in all of the New Testament. I might probably have borrowed from some of our fellow students, or the Landlord would have given me, or trusted me for a meal, but the truth was that I made it a matter of pride to travel as well and as economically as the others. After a walk of fifty miles over those New England hills, one needs no soporific. The soft side of a plank, a blanket, counterpane, or sheet is all the bed one wants. Anything but a feather-bed; that, a tired man cannot sleep on. The next morning I was as rich as Croesus, two bits for my bed and two bits for my breakfast. I think that it would have been cheaper for the Landlord to have given me supper gratis. I do not know what eggs cost then a dozen, but according to the New Orleans prices it would have been cheaper for the Landlord to have given me four bits to have purchased my breakfast elsewhere. This was my first trip to Boston."

One of his fellow students was young John Charles Wederstrandt also from New Orleans, a future brother-in-law of the then young Isaac E. A letter to young Wederstrandt from his mother is typical of the usual messages from home to the sons of those New Orleans boys in the far distant northern schools of that time: -

"Magnolia Grove Plantation
May the thirtieth, 1826

My dearest son,

Yours of the date of the twenty-seventh of April, we have duly received, and I need not add what sincere pleasure it gave us to learn from the receipt of your letter that you were reconciled to your resident in Middletown, and to the rules and regulations of Captain Partridge's institution; the kindness of my young friend Cadet Morse has very sensibly affected my heart with gratitude. It will give me the sincerest pleasure to relate to his esteemed parents such an instance of their beloved son's good feelings and benevolence; return him if you please my best acknowledgement and assure him of my friendship and regards; his sprightly conversation and polished manners have not been forgotten by me. Although it has been some time since I have seen them, his family are all in good health and I have some hope that his good Mama will spend the unhealthy season at "Magnolia Grove". Mr. Pintard writes very flattering accounts indeed of you (my dear son) and I will take it a very particular favor if you will write to that good gentleman and make your acknowledgement to him for his attention to you while in the city of New York.

"He writes that he has invited you to join his grandsons on a visit to him on the Fourth of July; this is a renewed instance of hospitality which calls for much gratitude and I hope you will be particularly careful in making your acknowledgement acceptable to him, by writing him in the nicety and correctness; your epistolary style is very promising. My dear boy, write always as you think, the suggestions of your own mind and you cannot fail to please; your handwriting is very deficient, but I hope with the aid of a good teacher, united to your own application, you will soon remedy that minor defect; always write with a dictionary before you; and ascertain certainly that your orthography be correct, which is all important. I wish you to be very explicit in your next communication, and inform me what class you were found qualified to fill in each department; Latin, History, Geography, and Mathematics. Have you learned dancing? If you have not I wish you to take lessons in order to subtile your body and assist you in moving gracefully, as well as to give you a very agreeable accomplishment when you mix in society; it is also a very healthy exercise (which I fancy you think you are not in need of with your military exercises). Your papa will send you some drillings for six pair of dress pantaloons; if I can find the proper pattern of a military stock, I will also send you some; but you must not be in want of them, but apply to Captain Partridge for everything necessary (my son) for you to make a genteel appearance.

"When you go to N. York you must be particularly careful in your dress. Do not leave anything untidy; I shall take measures to have ample means to pay your washing bill, and I beg of you not to spare your white clothes, neatness is the very spirit of military education. Papa wishes you to make your respects to Commodore Chauncy who lives at the Navy Yard at Brooklyn; and as you have a passion for naval tactics your visit will be agreeable to you. He will send you a letter of introduction and I hope you will be gratified to survey all the fortifications around the city. Have you received your.... We forwarded you a chest to Middletown. Have your teeth examined in N. York by a dentist if you find it necessary; and be very careful (my dear son) as they are a very essential part of comfort as well as very indispensable to cleanliness. Keep your hair and nails in order; your little trunk will furnish you with brushes, combs, etc. You must, when in N. York, make a visit to Dr. Lyell (?) of Christ Church, who is an old friend of mine, and at whose house I received many kind attentions fifteen years ago when in N. York. Your uncle, John Smith, used formerly to live with him

when he was at school in that city. My dear John Charles do not fail to write me a clear inventory of every article of clothing you have; what was furnished by Mr. Tienan, and what you have received from home; also what was made for you at Captain Partridge's in the military way, as it is absolutely necessary for me to know. Helen Maria says she is very much satisfied that you forgot to send your love to her and all your sisters. Believe me in affection,

Ever yours,

Write your Uncle often.

Mother.

He complains of your neglect; and every attention is due you to him, my dear boy, for he loves you very much. Your papa and Margaretta are planning to make your uncle John Charles a visit at his new sugar estate "The Hermitage", fifteen miles above New Orleans. It is opposite Mr. George Mathers. Your papa is settling "Harlem" lands below town."

In 1827, Nathan, with Charles Olivier, Anton Ducros and John Fort, were Colonels on the Louisiana governor's staff. In the summer of that year, Nathan was attacked with yellow fever, and on his recovery expressed a desire for a sea voyage to hasten the return of his health. His friend, Lafayette, hearing of this, a few weeks later, wrote him from his Chateau "La Grange", "Our excellent Captain Davict is now engaged in The Havre trade which will afford me opportunities to hear from you and give me hope that you may take a trip to France, where your visit would make us so very happy. Offer my affectionate regards to Mrs. Morse and family, to our friends in New Orleans, and accept those of George and LeValleur."

However, they did not take the anticipated trip abroad, but soon, with the return of cooler weather, Nathan regained his health and was back in town in time to welcome to New Orleans his old Commander-in-Chief, Andrew Jackson and his party. In 1827 the Legislature of Louisiana invited General Jackson to visit New Orleans as the guest of the state and to participate in the celebration of the anniversary of the Battle of New Orleans. Nathan was appointed Chairman of the Committee of Entertainment and Reception. During that memorial visit, Nathan and Martha were busy in attendance at the several receptions and dinners given in the honor of the Hero. During the visit General Jackson was the guest of Mr. Marcus Gordon, at his residence, now known as No. 417 Royal Street -- the house later known as the "Patio Royal". A

distinguished member of General Jackson's party was Sam Houston. It was through him that many of the fair sex of New Orleans were able to gratify their desire for a memento of the occasion, and it was the spirit of those times that mementos were not infrequently of quite a personal nature. Apparently there were few families in New Orleans that did not possess a lock of hair of the hero of the battle of 1815. Sam Houston on his return to Nashville ably executed the delicate mission entrusted to him by Martha and forwarded the token with the accompanying flowery note, typical of those times:

"General Houston has the honor to present to Mrs. Colonel Morse his most respectful salutations and assure her that the pleasure he derived in having it in his power to comply with the request by which she was so kind as to distinguish him.

"From the veteran warrior's brow the enclosed lock was taken, and regarded by him as a high compliment from a lady possessing so many charms, and so much excellence as Mrs. Morse!

"General Houston begs leave to assure Mrs. Morse of his most affectionate recollection, and to add his fervent prayers for her happiness."

The guests had been royally entertained in the city which knew so well how to do so. Although it was an era before the establishment of the famous Hotel St. Charles, or "Antoines", New Orleans was well in advance of her sister cities throughout the Union in the matter of gaiety and entertainment. The peculiar Creole dishes such as Gombo file', Courbouillion, the Grillades and the wines, were greatly cherished in the crescent city. Una Tope Hennessy, an Englishwoman, on an American tour which took her through Washington, Norfolk, Boston and Mobile, made the following remarks about the New Orleans of that year: "an air of cheerfulness and gaiety, and withall an old continental aspect which is peculiarly pleasing after being for so long teased with the newness and rawness of (other) American cities." She did, however, object to dinner at the barbarous hour of half past three.

Nathan had by this time removed his offices to No. 7 Bourbon Street only three blocks from his dwelling on Rampart and but a few steps from the edifice which was soon to constitute one of the interesting points of the town, - "the old Absinthe house".

In addition to his law practice, Nathan with his old friend, John A. Fort, as well as Benjamin Story, continued to invest and purchase many promising lots and dwellings, particularly in the newer part of the city, and along the levee road.

There is no record of such a meeting, but sometime in the year 1828, a tall slight Kentucky lad of 19, one of the crew of a Mississippi flatboat, may have been seen by Nathan, head and shoulders above the other passers-by, along the narrow streets of the levee front of New Orleans. This was none other than Abraham Lincoln, scarcely then recognizable as a future eminent President of the United States.

On February 9th, of that year, Andrew Jackson, from his beloved plantation, "The Hermitage", thus addressed Nathan:

"My Dr. Sir:

I seize the first leisure moments that have offered since my return to announce to you our safe arrival at our respective homes, all in good health.

I take this occasion to present to you and through you to each member of the Committee of which you were a member, my thanks, for your kind attention to us while in your hospitable city. The kindness and liberality bestowed upon us by the citizens of Louisiana, will be treasured up by me as long as I live, with grateful recollection. In return all I can say, is a tender of my fervent prayers for yours and their health and prosperity.

Mrs. J. joins me in kind felicitations, to you, your lady and family, and,

Believe me with great respect,

Yr. Mo. Obedt. Servt.

Andrew Jackson".

Colonel N. Morse

P.S. When I had the pleasure of being with you at Captain McCutchings, you expressed a wish to Colonel Scotte (?) that he would join you in establishing a Stock farm from which, I inferred, you had a desire to possess yourself of some good blooded stock of horses, if this should be the case, I have a few that I could

recommend to a friend. Major Donaldson and myself have a stud colt, three years old last September, of first blood, that is believed by judges, to promise as fast as any colt in America, and two filly's four year old last May. Should your son visit us as is expected, the ensuing summer, and you should want them, you can have them at a fair price, the horse colt is fine and promises much, and so are the fillys. Present Mrs. J. and myself respectfully to Captain McCutchings and family. Say to the Captain that the colt I am moving for him promises well at its age.

A.J."

Ever since 1824, Nathan had started the preparation of a "Digest of Martin's Reports", a promising and important work, which, however, he had not completed at the time of his untimely death nine years later. This important material -- a condensation of cases from the superior court of the territory of Orleans, and later state of Louisiana -- was not completely assembled until 1839 when J. Burton Harrison placed the material in published form. In politics Nathan was a Democrat and had been so, at least, since 1815 -- despite the fact that both his father and his old law preceptor, Aaron Ogden, were of the opposing political school.

Chapter VI. ISAAC E. AND THE REST OF THE WORLD

"Blest was it in that dawn to be alive,
But to be young, was very heaven."

- Wordsworth.

Isaac Edward Morse, the seventh generation in America, was thirteen years old when John Wesley Jarvis, perhaps one of the most noted American painters of the day, rendered a full length, life-size painting of the lad, depicting him standing at the steps of his grandfather's house in Elizabethtowne. After attending Captain Partridge's school in Vermont and Connecticut, in the fall of 1828, he entered the Senior class at Harvard College. Here, Isaac E. roomed at the residence of Mr. Brown and was one of the last students, in point of time, to enter that so-famous "Class of 1829". At that time the college President's House, on the Boston road, was the only structure near the later "Harvard Square", and stood midway between the Charles River and the cluster of college buildings opposite the Commons. The campus buildings consisted of Massachusetts Hall, erected in 1720, the "New" Harvard Hall (re-built about 1766), and Hollis Hall; the latter being third in line from the direction of the President's House. These, with Holworthy Hall, at the far end, and Common's Hall and Old Chapel to the east, formed the "Yard". Between Hollis and Holworthy, was Stoughton Hall, and before each was the college pump. The "Class Day Tree", just west of the interval between Stoughton and Hollis was at that time scarcely more than a dozen years old. Harvard, then, and for some time to come, was one of the old colleges most popular with boys of the South, who as yet must go North, or to Europe, for their higher education. Every morning from the belfry of Harvard Hall, the students were summoned to Chapel and Class; -- and there were Proctors and Co-adjutors to keep the student body informed of the ancient duties required of them at such a hallowed spot. Other non-scholastic activities, not mentioned in the college catalog, included gathering about the "Smoking Punch", bonfires about the Pump, brisk canters on the horses from Willard and "Jemmy" Reaves' Livery Stable, and, "Oysters and Flip". * And there was also, of course, as one of his classmates put it, the lovely "Marys and Annes and Elizas".

Twice a day, a stage-coach driven by "Morse", - some distant relative, no doubt, - ran from Cambridge to Boston. Once in

* See Appendix 91

the forenoon, and again in the early afternoon, this vehicle would dash up by the college and announce its journey to Boston by the blowing of the loud horn. Among Isaac E's best remembered professors was Dr. Popkin, Professor of Greek, whose eccentricities were subjects of great interest to the students in his classes, who, however, were the only persons privileged in his hearing to call him "Dr. Pop". Life in the College at that time has been graphically preserved in Abbott's "Cornerstone": "Very early in the morning the observer may see the lights at a few of the windows of the buildings inhabited by the students. They mark the rooms occupied by the more industrious, more resolute, who rise and devote an hour or two to their books by lamplight in the winter mornings. About day, the bells awaken the multitude of sleepers in all the rooms, and in a short time they are to be seen issuing from the various doors with sleepy looks, and with books under their arms, and some adjusting their hurried dress. The first who come down go slowly, others with quicker and quicker step as the tolling of the bell proceeds; and the last few stragglers run with all speed to procure their places before the bell ceases to toll. When the last stroke is sounded, it usually finds one or two too late, who suddenly stop and return slowly to their rooms. While the morning religious service is performed by the President or one of the Professors, the students exhibit the appearance of respectful attention, except that four or five, appointed for the purpose in different parts of the chapel, are looking carefully around to observe what persons are absent. A few also conceal under their cloaks, or behind a pillar or partition, between the pews, the books which contain their morning lesson....when prayers are over the several classes repair immediately to the rooms assigned respectively to them, and recite the first lesson of the day. During the short period which elapses between the recitation period, and the breakfast bell, college is a busy scene. Fires are kindling in every room, groups are standing in every corner, or hurrying around the newly made fires; -- parties are running up and down stairs, two steps at a time, with the ardor and enthusiasm of youth the breakfast brings the whole throng again and gathers them around the long tables in the Commons Hall or else gathers them among the private families in the neighborhood. An hour after breakfast, the bell rings for the commencement of the study hour -- to prepare for their recitations at eleven o'clock. The afternoon is spent like the forenoon, and the last recitation of the winter's day is just before the sun goes down.....the remainder of the account varies with the disposition of the student.....some assemble for mirth participation, or prowl around the entries and halls to perpetuate petty mischief, breaking the windows of some helpless

freshman, -- or burning nauseous drugs at the keyhole of his door, -- or rolling logs downstairs....".

A man's funeral oration is not perhaps the truest description of his real life. Nevertheless, Oliver Wendell Holmes, at the death of his old classmate, wrote his impression of Isaac E. as a student at Cambridge in 1828-29. "Here he at once arrested attention by those striking qualities which distinguished him from all his companions. His advent brought a new sensation to the little world of the University. He had seen more of life in its varied aspects than any of his new associates. To the liveliest of dispositions was joined a maturity of thought which made him seem older than his coevals. None of them can ever forget the impression he produced by his astounding humor, his shrewdness, his stories, his extraordinary freedom with old as well as young, as told in many an anecdote, which pleased the more venerable subjects of his good natured familiarities, as well as their juniors. He was so natural, so overwhelming with life, so irrepressible, had so much tact, such confidence in his taming powers, that no age or station was proof against his easy colloquial advances. He never offended, because his freedom was not a cloak for rudeness, but rather, the expression of an open nature. He had more of the true democratic instinct than was commonly found in a young gentleman of that day. Beneath his infinite gayety was a basis of strong convictions which he never hesitated to avow. Through all his knowledge of the world, it was easy to read the impulse of a generous and loving heart. His conversation was varied and entertaining and his vocabulary was like a new language in force and freshness. It enriched the college dialect with words and phrases which became the current coin of discourse in the gayest circles, and his quaint comparisons were constantly borrowed by less shining wits to illuminate their conversations. He delighted, he captivated, he fascinated by these gifts and graces, so that he was welcome in all circles, and it would have been hard to say whether young or old, man or woman, missed him most when he left them, feeling after a year's acquaintance as if they had known him a lifetime."

Isaac E., was a member of that student organization, "Knights of the Square Table", -- K.S.T. it was called -- as well as the "Porcellian Club" which according to Dixon Wector constituted the premier college club in America. This club indeed had a most interesting history. Towards the end of the eighteenth century, students calling themselves "Argonauts" met every other week for supper. They later changed their name to the "Pig Club", still later to the "Gentleman's Club", and finally to the name it bears to this day.

There was an old gentleman, Captain Barton, of Cambridge, (wrote Isaac E., some years later) who was a friend and patron of all the (Harvard) students from the South and who used to amuse them by his singular pronunciation. "A party of us", wrote Isaac E., who remained at Cambridge (on the brief vacation periods then in vogue), "used frequently to spend the day at the Fresh Pond, playing nine pins. Our old friend, Captain Barton, used to make up one of the party, with Millikan from Charleston, Tilghman of Maryland, Gilchrist (later Chief Justice of the Court of Claims), and Saul of New Orleans. Each of these gentlemen had the unfortunate letter "L" in his name, and it used to amuse us to hear the old gentleman (Captain Barton), call out to the several players: 'Now Minnikan, its formiddin bain' -- 'Tinnan, it's your turn' -- 'Saun, made a ten stroke' -- 'Ginchrist has a spare bann'. By pronouncing these words rather quickly and slurring over the letter 'N', it was surprising how well it answered for the letter 'L' Our old friend Captain Barton has friends in every city of the Union, and particularly in New Orleans and Charleston. If these lines should meet the eye of any student from the South", continues Isaac E. years later, "they will recollect that as long as the Captain lived, no young man away from home and his friends, if deserving, need want money or a friend. Long may he live to receive the annual congratulations of a host of boys, who will never forget the many acts of kindness shown to them from the South, by the old Captain of Cambridge Port."

It was while Isaac E. was a student at Harvard that he first met Daniel Webster in Boston. In later years he mentions this with a remark which he admitted was not original: "There never was a man half as wise as Daniel Webster looked."

Nathan and Martha came up from New Orleans for his graduation on August 26th, and heard their son elected one of the vice-presidents of the class. After the festivities were over they lingered for a while in New York, then a town so small that Benjamin Story felt no hesitation in directing a letter with the simple address, "Colonel Nathan Morse of New Orleans at New York". The contents advised Nathan of a remarkable occurrence in the old Bank of Orleans during his absence and shows something of the banking methods of the day. "...Yesterday was the semi-annual day for counting the cash at the Bank - the Committee met about five o'clock, had proceeded in counting the cash for the first Teller, and had gone into the vault to examine the specie -- the cashier had taken the box containing the notes in his charge from the vault into the banking room, and unlocked it and gone out while the committee were in

the vault - they heard a noise upstairs but thought it was the falling of a chair or table - when they came out they saw the box containing the notes on the table with the key in it. It was customary for the cashier to hand the notes out of the box to the Committee for counting -- and they sent a boy upstairs for the cashier to attend to his usual business -- who returned and reported that he was dead; had shot himself. Upon further examination it was found...short eight thousand dollars.....and.....he escaped the punishment of the law.....enrollment as a member of the governor's guard of red rogues...."

Although many new streets in New York had been laid out on paper as early as 1811, the town itself was for the most part confined to the regions below Canal Street. At that time there was a daily transient population of less than three hundred people, and New York's first skyscraper, six stories high -- the Adelphi Hotel -- had been erected but two years before. The Planter's Hotel, where in later years so many of the southern visitors were to stay, had not yet been built and Nathan and his family probably resided, for their visit, either at the Eagle Hotel run by old Captain Coles, at 61 Whitehall Street, or at the Adelphi.

After a brief stay in New York, they journeyed to Elizabethtowne to pay a visit to Isaac E.'s grandmother, and their many relatives. Here they found themselves in the midst of many other visitors from the South who in this era were converting that old Jersey town into a favorite summering place. They then took a lazy trip southward, and stopping in Maryland, were guests of the venerable Charles Carroll of Carrollton * at his magnificent estate, "Doughoregan Manor". "Mr. Carroll, at that time," wrote Isaac E., in later years, "was the last surviving signer of the Declaration of Independence. I count that day among the most interesting of my whole life, -- to hear the story of our nation's independence, its struggles and its trials.....His recollections of Washington, Franklin, Patrick Henry, and, indeed, of all the men of that day with whom he was intimately acquainted, were highly interesting and instructive, particularly to a youth fresh from college..... Mr. Carroll, though at that time considerably past ninety, was in the possession of his mental and physical powers to an astonishing degree.....His two daughters, Mrs. Caton (the mother of the Marchioness of Wellesley and the Duchess of Leeds) and Mrs. McTavish with her family, were residing with him....His almost invariable custom was after tea, to play a rubber of whist with his children

* See Appendix 92

or grandchildren, which would bring us to about nine o'clock, at which time he always retired.....Among the things which struck me most about the house was an excellent portrait of the 'Duke of Wellington'."

It was decided that Isaac E., was to make a tour of Europe, as a necessary part of his education, before settling down to the study and practice of law with his father. Events abroad at the time, however, made postponement of this trip necessary. And so, like all good Louisianians, the entire family retraced their steps to New Orleans.

It was in 1830, that Louisiana was forced to take drastic steps to prevent the disturbances that were expected to follow the propaganda which was exciting their Negroes to insurrection and riot. Unlike the fair and equitable plan which England was initiating in the matter of emancipating the slaves in the West Indies, there was an underground dramatic plan on foot, by a group of fanatics in America, to free the negroes in the states by violence and bloodshed. Up to 1831, the militia of Louisiana were obliged to furnish their own arms and equipment. In that year the Legislature, sensing the necessity for a more efficient defense against disorder provided that henceforth, arms and ammunition were to be furnished by the State; and Nathan was appointed to the responsible position of supervising much of this material. He was commissioned Quartermaster, with the rank of Lieutenant-Colonel, of the First Division of State Militia. At the time he was also Recorder of New Orleans, an office which coupled the duties of presiding judge of the criminal courts of the city with the responsibility and duties of assistant mayor -- charged with the preparation of all city Ordinances. *

In France, the "Revolution of 1830", had made the Duc d'Orleans, (Louis Phillippe) the compromise head of that country, and among his supporters had been Lafayette. The people of Louisiana (remembering the French origin of so many of their fellow-citizens) were more than interested at the new turn of affairs, and the House of Representatives of the State addressed a formal letter of Congratulations, on behalf of the people of Louisiana, to the people of France. Lafayette himself anticipated this enthusiasm, and addressing Nathan in February of that year, wrote: "I am sure that you have cordially sympathized with our great events of last July, and more so, on account of the part which your old friend has been called to act. The European papers, I refer you, for an account

* See Appendix 93

from this hemisphere. The question of war or peace is yet unsolved, but the cause of freedom and national sovereignty shall, one way or another, ultimately triumph. The deputation, donations, and colours from New Orleans, have been respectfully, gratefully, and affectionately welcomed."

By 1832, there was peace again in Europe, and on the first day of July of that year, Isaac E., accompanied by his friend, young Dr. Charles A. Luzenberg, * also of New Orleans, set sail from New York aboard the "North America", bound for Liverpool. Not, however, without first a short visit in New York. There were always new objects of interest in that city; a new Opera House had lately been erected, many new handsome dwellings had been built, and a young man from Switzerland, by the name of Delmonico was just opening his new eating house on Williams Street.

In 1832 it required a little over a month to cross the Atlantic. The "steamships", so-called, were merely sailing vessels fitted out with starboard and port paddle-wheels, which they sometimes used when the weather and conditions made it permissible or advisable. Essentially, they were still sailing vessels. While some specially constructed craft had made the journey from America to Europe entirely by steam, the possibilities of a routine service of that sort to Europe was not taken seriously. One of the great drawbacks was the need of sufficient space to store the fuel-wood and coal for the voyage. It was to be another four years before the "Great Western" was to make the voyage, followed shortly after by the beginning of a famous steamship line, by a Mr. Cunard of Nova Scotia. In that same year of 1832, there was another Morse besides Isaac E. on the same high seas, aboard the ship "The Sulley", en route from Havre to New York. A distant cousin, (fifth), Samuel F. B. Morse, was whiling away the tedious voyage by constructing the design for his first plan of telegraphy.

On the morning of the fifth of August, 1832, Isaac E. - an American citizen - disembarked in old England, the land which his forefathers had left less than 200 years before. It had been not quite 60 years before, that this new world home was still a part of the British Empire. It was indeed a great adventure to Isaac E. and his companion when they arrived at Liverpool, with its hundreds of windmills, black steamers with red chimneys, and yachts with red sails. The young men secured a "traveling carriage" and a driver and by renting horses from time to time began their tour. This, called

* See Appendix 94

"posting", was the usual method of traveling in those days in Europe and Great Britain. The young travelers both expressed amazement and astonishment at the excellent roads and grave formality that England then afforded. At Lancaster they saw "the High Chief Sheriff drive by in his coach-and-four in state, preceded by twenty-four Constables in blue coats and yellow capes, with spears, yellow tassels, two postillions, yellow jackets and white breeches. The two justices, each in full dress, were resplendent in large powdered wigs and scarlet cloaks." Isaac E. and his companion arrived in Manchester just in time to witness the celebration of the passage of the Reform Bill, "all the manufacturies were closed, but the procession amply repaid us for this disappointment. The parade, consisting of about 100,000, was composed of persons of all trades, handsomely decorated with the different insignia of their respective professions, and some two hours was occupied in the passing of the procession by the hotel (The Royal Arms), and the 'tag-rag mobility' and light troops nearly doubling that number. Some of the trades were particularly happy in their decorations, particularly the glass-blowers, who wore fashionable glass hats, while others of the fraternity were uncovered, -- their heads adorned with glass wigs. Another group, packers, I believe, carried a movable gallows, suspended from which hung two worthies; -- his Grace, the Duke of Wellington, and Sir Robert Peel, in orange green, a fair illustration of his cognomen 'Orange Peel'.

Near Edinborough, Scotland, "...arrangements having been previously made by our polite friend, Mr. L., to show us a specimen of Scottish hunting, we preceded this morning (Sept. the eighth) at six o'clock, to the Park of the Duke of Buccleugh. Here we met his huntsmen and three whippers'ins in scarlet coats and tan top boots, with eighteen brace of hound. Thirty or forty of the gentlemen of the neighborhood were assembled. * It was too early in the season to expect much sport, owing to the difficulty of driving the cub foxes from their covers. We preceded to a cover (a small cluster of trees and underwood) where the dogs soon started Reynard, but were unable to drive him to the open ground. After running through the underwood for some time, they caught him and killed him. Determined not to be foiled, we next rode to a Park of the Duke's where we soon started another, and the dogs succeeded in driving him to the clear ground. The hunters, delighted, followed through the woods, over fences and ditches, two or three times around the grounds. Reynard, ultimately succeeded in fortifying himself in his hole. The sportsmen were glad to retire, and take something to eat, having ridden from six until twelve upon an empty stomach. It was very novel to

* See Appendix 95

us, and the pleasure manifested by the horses when they heard the hounds, contributed not a little to our sport. The proper season for this sport is two or three weeks later, when the harvest is all gathered, and the fields cleared of all obstacles, barring stone fences, and ditches (which, with thoroughbred horses, only gives zest and variety to the amusement). The hounds are of a fine large breed, similar to ours; their ears are all cut and handsomely rounded, an improvement that would do well in our thickly wooded country."

After visiting Ireland, Wales and London, -- where at the latter place they lodged at No. 127 Regent Street, -- they set their route towards France. "We stopped for the night at Dover...and the next morning...after three hours we were softly landed in 'La Belle France'....To us Louisianians, it seemed like an old acquaintance. Many things reminded us of New Orleans... There is no one thing that exhibits the national contrasts in so great a degree, as the travelling equipages, viz: post horses, carriages, postillions, and post houses. If this difference is attributed, -- as I have not a doubt it is, -- to the encouragement of horse-racing in one country, and the total neglect of it in the other, I shall henceforth give it my support; for all the evils of it, are far more than counter-balanced by the ease and rapidity with which one travels in England, (as compared to France). As our party consisted of more than two persons, it is necessary, -- in Posting, -- to have an additional horse for every person. Accordingly, we exchanged our carriage-pole, for a pair of shafts, and started the same day for Bologne. A more particular description of our equipage may be interesting to such of our friends as may not have had the pleasure of traveling in France... We were provided with three stout, long-haired, crooked-legged horses, over whose hide the curry-comb or brush, had not passed for months at least. One of these was fastened (I could not call it harnessed) in the shafts, and one on either side. The traces were common ropes, which, by the number of knots, had no doubt done good service. The near horse (which the postillion rides) is fastened about a half a length ahead of the others. This is done to prevent the postillion's legs getting chaffed or hurt; the postillion, being provided with a pair of iron or wood, sometimes leather boots, weighting at least 30 lbs., and a cow-hide whip, dashes off at the rate of 5 miles an hour.

"The whip which he cracks without much avail, serves him instead of a horn. It is heard sometimes for a half a mile before he reaches the Poste House; and when in sight of a Tavern, one or two loud smacks bring out a little bar-maid with a glass of eau de vie. The route is divided into Postes, which are between five and

six miles English, which they do well if they accomplish in an hour. By bribing the postillions you may get on a little faster. But, the equipage is not the only thing in which the Frenchmen are far behind the English. In England, at almost every Posting House, you will be shown into a comfortable room with a fire, while the horses are being changed. In France, at many of the Postes, there is no house at all; you are often driven up to the stable, and there you may stay until the horses are changed. In some of the small towns, a parcel of men and women flock around the carriage, and tell you, for a few sous, you may find a fire at some shed sometimes 50 yards distant."

In Paris, "Having determined to become a student", wrote Isaac E., "I soon settled down in the Hotel de L'Oden, one of the numerous hotels near the Luxembourg in the Quartier Latin. All this quarter of the town, or rather Fauxbourg St. Germain, is thickly settled by students of law, medicine and literature. Nearly every individual you meet has a book or two under his arm, and is either going or returning from lectures or recitations. The lectures, of which there are several every day in all departments of science, are all in this neighborhood, and what is better than all, are public: gratis. There is certainly no place in the world where knowledge of all kinds can be acquired so cheaply as in Paris. You can attend some distinguished professor every hour in the day, eight to four, free of expense, -- and with economy, you may live cheaper than any place else in the world. But perhaps the vagabond way of living here is one of the most striking characteristics of the place. Among the many thousands of students who inhabit this part of the city, there are not ten who eat, sleep and study in the same hotel. My own way of living is a fair specimen of the habits of others. I have a room neatly furnished in the Hotel de L'Oden. I breakfast at a restaurant in the Rue de L'Odin, a few doors from my hotel, where I have "caffe", deinsi bouteille de vin cutlette ou omlette avec pain, beurre et fromage a discretion" for twenty sous at any hour from nine to one. I dine at a table d'hote with some old friends at five o'clock. This is more agreeable for dinner than to eat at a restaurant but as you may not wish to breakfast at the same hour every day it is much better to arrange with a restaurant, in that case you never lose your breakfast. There is something in this way of living, which pleases me much, eating does not seem so important a part of our life. You only eat when you are hungry: sometimes before, sometimes after, lectures; today at nine, tomorrow at one."

One of his companions here was his old classmate at Harvard, Oliver Wendell Holmes, who in a letter home, of August the thir-

teenth, 1833, writes: "my most pleasant and original classmate, Morse of New Orleans, is living close to me at present: -- he, and a Philadelphian, by the name of Stewartson, whom Jackson introduced me to -- and I, frequently breakfast together." While in Paris, Isaac E. had the pleasure of meeting two men, most distinguished to all Americans: his father's old friends, Lafayette, and Fenimore Cooper. He writes: "We called at his (Lafayette's) Hotel, No. 6, Rue d'Arigon, St. Honore, and left our cards and some letters of introduction to him. A day or two after, we received a very polite note from him (in English), appointing an hour to meet him at his house; where at the named hour we went. He received us with great kindness, as he does all Americans, conversed much about our country, and seemed to take a lively interest in our welfare. He was much mortified at the disturbances in South Carolina, and seemed to think that it would retard the cause of free principles in Europe at least a century. He gave us a very polite invitation to spend a few days with him in the spring at "La Grange". His health is still good, and his recollections of American scenes and individuals, astonishingly vivid. We met him a few evenings after, at a large soiree, with his characteristic politeness, he was walking through the crowded rooms, speaking and bowing to his numerous acquaintances; nor would the repeated solicitations of the lady of the house, Mrs. Carnes, induce him to be seated. We also called to see our countryman, J. Fenimore Cooper, who has been residing in Paris for the last seven years, not to share in the pleasures and dissipations, but entirely devoted to his literary pursuits. He resides in a genteel hotel in the Quartier Latin, and is uncommonly retired. He has a very charming family and Mrs. Cooper is among the most agreeable ladies in Paris. It is rather singular that Mr. Cooper should have been able to bring up his family in the real Republican manner. To visit his house after coming from the noisy and ceremonious houses of the Parisiennes, is almost like being transported across the water, to our plain and healthy habits. Mr. Cooper is among the few Americans who have been courted by nobility, and whose head has not been turned. His fault, on the contrary, is that he treats honors and recognition rather with contempt, which sometimes falls on the individual. Mr. Cooper has done more for real Republican principles both in his practice and with his pen, than any other man now in America; for which he has the respect and esteem of all Americans here, and deserves the undivided thanks of all the patriots at home. He told me that he knows that individuals are paid by this (French) government, and that of Great Britain, to abuse America, and its institutions, and in a debate, here, before the Chamber of Deputies, it was contended that the French government was a freer and a

cheaper one than ours. It was insinuated that the facts relative to the expenses of our country, were had from some individuals in the employ of our government: General Lafayette sent the debate to Mr. Cooper, requesting him to examine it and see if the statements were correct. Mr. Cooper replied at some length and showed the absurdities and fallacy of the position. I regret that the conduct of South Carolina (the Nullification Act) should have given these Loyalists a temporary triumph. The Liberal party here, always pointed with pride to our country, as an instance that the people can govern themselves and live in happiness; free from external broils, and internal commotions."

In the same part of Paris as these students lived, was the celebrated hospital, Hotel Dieu: this hospital, where the famous surgeon Dupuytren visited all the wards, sometimes 1800 patients, every morning: "....With the help of a borrowed diploma, (Isaac E. and his friend) secured admittance, and saw him operate for a cataract, and heard him lecture. His appearance justifies the character and name which he bears, -- 'The Brute'. He looks like a well-fed butcher, with his apron on, his instruments in his hands, he cuts up a live human being with as much sang froid as the butcher does his dead calf. Notwithstanding his real brutality, his reputation is so great, that persons are obliged to come and submit to his insolence for the benefit of his professional skill."

These activities, with his studies, the opera, and attendance at the several government sessions, now had to be interrupted by the necessity of continuing the journey. At Dijon, Isaac E. remarked on the similiarity of the steeple of the church of St. Benigne to the steeple of the First Presbyterian Church at Elizabethtowne. By cumbersome stages, over the Simplon Pass in Italy, they finally arrived in Rome, at Eastertime, where they secured lodging in a small apartment on the Caronaria. Isaac E. and Luzenberg, were part of a large crowd which received the Benediction of Pope Gregory XVI, and as a part of the ceremony: "he threw from the window two papers, one of which was a general benediction, and the other a curse upon the House of Collona, one of whose members, in the middle ages, murdered a Pope." At the workshop of Sig. Thorwaldsen, they saw that most eminent sculptor, and the bust he had just made of George Washington. In Trieste, they met with two American skippers, Captain Smith and Captain Nye, commanding two American vessels in port. To the latter ship, the Brig "Effort" of Boston, they were invited to a meal, and "since leaving home we have not enjoyed anything more than that good old fashioned American breakfast.....a fine dish of ham and eggs,

fricassee of chicken, with all the etc., etc. and all served up by Mulatto stewards."

The two young men continued about the Continent, and en-route from Naples and Rome, "...We could not help being struck with the singular manner of harnessing their horses on these roads. The public horses vary in number according to the state of the roads; sometimes only two are used to draw a common carriage; and at others six or eight. When more than 2 are used, the leaders are harnessed sometimes two abreast, and sometimes three; but the singular part is the enormous length of the traces, which are often more than 20 feet long. When 6 horses are harnessed 2 abreast, without the least exaggeration, the leaders are more than 20 yards from the carriage. The horses here are generally small and poor, but still they draw enormous loads. They are a much better breed of horse than those in France, and considering the manner in which they are kept, and the awkward way in which they are harnessed, they draw astonishingly well. They are three fourths of them black, and resemble in form and size the creole horses of Louisiana."....."From Venice to Florence we travelled by Voiturier. This is an easy and comfortable way of getting on; provided you make a good bargain with the Voiturin. He has bound himself by a written contract to furnish us our passage to Florence, to pay all expenses of the route, to provide us a good dinner and lodging on the road, and to take us to Florence in four days and a half; in pledge for the faithful performance of this contract, he is to give us ten francs to keep. We, on our part, are to pay him 3 napoleons d'or or 60 francs: one half on the road; and the other on our arrival safe in Florence. If he does not fulfil his contract, we can have our passage free, and his ten francs into the bargain."

In Spain, "No sooner does a traveller enter Spain", continued Isaac E. "than he is struck with the singularity (of the travelling equipages) of this country. The Diligences are drawn by seven or nine mules harnessed by couples, -- and one horse, the near leader, which the Postillion rides. They are tied together with ropes in such a singular manner that when any one of them becomes the least unruly, it ends in a general confusion, and they are obliged all to be taken off and harnessed anew. They have, also, a custom of shearing all the hair off their bodies and off their tails, -- except a little at the extremity, -- which adds to the ludicrous appearance of their equipages. Thus, harnessed, with one postillion on the near leader, and one to drive the wheel horses with beating and cursing, you are dragged at a

very good pace. The 2 or 3 pairs of mules between the leaders and the wheel horses, are left without lines, without riders, and without bridles, -- pretty much to themselves, except when the postilion who drives the wheel ones jumps off to beat them. Which he does every five minutes." There was very little in the customs of the people, in Art or Architecture, Isaac E. overlooked in his journey through Germany and the adjacent countries.

By the end of October, 1833, he was back in France, when, on the other side of the world, in Louisiana, there was a terrible catastrophe. The river packet, "St. Martin", was descending the Mississippi, well loaded with bales of cotton and hogsheads of sugar, and with the usual number of passengers. Nathan, accompanied by his negro body servant, was returning home from a journey to Bayou Sara, then a settlement of considerable importance, and had gotten to within about 140 miles of New Orleans. There was much luxury aboard those Mississippi steamboats those days, especially those that plied between Bayou Sara and New Orleans. It was pleasant sitting comfortably on deck, enjoying the cool breeze and the view of the river and land beyond. Many of these boats were fitted up with coffee houses or bar-rooms with elegantly finished rooms for cards or conversation. Spacious staterooms had two berths in each, and were provided with mattresses stuffed with Spanish moss. There was an elegantly fitted ladies cabin above deck with windows ornamented with white curtains and all berths decorated with bombazette, fringes and mosquito bars. Nor was suitable furniture lacking; sofas and settees, tables and even large gilt framed looking glasses adorned the walls of the river steamboat of the day. But, gradually in that fair afternoon, rumors of an uncontrollable fire spread quickly among the passengers. They were face to face with one of the great dreads that accompanied Mississippi River traveling. The fire swept through the hold and the deck. In this great conflagration aboard ship Nathan was among the thirty of the passengers who lost their lives. This was on October 31, 1833.

According to the assembled accounts of the survivors: "In descending the Mississippi, it was discovered that the steamer, (St. Martin), was on fire, and in a few minutes all efforts to extinguish the flames were in vain. The tiler ropes being burned, and the engines still in motion, the boat was running at a fearful speed without approaching either shore; and her velocity only fanned the fearful element that was fast consuming the frail boat, and encroaching upon the alarmed passengers. Judge Nathan Morse was perfectly calm and collected, and prevented several from jumping overboard while the ship seemed to be running toward one of the .

shores; but as soon as she took a turn towards the middle of the river, he advised all to take their chance, as the fire was fast approaching the passengers, already crowded together on the forepart of the boat. The greatest danger consisted in their being compelled to dive into the water in front of the wheels, now moving with the velocity of mill-stones, and which were believed to have destroyed most of the company who then perished. With a full consciousness of the danger, Judge Morse determined, at the risk of his life, to save, if possible, the little black boy who accompanied him, as he was much frightened, and unable to swim. He being a very athletic man, and excellent swimmer, and perfectly cool and self-possessed, had a fairer prospect, if unencumbered, of saving his life, than others who escaped. He was warned by many of the passengers that the boy would greatly embarrass him if not drown him. Still he persisted in the attempt, and throwing off his coat, he seized the lad and dove with him as deep as possible to avoid the wheels, but was never seen to rise, being undoubtedly struck, as so many others slightly, who dove unencumbered and escaped." *

Two days later the intelligence of this melancholy disaster was brought to New Orleans by the steamship "Black Hawk", which reported it had come alongside the wreck about two miles above Donaldsonville. A pall spread over New Orleans, and the Bar met and called Mr. George Strawbridge * to the chair and Resolved:

"That the members of the Bar of New Orleans, deeply sympathize with the afflicted family of their deceased brother, Nathan Morse, Esq'r., who, as a lawyer, a gentleman, and a public servant, has been so long distinguished in this community, and that in testimony of their respect for their memory, the members be requested to wear crepe during the space of thirty days.

"Secondly, that the members of the bar will cooperate with the authorities of the city, in public testimony to be shown to the memory of the deceased.

"Thirdly, that these Resolves, reported by Messrs. Dennis, Eustis, Preston and Locke, be communicated to the family and published in the newspapers of the city."

* See Appendix 96

* See Appendix 97

But these thirty had not died in vain, for this disaster focused considerable attention to the then state of affairs which had existed for many years. In the race between competing steamboats, to shorten the time between destinations, little thought was given by the owners, for safety. Since the year 1810 over 200 vessels on the Mississippi had thus come to grief, with a loss of over a thousand lives. The average life of these vessels was less than four years, and remains of wrecked and burnt hulls were not an uncommon sight along the river banks. In the following year, stringent laws were enacted to prevent the recurrence of such calamities.

The currents and eddies of the Mississippi River rarely gives up its dead, and Nathan's body was never recovered. He was survived by his widow, and son Isaac E., several sisters, a brother, Joseph Dayton Morse, of "Morse's Mills" in New Jersey, and a score of relatives and friends. His mother had died the year before. "Thus perished, with others", according to the newspaper accounts of Nathan's death, "one of the noblest specimens of humanity the race could boast, filling large circles in the higher walks, and crowds in the lower, with grief and sadness."

And Isaac E., returned from abroad to his widowed mother at the now desolate home on Rampart Street. The house once a place so lively with entertainment and gaiety, seemed now hopelessly forlorn. On every wall and in every corner were mementos of Nathan's. The two great paintings by Jarvis, one of Chief Justice John Marshall, and the other of Isaac E. as a young school-boy in New Jersey, as well as the two portraits of Nathan himself and his wife, looked down upon a sad group. Even the Duncan-Phyfe table, the wedding gift to Martha from old Dr. Morse, seemed in grief and the two French clocks, encased in glass, on each mantel-piece seemed anxious to turn their hands to the happy days that went before. A constant stream of relatives and friends came to pay their respects; the Nicholls, the Marshes, the Wederstrandts and others. But most of all, those very close friends with whom the Morses had been associated for so long: - the Wederstrandts.

Isaac E., for a year and a half, embarked upon the practice of law in the old office, No. 7-Bourbon Street, where a few years before he had studied with his father as preceptor. His efforts were attended with not a little success, and among his first cases was the claim of the American citizens in the Island of Nassau off the Florida coast, whose slaves had just been emancipated by order of the British government. * (Appendix 98) Perhaps he also parti-

cipated in some of the wild land speculation that was then so rampant in and around New Orleans. In search of surcease from his sorrows he soon again started attendance at the balls, the theatre and the race track. Amateur theatricals at that time began to take a real hold on the citizens of New Orleans and in these Isaac E. often took a leading role. Among his fellow participants were the Misses _____, Smith, Rowe, Harting and Higgins; and several of the young men of his own age, such as Pritchard, Porre, Lea, Boyd, Cenas, and Kennedy. It was the custom for these performances to begin at six o'clock, and the proceeds were appropriated for local charity. "Every One Has His Faults", "Sprigs of Laurel", and "Honeymoon" were some of the titles of these entertainments. It was in this year, 1835, that all New Orleans was stirred by a dreadful discovery. An early morning fire in the dwelling in Royal Street of Madame Lalaurie, disclosed a terrible tragedy. The perverted mentality of this supposedly normal and well-received woman was horribly exposed. The intense cruelty that she inflicted on her innocent slaves, victims of her mental abnormality, was a hideous chapter in New Orleans history. * Henceforth the "Haunted House" has been a conspicuous sight in the Crescent city.

Since returning from Europe, Isaac E. had become closely attached to the charming daughter of old family friends; Margaretta Wederstrandt. They were married at Harlem Plantation on January 8 (the anniversary of the Battle of New Orleans), and many of the old and young journeyed thirty-eight miles down the river to attend the festivities at that plantation home. Among the guests was at least one old Harvard chum, J. Bozman Kerr, who had settled in Louisiana four years before.

Harlem Plantation, thirty-eight miles below the then city limits of New Orleans, on the left bank of the river, was the usual planter's home of the period. In a modest dwelling, amidst orange and cypress trees, live oaks and magnolias, lived the family of Philemon Charles Wederstrandt, a former officer in the American navy. In 1797 he was one of the initial group of twenty-four midshipmen appointed for the first Navy of the country under the Constitution. As Midshipman, Lieutenant and Master-Commandant, he had participated, aboard several of the old ships of the time, in the undeclared war with France, and the war with Tripoli, and in the former he had received a wound in the battle between his ship "The Constellation" and the French frigate, "La Vengeance".

* See Appendix 99

He had served both in the Mediterranean and in the upper Atlantic, and Caribbean waters, and in 1808 commanded the American flotilla at New Orleans. Between these naval wars he had often obtained leave of absence to accept appointment as Captain of Merchantmen, and there were few points of the world that he had not seen in war or in peace, either from the deck of a man of war, or from the bridge of an American clipper; and south of India he and his crew narrowly escaped with their lives from a band of murderous pirates. A native of the eastern shore of Maryland, he was related to many of the families of that region, including the Blakes, the Tilghmans, the De Courcys, and the Ringgolds.* Although he had resigned from the Navy some years before the War of 1812, he was again called from his country estate, "Carlton" near Baltimore to serve aboard the U. S. "Java" with the American fleet in the defense of Fort McHenry against the British attack in 1814. He and his brother, with many slaves inherited from his mother's plantation in Maryland, settled in Louisiana and established cotton and sugar plantations.* His final establishment was at Harlem Plantation. This estate was over a thousand acres in extent, and employed over a hundred slaves, shipped hogshead after hogshead of sugar to New Orleans from its own port at the levee.

But Isaac E. and his young wife, Margaretta, were to reside, for the time being in the Attakapas. Perhaps Judge Porter, the whig planter of that region, had whispered to him of the great political possibilities in that region. Even as a student at Harvard, Isaac E. had promised his classmates that he would some day become a member of the Congress of the United States. The decade that preceeded 1835 was a most important one in the American politics in Louisiana as well as throughout the country at large. The year before, the Whig party had been formed: recruited in great part from discontented sugar planters who felt that Andrew Jackson had done more harm than good by his policies. Judge Porter, the Louisiana Senator, although a Whig, had great respect for his "democratic friends", as he called them; and among these was to be Isaac E. The young couple established themselves in a large comfortable dwelling some four or five blocks from the Courthouse on the main street of St. Martinsville, just 8 miles beyond New Iberia, where Isaac E. was born twenty-six years before, at his grandfather Nicholls' plantation home. Their new dwelling, adjoining the property of their friend J. Burton Harrison, was elevated well above the ground by sturdy brick columns and was surrounded by a grove of luxurious trees and foliage. They called it "Locust Lawn".

* See Appendix 100

* See Appendix 101

Here, on the Bayou Teche, he was not among strangers. His maternal grandfather had been Civil Commandant of the region, his cousin, Mary Stone Marsh, had just married, Dr. Abbey, and there were the Taylors, Cades, and another cousin; one of the two Sarah Craig Marshes, then but a young girl of fourteen, was soon to become the wife of John de Valcour of New Iberia. Then there was his cousin, Marsh, who had owned a part of "Petit Anse Island", later to become joined to the property of Daniel Dudley Avery, and to be known henceforth as "Avery's Island". Daniel Dudley Avery had married one of the Sarah Craig Marshes. * But, perhaps the most interesting character in the Attakapas country was Cadet St. Julien, an old Frenchman who lived as a hermit amongst his books and manuscripts -- a man of remarkable memory and intelligence, he had been one of the French troops who served under Lafayette at Yorktown, Virginia.

For several years Isaac E. was busy in his law practice, which was an active one and took him frequently to the courts at Opelousas, Vermillionville, and other points. In his office, as a student in law, was his cousin Thomas C. Nicholls. In 1842, Isaac E. was elected to the Senate of the State and as New Orleans was then the seat of government of Louisiana, Isaac E. and Margaretta, with their young children were frequently in the Crescent city, although their time was much divided between the Attakapas, the Wederstrandt plantation, and New Orleans.

Some miles below St. Martinsville, and near a settlement called Franklin, there resided Judge Alexander Porter. A Whig, he and Isaac E., Democrat, became fast friends. Porter -- the son of an Irishman who had given his life for his country -- had lived in lower Louisiana since about the year 1809, and had become one of its most prominent citizens, if indeed he was not the most distinguished Louisianian of the day. One of Isaac's first acts, as a member on the Democratic side of the State Senate, was to actively sponsor the nomination of his Whig friend for his second term in the U. S. Senate. In January 1843, Isaac E. announced to the two houses of the Legislature that he was "authorized by the Democratic Party in the Legislature, to state, that they had come to the resolution of nominating no candidate in the election. They had concluded to vote for a distinguished gentleman of the Whig Party who had once before filled the office of U. S. Senator." Judge Porter spent much of his time in the North, in New York, Newport, and Washington, and referring to Isaac E., in his usual jocular manner, as the "Major of the 7th Hussars", he wrote him

* See Appendix 102

from the White Sulphur Springs in Virginia, on February the ninth, 1842 -- reciting some of the political gossip of the day:

"After spending two weeks in New Orleans, I ran up to Natchez, stopping a week there with my relatives. Six days more, during which time I tramped the 'Duke of Orleans' under my feet, brought me to Louisville. The races were coming off when I arrived there and I remained in that famous city a week, then pushed on to Lexington; got there the evening before the day the great barbecue was given to Mr. Clay. Attended it. Could not witness, without emotion, the vast crowd, 20,000 people present, 3,000 of them ladies. Mr. Clay spoke long and very well. And it was touching to the highest degree to see the affections which beamed from the eyes and burst from the voices of the large crowd which had rushed together to welcome to retirement the man whose life had been zealously spent in their service. I remained two weeks in Lexington, for the weather was too cold to come through the mountains. Finally I moved off for these hills, and reached here the thirtieth of June. Scarcely any visitors had arrived before me. There were not more than forty persons assembled when I got here; and yet, though much increased, the number are much fewer than in former years... I am much obliged by your account of the electioneering movement in Attakapas, and have been amused, too, at the same time... I am sick and disheartened at the state of public affairs... the great cause of the evil is universal suffrage, and the ignorance of those who exercise it... I am very anxious to hear the result of your election in Attakapas... give my namesake a kiss for me, and with cordial and respectful compliments to the ladies, I am truly your friend."

"Oaklawn Plantation", on the Bayou Teche, was the pride and joy of Judge Porter. On a two thousand acre plantation he had erected a magnificent dwelling, walls fourteen inches thick, and with a row of six large columns in front. In this rival of any home of the day in America, he entertained lavishly, and Henry Clay himself had been a guest here in 1843. Judge Porter, a great lover of horse flesh, was the first president of the Metairie Jockey Club in New Orleans, a racing club he was instrumental in founding. At one time he unsuccessfully offered seven thousand dollars for the great Irish dam, "Fanny Dawson"; however, he did acquire that famous stud, "Harkforward", known to all racing followers here and abroad, and which was the sire of so many blooded horses of the years to come.

Addressing Isaac E.'s wife, Margaretta, the year before he died, Judge Porter wrote: "I cannot tell you....how much I was disappointed at not having the pleasure of seeing you and your Mama, and the children on your way up. I had still hoped that after you had put your house (St. Martinsville) in order you would come down to Oaklawn....it will be a long time before I can revisit Oaklawn, -- it may be my fortune never to do so; it would give me great pleasure to see you, your mother (Mrs. Wederstrandt) and the children, before my (perhaps) final departure. Can you not come down? I asked Mr. Morse this evening to write you. He told me that I had more influence, etc. and try my own hand. I felt the compliment and though I knew that kindness alone prompted it, I still hope that I might have the fiftieth part of it, and be able to draw you down to us. From his permitting me to send the carriage up (almost fifty miles) you will see, however, that my request has his entire approbation. I would send both my carriages but cousins are paying visits, or rather returning them before their departure. We shall wait dinner on Saturday, and trust you will be able to come down. I would apologize for taking such a liberty, but you will, I trust, find an excuse in the feelings of great regards, a proper respect, with which I am, (signed). Present my respects to Mr. Morse, who will, I trust, accompany you; and give the old Judge's love to the boys: (Nathan, Malcolm, and Porter)."

As a State Senator, Isaac E. was chairman of a committee to which was referred a Resolution for remission of the fine of a thousand dollars imposed upon General Andrew Jackson by a New Orleans court in 1815 when the General declared military law in New Orleans, as a precautionary -- but apparently somewhat unpopular -- measure in the defense of the city against the British. In a lengthy report, Isaac E.'s committee strongly and forcibly recommended the remission of the fine. This was done.

New Orleans, then the capitol of the state, was the fourth largest city in the United States, and hopefully expecting soon to be second only to New York. Nor was this a rash expectation. However, the development of the railroads in the following decade, and the interposition of a desolating war that was to come were the instruments whereby the Crescent City was to be denied its great ambition. Indeed, from the standpoint of culture and gaiety, New Orleans even then outstripped New York. For many years, and well before such was obtainable elsewhere in this country, New Orleans had its Grand Opera; and a busy traffic by sea connected it with New York and other ports; and it was in 1840 "Antoine" Alciatorre

and his wife established a restaurant which was to become nationally famous. It was the custom for General Lacoste to frequently entertain at his hospitable board the Senators -- seventeen in number -- present in the city during the session of the Legislature. It was on the occasion of one of these dinners, that Isaac E. took the opportunity to note the brave character of so many of its fellow citizens -- the French creole -- the "Descendants of that race of men", he writes, "with whom Napoleon traveled over Europe and planted the tri-color in almost every capital." Isaac E. continues: "Unfortunately, a day or two before the time that the great dinner was to come off, the son of our host, a lad of about nineteen or twenty, got into some difficulty with a Frenchman from France at the Opera. I do not recollect the cause of the quarrel, but some words and an exchange of cards took place and the meeting with small swords was arranged to come off at the Oaks on the Metairie ridge the day after the dinner. The idea of a dinner party taking place at the house of our friend and colleague only the day before a hostile meeting between his son and another person, embarrassed us very much, and after some consultation among ourselves, it was agreed that I should go to the General and tell him: that we had heard of the duel, and beg him to excuse us for that day, and that we would dine with him at another time. I called upon the General and explained the object of my mission as delicately as possible, and concluded by saying that I came on the part of our brother senators to beg him to excuse us for that day. To my great surprise the General would not hear of it. He said it was his Fete, and that he had never in his whole life failed to have his friends around him on that day...that he would consider it a personal affront (if his brother senators deserted him), that as to his son's duel, that was not to stand in the way of our dinner one moment, and bearing me off, he waved his hand with a "a demain a five heures"....and at the time appointed, we appeared.....and sit down to one of the most sumptuous dinners I ever saw spread before me. The mother and sisters of the young man were at the table, and although they, as well as the General, did everything in their power to make it pass off cheerfully, it seemed like a wet blanket was upon our spirits, and it was certainly exceedingly dull. The General perceived that the conversation was constantly lagging and that something must be done, or his Fete would be a failure, so calling for a bottle of Champagne frappe', he arose from his seat, and said: 'Gentlemen, I do not know what makes you so dull. I will propose a Toast if you will drink it in Bumpers, -- (to which, of course, we all assented), I give you, gentlemen, the health of my son -- tomorrow morning, for the first time, he measures swords with a petite francais de France. Here is hoping that he will never forget the name he bears, or the

country which gave him birth, and, (that he will) comport himself like a true prier Chevalier Sans Peur et Sans Reproach'. The ladies threw up their handkerchiefs and we drank the toast in a bumper, and from that time forward, it was one of the gayest parties I have ever attended. The duel came off, and fortunately there was no harm done; but the flesh wound of the arm received by the Frenchman."

Duels were not uncommon in Louisiana, especially in those decades between 1830 and the Civil War, but after adoption of the new state constitution, the penalty attached to all parties concerned, resulted in the Seconds becoming extremely anxious to effect an amicable agreement without the resort to weapons. "In nine cases out of ten", writes Isaac E., "if the Seconds are prudent and discreet men, that can be satisfactorily arranged. I never would consent to act as a Second to any man, without telling him beforehand, that I would consider it my duty to use every means in my power to settle the difficulty peacefully, and I was enabled to arrange, on the most honorable terms, more than one." One of the famous duels that took place on the duelling Oaks of New Orleans had been that of Isaac E.'s uncle, David Crawford Nicholls, and a popular dancing master of the city.

One of Isaac E.'s New Orleans friends, and Attakapas neighbor, was John F. Miller. Miller, owner of a large plantation at New Iberia, a part of which had been the old Nicholls estate, had been the owner of a slave (supposed to have been a very light mulatto) whose identity was afterwards established as Salome Muller, an orphan German girl. Her story was to be ably told in after years by George Cable.

In 1844, Isaac E.'s fifth cousin, Samuel F. B. Morse, successfully completed his telegraph line from Washington to Baltimore.* In that same year, by the death of Pierre Evariste Bossier, there was a vacancy in the United States Congress, and Isaac E. was elected as the Representative of the "Gallant fourth" Congressional District of the State of Louisiana. Of this immense area, of nineteen parishes (counties) Isaac E. had not been in fifteen of them, but as he relates, "They took me sight unseen....and at that time, in 1844, I represented the most remote district in the United StatesI was again nominated for the Thirtieth Congress, and more to thank them for past favors than to solicit new ones, I mounted my Creole pony and rode some twelve hundred miles to see my generous

* See Appendix 103

constituents. On reaching Natchitoches, where my competitor, John Waddel resided, he very politely offered to accompany me, and to show me 'the turkey paths' in the upper parishes, which I had represented in two Congresses without ever having seen them. Appreciating his kindness, we agreed upon a program, and made appointments to speak every day for some six weeks, making each day at least one, and sometimes two or more, speeches."

In Natchitoches, Isaac E. had frequent occasion to see a very distant kinsman, General Peabody A. Morse, who was a personal as well as a political friend. Despite the fact that General Morse, and Isaac E., were each removed six generations in different lines from Anthony Morse, it was said that they were often at a distance mistaken for each other. Certainly a most remarkable fact. General Morse had been born in New Hampshire in 1805, graduated from Dartmouth in the class of 1833, had been a tutor in the family of Judge Brooks of Virginia, and had settled in Louisiana where he was married to a Miss Virginia Sompayrac.

In some of his political canvasses Isaac E. addressed his constituents in French, as often as six times in twenty-four hours. A man of great physical strength, he once swam across the Mississippi River, and had walked in one day fifty-three miles carrying a pack of seventeen pounds. Much of this endurance, he claimed, was due to his early training in the rugged hills of Vermont. As a member of Congress in Washington, Isaac E. made his maiden speech in 1844, on March the eighteenth, in reply to J. C. Ingersoll, denying that the Commissioners of Maine had over-reached in the settlement of the Northeast boundary of the United States -- and deprecating the war spirit aroused in discussing the Oregon question. The northeast boundary of our country, along the Maine border, had been finally settled in 1842. According to Isaac E., the Webster-Ashberton treaty, wherein this was accomplished, was the result of a common sense agreement of two individuals, old-time friends, whose vision was beyond the petty arguments of the day. At the time that Lord Ashberton's party came into power in England, Daniel Webster was the Secretary of State in America. "When Lord Ashberton, reached Washington," wrote Isaac E.: "...instead of regular and formal notes and protocols, these two gentlemen dined together almost daily, and over a good bottle of wine, the treaty was leisurely framed and agreed on. The notes which were published were mere matters of form and put out as we would say, -- "for Bukum." There was some grumbles on both sides of the Atlantic, but all sensible men were well satisfied. A few sensible articles in one or two of the leading newspapers in the state of Maine, and several well written letters by

Matthew L. Davis, the New York correspondent of the London Times, satisfied the public minds of the United States and Great Britain that it was neither wise or patriotic to endanger the peace of the world for a few acres of poor pine woods which, when the timber was cut from it, was scarcely worth the taxes."

When Isaac's great, great, great grandfather, Peter Morse, migrated westward, he went to New Jersey. When his father, in 1805, set out from New Jersey for the "far West" he found his destination at the delta of the Mississippi River. But by 1844, the white man from the East, descendants of the early English colonists, reinforced by waves of newer immigrations from the Old World, had gradually and persistently, in their Western march, forced their way across the Rockies to the Pacific, -- and in a sort of fanlike expansion had penetrated even northward into Canada and southward into Mexico. American interests even touched upon the islands of the far Pacific. In 1844, the time had arrived when the government of the United States was faced with the question of possible jurisdiction over this western expansion of its people. Isaac E., -- as a member of the Congress of the United States -- was to be an actor in this great epic of American history. Eight years before, Sam Houston, -- he who had gallantly secured a lock of hair from Andrew Jackson, at the wish of Isaac's mother, -- had led a successful revolt of Kentuckians and Tennesseans in the Northeast of Mexico, and became the President of the subsequent Republic of Texas. After nine years, as a free and independent nation, Texas applied for admittance as a state in the American union, and on January the eleventh, 1845, two months before the bill was finally passed, Isaac made a lengthy speech in Congress strongly favoring this Annexation.

The Oregon country -- so-called -- was the designation given to another vast area on the Pacific, from which was to be carved in time a large part of western Canada - and the American states of Washington, Oregon, Idaho, and parts of Minnesota and Wyoming. This vast region extended from the Rocky Mountains to the Pacific Ocean, and from the Russian territory (Alaska) to Mexico below. Since 1818, it had been, by virtue of a Treaty between England and the United States, jointly occupied by subjects or citizens of the two countries. For some years this section had been filling up with emigration from the Eastern American states and many caravans of settlers had gone over the trail to the new land of such promise. In the newspapers of May, 1843, one reads:

"We are informed that the expedition to Oregon, now

rendezvoused at Westport, in Jackson county (Missouri), will take up its line of march on the 20th of this month. The company consists of some four or five hundred emigrants -- some with their families. They will probably have about one hundred and fifty wagons, drawn by oxen, together with horses for nearly every individual, and some milch cows. They will, we suppose, take as much provision with them as they can conveniently carry, together with a few of the necessary implements of husbandry. There are in the expedition a number of citizens of inestimable value to any community -- men of fine intelligence and vigorous and intrepid character; admirably calculated to lay the firm foundations of a future empire."

On January the fifteenth, 1846, Isaac E. spoke in Congress favoring the Notification to the British government of the end of that treaty, and advocating a division of the region along some equitable plan. Many unthinking Americans, at the time, demanded the entire region -- "Fifty-four, forty, or fight," was the cry of a large section of our population, whose desire of annexation and expansion was unsatiated, and was becoming, indeed, out of bounds. "The feeling of general confidence on the part of the western men was so marked", wrote Isaac E., "that it would not have been difficult to find thousands of Kentuckians and Tennesseans (for instance), who had never even seen anything modern but a steamer, or traveled in anything but a flatboat, who would willingly take charge of the Allied fleet at fifteen minutes notice, or fight -- with the boys of Kentucky -- the combined armies of Bonaparte or Wellington." Isaac E., knew well his nation's inability to support its unreasonable demands with force of arms, and in a speech of February 1845, before Congress, he deprecated this extreme and dangerous policy. The compromise boundary, agreeable to both sides, was arrived at in June 1846, -- and the permanent, historic northern boundary between Canada and the United States was thereby completed.

This was to be no quiet decade in America. On April the twenty-fourth, 1846, with bloodshed on the Rio Grande, there was war with Mexico. On the following December, Isaac E. spoke in defense of that war in which three of his first cousins were actively engaged. One of them, Edward F. Nicholls, being the first American to mount the walls of the Bishop's Palace at Monterey. This lad, although unscathed in battle, was later to meet his death by a fall from a horse in the course of his medical practice at Donaldsonville. In the war he and his brother Richard were lieu-

tenants in Captain Blanchard's Phoenix company, composed of picked men from the Louisiana troops. Their younger brother, Lawrence, was a member of Major Gally's battalion of artillery.

1848 -- the year the Mormons settled at the Great Salt Lake -- was also a busy one for Isaac E. Besides another speech in Congress in support of the President's policy in the Mexican War, and one on the "Territorial Bill", -- he was among the Congressional Committee of Twenty-eight, appointed to escort the remains of John Quincy Adams -- the Ex-President -- to its final resting place in Massachusetts. This, with the brilliant entertainment of the committee by the state of Massachusetts and the city of Boston, with banquets, luncheons, receptions and general tours, was not the gloomy journey it might have otherwise become.

In that year Isaac E. was a member of the Democratic convention which nominated General Cass for President. Isaac E. notes in his diary: "(It was) on my motion that the two-thirds rule was laid on the table, the only time since the adoption, by the convention, to defeat Martin Van Buren. It was on that occasion that I introduced a word (for the first time, I believe) taken from the sporting vocabulary, which has been generally adopted. I said, (in advocating my Resolution or Motion to lay the two-thirds rule on the table) that it had succeeded very well for once to beat Mr. Van Buren, who had come out on the eve of meeting of the Convention, against the Annexation of Texas, but as a general rule I was opposed to it; -- that its tendency was to defeat those whom the public mind had been fixed upon, and to bring in some other "out-sider". As I uttered this word in a loud voice, there was a tremendous cheer, and the gallery gave way a 'foot or so', and there was for a little while great consternation. The two-thirds rule was placed upon the table by an overwhelming vote. This, I have heard repeatedly denied, but the Journal and the members of the Convention will attest the fact."

In the peace between the United States and Mexico, February the second, 1848, the United States paid fifteen million dollars and secured the California region -- a region, incidentally, which Mexico, at any moment, stood at the point of losing to either England, France or Russia. This extensive territory was to form the later American states of California, Arizona, New Mexico, Nevada, Utah and a part of Colorado. President Polk was in favor of statehood for California, and a territorial government for New Mexico; and Isaac E. on March the fourteenth, 1850 spoke in support of the Administration.

"It is a pretty good speech", noted one of his Creole constituents, M. Pradhomme. A few months later Isaac E. was dispatched to Cuba, as bearer of confidential dispatches from the State Department. And, in that same year, he was elected an Honorary member of the Cliosophic Society of the College of New Jersey -- later Princeton University.

"The Compromise of 1850" was offered by Henry Clay in an effort to solve the then beginning seriousness of the slavery question. "No doubt", wrote Isaac E., "Mr. Clay and Mr. Webster both believed that it would give peace to the country, and forever settle the slavery question." Isaac E. continues: "Mr. Clay did me the honor to call and solicit my vote and aid on the side of the Union and the Constitution, as he believed his measure to be.... I was compelled with great reluctance to refuse my vote and feeble aid, telling Mr. Clay frankly that although I had no doubt that in 1850, as in 1820, he was actuated by the purest patriotism, that the permitting of Congress to touch the subject of slavery in the states at all, was a suicidal step for the South, and would certainly lead to the dissolution of the Union. I never heard," continues Isaac E., "of any compromise where a question of principle was involved, that one party did not abandon an important right. The attempt to control or interfere with the question of slavery in the states or the territories, was, in my humble opinion, a violation of the spirit of the constitution."

The United States Congress, during those years in which Isaac E. was a member, included a great number of outstanding notables, and of future men of destiny. Among those either in the Senate or the House, were John C. Calhoun, Henry Clay, Daniel Webster, John Quincy Adams, and many others. Two future presidents were also in attendance -- Abraham Lincoln and Andrew Johnson.

"The years, 1850-1852", he wrote, "will be marked as unlucky in the annals of American statesmen. In 1850, Clay and Webster followed to the grave the remains of Calhoun and Taylor. In 1852, like Fox and Pitt, to whom they have often been compared in life, they descended near the same time to the tomb. A distinguished military Captain, and President of the United States, and the three greatest of American Statesmen, who never rose to the office of President, but to whom that great office could add no greater fame, have in the short space of four years been called to reap the reward of their great public service." In July 1850, -- the impending death of President Zachary Taylor -- the first instance of a President dying while Congress was in session -- was announced,

The first part of the paper is devoted to a general discussion of the problem of the origin of life. It is shown that the problem is not only a scientific one, but also a philosophical one. The author discusses the various theories of the origin of life, and shows that the most plausible one is the theory of spontaneous generation. This theory is based on the fact that life is a complex of many different parts, and that these parts are all found in the same place, and at the same time.

The second part of the paper is devoted to a detailed discussion of the theory of spontaneous generation. The author shows that this theory is based on the fact that life is a complex of many different parts, and that these parts are all found in the same place, and at the same time. The author also shows that the theory of spontaneous generation is based on the fact that life is a complex of many different parts, and that these parts are all found in the same place, and at the same time. The author also shows that the theory of spontaneous generation is based on the fact that life is a complex of many different parts, and that these parts are all found in the same place, and at the same time. The author also shows that the theory of spontaneous generation is based on the fact that life is a complex of many different parts, and that these parts are all found in the same place, and at the same time.

The third part of the paper is devoted to a detailed discussion of the theory of spontaneous generation. The author shows that this theory is based on the fact that life is a complex of many different parts, and that these parts are all found in the same place, and at the same time. The author also shows that the theory of spontaneous generation is based on the fact that life is a complex of many different parts, and that these parts are all found in the same place, and at the same time. The author also shows that the theory of spontaneous generation is based on the fact that life is a complex of many different parts, and that these parts are all found in the same place, and at the same time.

The fourth part of the paper is devoted to a detailed discussion of the theory of spontaneous generation. The author shows that this theory is based on the fact that life is a complex of many different parts, and that these parts are all found in the same place, and at the same time. The author also shows that the theory of spontaneous generation is based on the fact that life is a complex of many different parts, and that these parts are all found in the same place, and at the same time. The author also shows that the theory of spontaneous generation is based on the fact that life is a complex of many different parts, and that these parts are all found in the same place, and at the same time.

while that body was in violent discussion of the conduct of one of President Taylor's cabinet. And the Chief Executive, it was said, was greatly mortified. Isaac E. rose and introduced a motion for adjournment. After the President's death, and at the resultant swearing in of Millard Fillmore -- the new President -- it was Isaac E.'s part to introduce to the Congress the Chief Justice of the Supreme Court. He was also one of the three appointed on the House Committee to wait on the new Executive.

Despite the fact that his Congressional district covered most of the western part of the state of Louisiana from the Gulf to the Sabine River, he was one of the few members of Congress who did not hesitate to bring with him to Washington, during the greater part of his services, his entire family. His wife Margaretta was always agreeable to these long journeys, and one of their children was born on a Mississippi steamboat while its parents were enroute to Washington. Their first dwelling was at the large boarding house at the corner of First and A. Streets, N.E., which during the later Civil war days was converted into the old Capitol prison. Still later, the site was chosen for a magnificent building to house the United States Supreme Court. At a time the family lived at Mrs. Wheaton's boarding house, on Third Street between Pennsylvania Avenue and C. Street; the same place where Aaron Burr frequently stopped just prior to his western expedition of 1805. These Congressional Boarding houses in Washington, some thirty in all, went by the name of "Messses", and there was a great deal of loyalty and unity among the members of the same Mess. * Isaac E. and his family eventually resided at a brick and frame dwelling on the northeast corner of North Capitol and C. Streets, known as "Bethel Cottage". This building was said to have been one of the first residences in Washington equipped with illuminating gas, and for a long time was one of the old landmarks of the city. Bethel Cottage, according to a newspaper account some decades later, and referring to it as a residence of the Morse family, had been built by Mr. Crutchett about 1830 and was described as one of the most desirable houses in Washington, commanding a magnificent view of the city and across the Potomac to the hills of Virginia. On entering a small wooden gate, one ascended a short flight of stairs, walled on either side with brick, which lead to a wide gallery supported with posts. On the one side was a large drawing room, adjoining which was a Conservatory stocked with many plants and flowers native to Louisiana, and which at the time were a rarity in Washington. Across the main hall was a spacious dining room, and a library. A large house, it

* See Appendix 104

comprised some twenty rooms, and the gardens occupied almost an entire city block. Isaac E. and his wife entertained to a great extent. Washington then was full of many most interesting personages. Among whom, was a close friend of Isaac E's mother, and the widow of Alexander Hamilton. "I had", writes Isaac E. "the pleasure of an intimate acquaintance while in Washington with this venerable and lovely female character. For more than eight months I resided under the same roof and scarcely a day passed that she did not entertain us with Revolutionary Stories. The daughter of General Schuyler, and the widow of Alexander Hamilton, an intimate of George Washington's family, she had perhaps more opportunity than any other individual to know the most distinguished persons of the Revolutionary War. With a quickness of perception and a remarkable discriminating mind, of an age to observe correctly, her reminiscences were among the agreeable recollections of my whole service in Congress. She had dined with every President of the United States from General Washington down to the present one, Franklin Pierce, and up almost to the day of her death, her memory was unimpaired. I used frequently to be astounded when referring to little instances of the Revolution, she would name the year and sometimes the month, and on several occasions I have taken the trouble to verify the date and I have invariably found her memory accurate. I recollect among others, that she told me of a visit of several weeks, which Dr. Franklin, Mr. Carroll, and I think Archbishop John Carroll, had made to her father's in the winter of 1775 or 1776. These gentlemen had been appointed a committee by the Continental Congress to go to Canada on the probability of inducing the Canadians to join with the Americans in their proposed scheme of independence. * The winter was so severe and the difficulties of traveling so great that it was impossible for these gentlemen to get any farther than her father's place, near Saratoga, New York. She was a young woman, nearly grown. Dr. Franklin taught her the game of chess, of which he was very fond, and played almost continually when not reading in the house. He, Dr. Franklin, was very systematic in everything and very regular in taking a certain amount of exercise (generally outdoors) if the weather would possibly admit of it. His habit when confined indoors was to go up and down stairs, counting the steps so as to give him the quantum of exercise which he deemed necessary to health. Mrs. Hamilton was in possession of a very valuable collection of letters from all the most distinguished men in America, and many of the most celebrated men in Europe, which I trust will some day be accessible to the public."

* See Appendix 105

Isaac E.'s mother lived with her son and daughter-in-law in Washington during the former's residence at Congress. Although some twenty years the junior of Mrs. Alexander Hamilton, Martha was a close friend, and as a token of friendship the widow of the distinguished founder of this nation presented her with a ring which was to remain a valued possession of her descendants.

There was no doubt that life in Washington was most pleasant: -- but, on the other hand, there were some drawbacks. Isaac E. related: "It is one of the strangest things in the world that men who are generally selected on account of their good sense should make such sacrifices as most men are required to do to remain in political life, and particularly at the seat of government in Washington. Unless a man happened to be a man of fortune, it is certain ruin in the pecuniary point of view. The pay and mileage of a member of Congress, will scarcely support a gentleman in Washington. Besides the loss of fortune, it frequently happens that the long absences will estrain him from his family and his children are allowed to grow up without the influence which a parent's presence and example ought to exert over those for whose welfare, he is, or should be, the best guardian. Why it is, is a question of difficult solution, but I think there can be no doubt of the fact that not one man in one hundred, voluntarily lays down an office in Washington, although his judgment tells him to do so. Some explanation is to be found in a more intellectual and high order than can be found in any city in America, perhaps in the world."

That his contention was true, at least as far as he was concerned, is borne out in part by the fact that in 1845, the Union Bank of New Orleans, by failure of Isaac E. to satisfy a mortgage, was obliged to sell much of his valuable real estate along Rampart Street. "Washington", he wrote "is a city where the conventionalities of life are carried to extremes....when one arrives, your cards are sent by a hackman to the President, members of the cabinet....and such persons as you may desire to know. In a few days you receive theirs in return, and so you exchange pasteboard visits for years. Of course, there are exceptions, and it is easy to find congenial people....I am speaking of the general rule."

Isaac E. and Margaretta were in time the parents of twelve children. When they first came to Washington, there were but four (one having died in infancy), and in 1852, the year Isaac's service in Congress ceased, there were no less than eight youngsters in the

family. Nevertheless, with several nurses, these children generally accompanied their parents on their journeys to and fro. The old primitive Mississippi River route had been superceded at an early date by the ocean voyage from New Orleans to Washington. In the Harlem plantation Log book, under date of June 10, 1848, it is recorded: "Mr. I. E. Morse arrived from Washington by the steamer 'Crescent City', 8 days from N. York -- but stopped one day at the Havannah". However, with the advent of better stage coach facilities on the Cumberland Road, and with the improvement in the long-distanced Mississippi river packets, the inland travel route came again into its own. These packets were "elegant to behold", and were described in their day as veritable floating palaces -- packed with entertainment, hilarity and music. And the trip and up the river to Wheeling, then in Virginia, was, in itself, a sort of vacation, during the ten or twelve days that the journey required. From Wheeling, on the Ohio, to the federal capitol at the "forks of the Potomac", no one seemed to object to the jolting clumsy stage-coaches as they climbed and swayed over the perilous mountain roads through Cumberland to Hagerstown and thence South through Frederick-town to Washington. A twenty-four hour journey in itself, interrupted only by stops for meals of ham and eggs, sausage and buckwheat cakes, and hot coffee, -- served from a bar by a drowsy negro attendant -- and unheated relay points, this road constituted nevertheless a part of what was perhaps one of the most important highways in American history.* Of course, one could ride on the railroads of this day if one had the time, or would risk the hazards of such a trip, but as a matter of fact in the south there were less than eight hundred miles of tracks and not until 1850 did somehow or another one ultimately find its way to New Orleans.

Washington, D.C. -- the Federal City -- at the time that Isaac E. and his family began their residency there had a population of about 25,000 people, of which 1713 were negro slaves. Between the Capitol -- which was then still unfinished and without wings -- and the President's House, as the White House was then called, was the populous section of the town. This highway, called Pennsylvania Avenue, was macadamized with fine flagged sidewalks on but one side. Beyond this Avenue the buildings of the town were in scattered clusters. The District (of Columbia) at that time included parts of both Maryland and Virginia, and on the Virginia side the laws of that state were still in force. And even on the Maryland side, the laws of that state, unless specifically modified over a repeal by Congress, were still the official law of the

* See Appendix 106

community. Despite its unfinished condition, the Capitol was regarded as the finest building in the United States, and in every way suitable. It was remarked that it was fitting "that the Representatives of the Sovereign People should be accommodated in a building which would do honor to Royalty and be worthy of the most august Legislative Assembly in the world."

Alexandria, then in the District of Columbia, was connected to the federal city by a substantial bridge -- on piles -- over a mile in length, across the Potomac. Two miles west of the federal city, was Georgetown, a city of itself and Port of Entry. Two bridges over Rock Creek -- and a line of horse-drawn omnibuses -- connected the Federal city with its older sister settlement, Georgetown. The great possibilities of railroad transportation were not dreamed of by most of the population, and the Chesapeake Canal -- then complete as far as Hancock, Maryland, -- was looked upon, when it should be completed, as a great step in traffic between the tide-water country, the rich lands beyond the mountains. It was considered that the fare or levy of twelve and a half cents to ride the omnibuses of Washington was excessive; and in 1850 this was reduced to a "fip", of $6\frac{1}{2}$ cents. Perhaps the hotel of most importance was the National Hotel at Pennsylvania Avenue and Sixth Street which had been opened by John Gadsby, formerly the tavern keeper of Alexandria. The Washington Monument was far from being finished. At that time the entire regular military establishment of the United States was less than 9,000 men. In the Navy there were five squadrons; the Home squadron, the Pacific squadron, the African squadron, the Mediterranean squadron, and the Brazil squadron. In all there were ten ships of the line, one razee, fifteen frigates, eleven first class vessels of war, eight gunfleets, two sloops for store ships, fourteen brigs and schooners, and several smaller vessels.

In the decade which began in 1840 the American people were beginning to seriously study themselves, their future and their possibilities. "The United States", according to the February edition of 1853 of Putnam's Monthly Magazine of Literature, Science, and Art, "are a league or confederation of thirty-one separate and independent republics". "The American", continues the article, "with some odd variations here and there, -- don't start -- is an Englishman, without his reserve, his fixed habits, his cant, or his solidity. He has all the independence of the original stock with its determination, and pluck, with quick and restless enterprise." It was estimated that by the next generation there would actually be as many as 100,000,000 people in the states.

In 1852 Isaac E. was defeated for re-election to Congress. According to the New Orleans "Delta", "he was regarded as invincible, until the recreancy of a certain branch of his own party caused his defeat, under circumstances which reflected more discredit upon them than upon him." That Isaac's interest in politics continued, however, is evident by the following letter from Pierre Soule, a Frenchman who had become involved in a conspiracy against the Bourbons and had escaped and settled in New Orleans:

"United State Senate,
Washington,
February the 1st, 1852.

"My good friend;

I am truly thankful for your letter of the twenty-third octomo. I had always had some intimations that the compromisers in our party began to see what game they had unconsciously perhaps, been engaged in. We should, I think, show ourselves generous. They have just received a severe lesson in the triumph of Benjamin over Downs; may they profit by it. The Union party in Congress is in its last agony. Those Foote's Resolutions which were devised to galvanize into new life some of our political curiosities (?) are destined to be the funeral inscription on the tomb of the dead. They have no chance, no prospect. We of the South have good care not to be committed to any political argument. We receive of course vindictities (?) of all the schemers who have a hand in the Presidential job; but we keep our mouths, and I hope our hearts, also sealed. With proper encouragement and with great discretion we may still be enabled to throw out our last or miserable weight into the scale. We will have to be consulted at least. Douglas is moving on fast; but some of his friends are fearful, and justly so, I think, that he may overdo himself. Cass is still full of hope and bids high for popular favor. The Butler combination assumes gigantic proportions and may cause us some trouble. Buchanan retains his strength and ascendancy among the old of the party, but seems to be utterly abandoned by the young democracy. Stockton's prosperity seems rather to loom imposing in the future. He may be the man for all I know. The North would certainly support him, and he is very active and has very influential friends in the North. Masey (?) is but the trait d'union between the Free Soilers and Butler. So it is said here by the knowing ones. Upon the whole there is not a political

seer living who could now discover what will be the exact position of the gentleman above named before the Baltimore Convention. Will you, our leaders, pick delegates as will ours, in sympathy with the state rights men here? In God's name see that we be not disappointed in that. Let them be our friends, if we wish to retain some influence and be enabled to secure to our wing of the party some share in the distribution of the federal favors. Your friends here, and they are a host, constantly ask me of you. They have much regretted your defeat, and seem now to enjoy the disappointment met with in some quarters. They will not forget you, but by none of them will you be remembered with more pleasure or served with greater devotion than by,

Pierre Soule."

"P.S. Many kind regards to your lady and to her lovely sister."

In that year, 1852, Isaac E. was offered the Governorship of Louisiana. He refused this honor, but did accept the nomination for Attorney General of the state, and served in that capacity from 1853 to 1856 -- "the best known citizen of the state", according to the Times-Picayune of that time. In that year he wrote to his three sons, aged eighteen, sixteen, and eleven, at school at Mt. St. Mary's College, Emmitsburg, Maryland: "I believe we are all in your debt for letters unanswered, but I assure you that my time has been very much taken up with the duties of my office, besides endeavoring to bring all the business of the year to a close with determination of the year 1853. I have to make a report to the Legislature at its meeting in January, giving an account of the entire business of the year, and to suggest such amendments and reforms in the laws as I deem necessary. The weather which has hitherto been very fine this fall has become cold and rainy, and I was so hoarse from the arguments of a case that I could not go to a grand military ball given on last evening by General Palfrey in honor of the night attack of the twenty-third of December, 1814, of the English by General Jackson. This, though not so well known generally, was the master stroke of General Jackson, and in my opinion, was the means of diverting the march of the British Army, until the decisive battle of the eighth of January, 1815. It has always been deemed a great and fatal mistake that General Pakenham did not march the next day upon the city, when in the opinion of many military men, it must have fallen. The interval between the 23rd of December and the eighth of January was

profitably used by General Jackson in cutting a ditch or canal from the river to the swamp, and throwing up a very slight breast-work from which our riflemen did such terrible execution. The story of the cotton bales was greatly exaggerated, only a few hundred were used and those near the road, and mostly as platforms to place the cannon on. When on the morning of the eighth it was seen how General Jackson had fortified his position, an old British Colonel, who had seen much service and whose courage was acknowledged, refused positively to lead his men but said he would endeavor to cover the retreat, for which he was tried, and only slightly (if at all) censured. General Pakenham was a very young man, not forty, and very daring and reckless. The command of the army was originally to have been given to his brother-in-law, the late Duke of Wellington, or Lord Hill, but from favoritism or some other cause, which I do not now recollect, this very rash young man had charge of this important expedition and the consequence was that some twelve or fourteen thousand of the best English troops were repulsed with great loss by some three or four thousand raw recruits, volunteers, and even some companies of colored men. General Palfrey was a very young man about Nathan's age and had volunteered. He is now in command of the Louisiana Legion, -- a splendid body of volunteer troops that annually celebrate both days, the twenty-third and the eighth. Your Grandfather Morse was also at the lines with his company of cavalry and your granduncle, Judge Nicholls was with his company of foot. This little sketch of the events of 1814-1815 will serve to awaken your feelings of patriotism and impress you with the beauty of that system of government which instead of confining the defense of altars and firesides to a hired army, relies with their entire confidence upon the militia and volunteers, who have shown themselves in the War of the Revolution, the War of 1812, and the late Mexican War, 'confidant against the world in arms'. But I hope we may never have another war, but in case of such an event, I hope I have three sons who believe that dulce sit pro pateris mori if necessary, or as McCauley says:

'For how can man die better
Than by facing fearful odds,
For the ashes of his fathers
And the temples of his gods.'

God bless you all and with a prayer and wish for your health and happiness, I wish you A Merry Christmas and A Happy New Year."

Compared with the decades that had gone before, journeys between New York, New Orleans, and Washington, were accomplished with comparative ease. New York was not an infrequent host to Isaac E. and his family. His first cousin, Elizabeth Marsh of Louisiana, had married William Libbey, a wealthy financier and merchant of New York, whose home, "Libbey Castle" was in the upper part of Manhattan Island, across from the Hudson Palisades. This magnificent estate occupied a location which in later years was to be the area about Fort Washington Drive, and 193rd Street. William Libbey was a man with a great interest in the education of the youth of the nation; and was said to have made gifts totaling over a half million dollars to the college at Princeton. Another popular rendezvous in New York was at Islip on Long Island. Here was the estate of Colonel John D. Johnson, a brother-in-law of Isaac E.'s wife, and one of the early members of the New York Yacht Club. The owner of many yachts, perhaps his most famous one was the "Wanderer". This vessel -- a painting of which hangs in the New York Yacht Club of today -- was a keel schooner, 104 feet over all, 95 feet on the water line, with a draught of about 11 feet. After Colonel Johnson had disposed of this vessel, it was eventually turned into a slave ship, served in the Navy of the Confederacy, used as a Federal Revenue cutter in Florida, later utilized for the cocoanut trade, and was finally wrecked off Cape Henry.

After Isaac E. returned from his services in Congress, he established himself at his home on Camp Street in New Orleans. This dwelling, old number 157, was immediately across the street from St. Patrick's Catholic Church, and about six squares from Canal Street. This was the popular residential section of the town of the day, and "the thirteen buildings" still standing on Julia Street, around the corner, are reminders of the old neighborhood. The dwelling was built by Isaac E.'s brother-in-law, Dr. Wederstrandt, and followed, in architecture, the theme of the Greek revival. There were the usual Corinthian columns, stuccoed brick, and iron railings. New Orleans, at the time, including the three Foubourgs did not extend up river more than twenty city squares from Canal Street.* Beyond that was the town of Lafayette -- the capitol of an adjoining parish, with its own court, market, and churches. Further out was Jefferson City. In 1852 Lafayette was merged with New Orleans.

In 1840 the first of a long line of foreign singers came

* See Appendix 107

to America. A German lass by the name of Fanny Elssler, under the management of P. T. Barnum, thrilled the audience in the old Emporium in New York. The eastern seaboard was now catching up with New Orleans in its appreciation of the theatre. Among the theatre-going public of America there were favorites, rivalry between different adherents of the actors, and much discussion of the merits of various ones. The stage was taken very seriously. "Among the English actors," wrote Isaac E., "Booth was always a great favorite with me, and next to Kean, I preferred him to anyone except MacCready in Hamlet."

It was customary for many of the New Orleans population to sail to New York to attend the operas and plays and witness the bright glamour that city was now offering. * The "New York Hotel" opened in 1844, and was especially popular with those from the south. Situated at the corner of Waverly Place and with its back to Washington Square, it was seldom that a Southerner would not meet up with some acquaintances from his native land. Perhaps it was the New Orleans influence that prompted the Astor House (massive structure of Quincy granite) to convert its courtyard into a sort of exchange or bar room on the plan of the New Orleans hotels. Jenny Lind, the Swedish soprano, toured America in 1850-52. Three years later Rachel, whose real name was Elizabeth Felix, and who had made an extraordinary success in Paris, followed the example set by Jenny Lind, and also came to a large American audience. "On the third of September, 1855", wrote Isaac E., "I witnessed the debut of Rachel in 'Camille' at the Metropolitan Theatre in New York.... I have always been remarkably fond of the theatre, and theatricals of all kinds.... I secured a front seat near the stage where I could see as well as hear.... Fortunately I understood the French language from living in New Orleans and could appreciate her most musical declamations but I recollect to have seen, night after night, persons who did not understand one word of the language, at the theatre, who assured me that they understood from her actions, expressions, and pantomime, everything about the play. Certainly we have never seen on the English stage in our time any like her. I do not speak of Mrs. Siddons (who had died in 1831) who, besides being an accomplished actress, was a most splendid looking woman -- if the description of De Montfort was intended for her. Rachel, like Kean, has nothing but her eyes, at all remarkable. She is of the most attenuated figure imaginable, and the wonder was how she continued to dispose of those long bony arms with so much grace. She stood on the stage as no actor that

* See Appendix 108

I have ever seen before; she walked more majestically, and the play of her fine Jewish features was magical. She did not come like Jenny Lind, heralded by her charities and virtues; she did not buy her praise; but she (Rachel) commanded it. When the audience inundated the stage with bouquets, she would not touch them nor permit any of the actors to take them. And the look of contempt which she would give at the American expression of applause, was admirable. As she is reported to have said, "Flowers and bouquets, etc., etc. are for dancers and singers, but were unworthy of the tragic muse." The truth is, she came to this country, after hearing of the extraordinary success of Jenny Lind, to make money, and she did not even take the trouble to conceal her motives - without reflecting that music is a language that everybody understands, and that the noble charities of Jenny Lind had made her a heroine, and not understanding that her brother Felix, was not a P. T. Barnum. It must have been evident to everybody but themselves that she was doomed to disappointment. New Orleans and Havannah are the only cities where she could hope to have an appreciative audience for more than one or two nights, and she refused to play in either place. But I had nothing to do with her mistakes or her disappointments. I may hope to see many Keans, many Jenny Linds, and Fanny Elsslers, but I despair of ever hearing such a reader, or seeing such an actress as Rachel."

Isaac E., as did so many, rarely missed an opportunity to attend the plays, in New Orleans or in New York. Edmund Kean, he felt, was the greatest actor of the day in America, and Isaac E. had seen him at the Park Theatre in New York, and in 1833 in London when he played his last act. He had also witnessed the last performance of Booth in New Orleans, when he played "Bertram", and left on the following day to die on his passage to Louisville.

In 1853, ex-President Millard Fillmore visited New Orleans. Mr. Fillmore had been "very polite" to Isaac E. and his family while they were in Washington, despite their political differences, and now to return some little portion of the genuine hospitality which he had dispensed so graciously from the Executive Mansion, he determined to give him a dinner. Among the guests, besides the ex-President, was Mr. John B. Kennedy, Mr. Arthur, Mr. Conrad, the Governor of Louisiana, two Justices of the Supreme Court, Colonel Grymes, and several members of the New Orleans Bar.

In the summer of that year one of the most severe yellow fever epidemics of New Orleans struck that city and took a dreadful toll. It is said that on one black Sunday of that epidemic

there was a death every five minutes. The whole country was stirred, and as in war times, casualty lists were printed in the press throughout the country. Although Isaac E. and his family were not in the city at that unhealthy season, nevertheless his old classmate at Cambridge, Oliver Wendell Holmes, anxiously wrote:

"....I am thankful to hear that you and yours, have been, so far, spared. I have often thought of you while we are hearing sad stories from New Orleans, with anxiety and apprehension lest I should see some of your names in those melancholy lists. It is hard for us who have been living amidst the wholesome mountains of the Berkshires, to realize the scenes through which you have been passing. I trust by this time you may have had what we receive without thinking it is a special blessing, namely, one of those frosts that seem to kill off the pestilence."

Two years later Oliver Wendell Holmes again wrote:

"I am very glad to hear from you anyway, anyhow, and for any reason. Hurrah for the boy seventeen and a half. My oldest is fourteen; says he is five feet, one inch and a half high. I think he stretches the truth and the measure a little. He is taller than his mother, anyhow; and can outrun, out-swim, and out-spatter me. A fair scholar, -- one of the best in his school, -- but loses some scholarship and gains what is a great deal better by passing five months in the country with the rest of us.

"Your direct to Boston! Don't you know that I am the landlord of a great farm up here in Berkshire County, -- a hundred and twenty years in my family, -- with a mile of river running through it, -- and a meadow big enough to feed all the bulls of Bashin. Don't you know that, hey? Because if you don't, I tell you it is so. Ask Judge Curtis, -- our old classmate, -- then, if it isn't. His house is in sight from my door, -- two miles, but as the bee flies.

"I don't doubt that I have told you already, word for word, just so, before (*n'epargnant pas un oignon*); perhaps twice before or oftener. Never mind. The great fact is: that I, with mine, enjoy the 'Opium cum Digitalis' as the retired 'potecary' called it, on our broad hereditary maternal acres, -- which, if

you will ever press with your feet, as I hope you may, I will give you draughts of sweet milk, with corn and honey; also a ride, a row, a swim; -- item, a glass of claret, or if you like it rather; -- The Foaming Grapes of Eastern France, -- as Tennyson has it:- 'And finish with a tranquil weed, and a crowd of pleasant reminiscences.'

"About commencement; Alas, and a lack a day! I know nothing except that I received a great card the other day from the President and Fellows, -- very clever Fellows, no doubt. But I can't and shan't go. I have not been down to the anniversaries for years. Pittsfield is one hundred and fifty miles from Boston, and I don't choose to leave my garrison exposed to the incursions of hostile tribes, until my oldest boy is five feet, two, at least.....

Yours very faithfully,
O. W. Holmes." *

Isaac E.'s mother, 73, died January 28, 1856.

It was on the fifteenth of April, 1856, that there had occurred a riot in Panama,* by which the lives of many American citizens were sacrificed and a vast amount of valuable property was destroyed by a mob, which, "if not instigated, was certainly not restrained by the New Granadian authorities". This atrocious outrage incited universal indignation, and the government of the United States was forced to consider whether it would not be obliged to assume a position of more direct and vigorous authority on the Isthmus. New Granada, not now in existence, controlled the Isthmus of Panama, and since has been divided into the Republics of Columbia and Panama. The President of the United States appointed Isaac E. special Commissioner and Minister to the Republic of New Granada. In December of that year, in conjunction with Mr. James B. Bowlin, resident Minister, they were furnished with a joint authority by Secretary of State Marcy to conduct an important negotiation with that government:

"The President is....unwilling to believe that the government of that Republic will persist in the attempt to impose high tonnage duties on American vessels visiting Granadian ports, or to burden our mails crossing the

* See Appendix 109

* See Appendix 110

Isthmus of Panama with a most exorbitant tax....you are therefore furnished with a project or a convention....it is not expected to secure any exclusive advantages for the United States...but...some special terms in relation to transportation of our mail, soldiers, sailors, and national property...and (secondly), the adjustment of sums to be paid by New Granada for the affair of the fifteenth of April....must not be less than \$400,000.... You will not fail to remind her that the route through Nicaragua is only temporarily embarrassed....it has its advantages over that of Panama in our intercourse with California and the territories of Oregon and Washington.... For the possession of the islands (Lamenco, Ilenao, Perico, and Culebra -- if Culebra be an island)....New Granada may reasonably expect compensation....the establishment of a naval depot on them by the United States will be a great advantage to Panama, and indeed to the whole Republic of New Granada...."

On this mission, Isaac E., sailed from New York on December the fifth, 1856, aboard the "Illinois", commanded by Captain Boggs, an old classmate. His duty required him to reside six weeks in Bogota. On arrival at the Isthmus he was obliged to travel by mule, across the Andes, some four hundred miles to Bogota. So rough were these mountain trails that large brass stirrups were essential to protect the feet from the rocks and top underbrush. In letters from Aspenwall (now Colon) Isaac describes portions of his daily life in that tropical clime, -- "Living in western land, with eastern luxury". "First", he writes, "we rise very early, and do what little is to be done before breakfast. I should have said, the first thing is to take a cup of coffee, a small gingerbread, and a banana from our gardens, which is the best tonic, -- much preferable to juleps or cocktails, et id omne genus. From daylight until ten o'clock, almost as much can be done, as in a whole day with the thermometer at ninety degrees. At ten o'clock we make a substantial breakfast, none of your ghostly tea and toast concerns as in England, but something real and substantial, combining the heavy artillery of Yankeedom, and the dejeunier a la fourchette of France, with delicious fruits of the tropics....I retire to my room, which is just nine paces exact measurement from the ocean, and listen to the deep billows of this Yankee-negro-Spanish shore....the Isthmus of Panama is a new and important consideration for our country, in a military point of view; and Cape Horn will soon become an obsolete idea.... today I propose to visit the "Wabash" and "Cyanne" now lying in our harbor. The sight of Uncle Sam's Stars and Stripes, and presence

of the officers and sailors in their uniforms is gratifying, and has a marvelous proper effect. As I heard an Englishman once say -- 'The only law of nations for the people of the East, was an English frigate well equipped' --. Tomorrow, I go to Panama and may remain there a day or two. The 'Independence' and the 'St. Mary' are both there, and if we had a good naval depot on the Pacific, the voyage around the Horn would become quite unnecessary."

Isaac E. pays a tribute to the excellent punch, made of native rum and sugar, and mentions the hospitality of Colonel R. M. Harrison who was the American Consul there for forty-eight years. Isaac E. was well pleased with the salute rendered him, as an American Minister, as he stepped aboard the 'U.S.S. Wabash'.

From Carthegna, the Consulate of the United States wrote him: "....Your trip to the 'Mosquiru' was a most expeditious one, and the Patrone was especially fortunate in reaching the Plaza de Honda. Nothing important on the coast. The Blockade by the British Squadron of all the New Granada ports will most probably not be enforced, as by postponing it until the action of Congress will be known, will give this body time to reflect and to invest the President with sufficient power to settle all the questions pending about the McIntosh claim. Mr. Fletcher, U. S. Consul at Aspenwall, I believe, has resigned."

Back in New Orleans, the latter part of that year, 1857, there was much activity in that quarter, as well as throughout the nation, by the so-called "Know-Nothing" party, which had for its tenets intolerance for all foreign-born citizens and Catholics. Isaac E., under the pen-name of "Attakapas", wrote numerous articles for the daily press attacking this organization, and attempted to show the public the unsoundness of the doctrines which they were preaching. * Back in New Orleans, Isaac E. returned to his much neglected practice of law.

George Washington had been dead now over half a century, and his beloved Mt. Vernon on the Potomac River was fast falling into neglect. In 1853 a patriotic young woman of South Carolina, Miss Ann Pamela Cunningham, conceived the idea of soliciting the people of the country for means to purchase this historical spot. In 1858 twenty-two vice-regents, one from each state, was appointed and Isaac E.'s wife, Margaretta, was the sixth of that list. * She, as vice-regent for Louisiana, appointed a lady in each parish

* See Appendix 111

* See Appendix 112

as agent who in turn was authorized to appoint another lady in each district, whose function it was to solicit money to meet the Association's contract with the Washington heirs, for the purchase and future preservation of the home and tomb of Washington. Although the mother of twelve children, Margaretta, gave unstintingly of her time and effort to the furtherance of this commendable project, and during the fourteen years in which she was connected with this noteworthy enterprise, was able to collect in Louisiana a total of some twenty thousand dollars. This, in conjunction with other moneys gathered throughout every county in the states of the Union, was responsible for the preservation of Mt. Vernon for the nation.

By her father's death in 1857, Isaac E.'s wife and her son Porter (heir of one of Margaretta's sisters) inherited a substantial share in the old "Harlem Plantation". * For many decades, however, Isaac E.'s family had spent many happy summers at the plantation, when not on their place at St. Martinsville, at the Camp Street residence in New Orleans, or in Washington. Despite her many duties and responsibilities Margaretta was able to spend many weeks with her father and helped to provide company for his lonesome last years. The old naval officer was wont to spend his time sitting on the balcony, overlooking the levee beyond, where he could observe and comment on the various crafts sailing up or down from the city. "His appetite, though good", noted Margaretta, "he indulges with great moderation: takes his brandy toddy, regularly at twelve o'clock. I mix it always myself for him, and take it to him, with a soda cracker; and read an hour or two each forenoon, and then in the evening again, to him. We are now going through Cooper's "Naval History"; to afresh, he says, his memory on dates and facts, before giving a biographical sketch of himself. Papa says that the details of the action between the 'Constellation' and the 'L'Insurgent' are not correctly stated by Cooper; -- and he has fought the battle several times over within the last few days, for Mr. Davidson's and my, benefit."

Mr. John Merriman Davidson, a young man from Baltimore, had been at the Plantation for some years for the purpose of acquiring knowledge pertaining to the conduction of a sugar plantation of his own. His title was somewhat as an "observer" on the plantation, and at the same time his presence added pleasure to the household. A sugar estate of this size, working over a hundred slaves, required considerable personnel. There was an engineer in

* See Appendix 113

charge of the sugar house, an overseer in charge of the slaves, an assistant overseer, a visiting physician, an agent in the city of New Orleans, and a resident manager over all. The livestock included almost a hundred mules, twenty to forty oxen, dozens of cows, horses, sheep, and goats. In addition to the sugar house -- a factory of 2 and 3 stories high -- there were some hundred slave quarters, blacksmith shop, cooper's shop, a hospital to accomodate eight or ten, a boat landing, and dwellings for the overseers and engineer. There was also a visiting clergyman, and a private burial grounds for the Master's family with a separate plot for the slaves. In the passing of time, a half century later, the old forgotten burial ground was encountered in digging foundations for a new structure in that region, and many of the coffins were re-interred in the graveyard of the old Catholic church at Point-a-la-Hache nearby. In 1849 there had been 125 slaves, 43 of whom were children.* Four slaves were generally kept busy rowing the members of the family and guests to and from neighboring plantations for their frequent visits to their neighbors. The work hands were always accorded good treatment, with holidays at Christmas and a sort of concession was granted them of raising corn which they sold to the plantation. According to the plantation log book the field hands were attired with striped ticking pantaloons with shirts of Virginia toweling and with palmetto or campachy hats. Despite the adequate hospital, the attending physician, and a full time nurse -- also a slave -- there were, from time to time, the usual deaths among a population of this sort. Lock-jaw, cholera, and yellow fever seem not to have been uncommon. The death of a slave was a matter of sincere regret and sorrow in the household. When Solomon Truehart died, the log-book notes: "a most faithful, good and honest man, an obedient servant, and so correct in his deportment as never, since his infancy, to have deserved or to have received any chastisement whatsoever; but few men in his situation in life, can be found to equal him in his good qualities; he is sincerely deplored." "Mary Scott", a "very good woman, honest, human and charitable, died of 'congested fever'." When John Coleman died after an attack of dysentery of a week's duration, it was noted "during which he relapsed several times, every exertion was made to save him but in vain; the disease would not yield to all the remedies that were applied." Not infrequently the ill or sick slave was sent by boat to the Charity Hospital in New Orleans to be under the care of Dr. Wederstrandt, one of the owners of the plantation, and the resident physician in that institution for over a dozen years. The dwelling house, or "Large House" as it was called, stood

* See Appendix 114

in a great yard in the midst of numerous orange trees, pecan trees and yellow locusts. Erected before 1825, it maintained the simplicity of the plantation houses of those days, and though it did not compare in size or stateliness to houses built in the forties and fifties, nevertheless it was a most comfortable establishment. Elevated about eight feet from the ground with large brick columns there was a gallery that ran three-fourths of the way around the house. Eight negro servants were required in the establishment; six women and two men. The women, Maria, Sillat, Nellie Paine and Ellen, were garbed in French madras and Merrimac calico. Patsy held sway in the kitchen, Little John was the butler, while William Wirt and Lucy, both children, were generally assigned the task of operating the large fan or attending to small errands.

The furniture, for a great part, had been brought originally from Maryland, and was used at the earlier plantation, "Magnolia Grove" just six miles from New Orleans, and the residence of the Wederstrandt family before they removed to Harlem. There were frequent visitors from New Orleans: Mr. George Lee, the Wilkinsons, Mr. Hurling, the Whartons, the Misses Nicholsons, Morgans, and Benjamins, and Mr. and Mrs. Kruttnits, were among the guests from time to time. It was not unusual for from twelve to eighteen people to sit down to dinner, and often in the afternoon or evening a crew of three or four slaves would row the guests and members of the family up or across the Mississippi River to neighboring plantations. A popular visit was to "Belle Chase", the home of Judge Benjamin. A "fourth of July" dinner was duly celebrated with "a number of ladies and gentlemen; a large company assembled at dinner and remained, most of them, all night; great illumination and much dancing to a very late hour; music said to be excellent. Some of the company retired next day, and some remained longer." At least a week was a usual visit. Perhaps the most notable guest was General Cadwalader, and his military staff, who visited here in the latter part of April on his way back from the Mexican War. The large wine cellar with Madeira, champagne and claret (twenty-five cases ordered at a time), was always kept well stocked. Margaretta and Isaac E. shared the ownership of this plantation with her sisters and brother. One of her sisters, the wife of Dr. Pierre Caveilly Boyer resided in New Orleans but frequently visited the plantation. Another sister spent most of her time on her estate on Long Island; another, the wife of John Weatherburn Smith usually stayed in New Orleans where, her husband, it was said, knew "almost everyone" in the Crescent City, and was not infrequently called upon to act as master of ceremonies at

large official receptions, one of which was that given in honor of Henry Clay at the St. Charles Hotel on the occasion of the latter's visit to that city.

Margaretta's only brother, Dr. John C. P. Wederstrandt, was seldom on the plantation. He had spent many years in Paris and London and for a number of years was the resident surgeon at the Charity Hospital, and Professor of Anatomy at the University. Nevertheless they all met at the plantation on many occasions at which time the dwelling was often taxed for space. Although the usual method of traveling was by boat, often they would drive up to the city, along the levee road, past the plantations of the Toutant-Beauregards, the Villeres, and the LaCostes. Not infrequently they would break their journey by visits for tea or dinner at the Lestrappes' or at the magnificent estate called "La Ronde", the home of the Janin family.

The educational facilities of a plantation were always difficult to maintain. M. Debouchel was tutor to many children in that neighborhood, but when Margaretta became old enough she had attended the academy of Madame Moissille Valtaubert in New Orleans. "Harlem" as a sugar plantation ultimately of over 1400 acres, yielded a crop often as high as \$24,000. There were, however, in Louisiana, much more extensive and productive sugar plantations, and the Grevemberg plantation "Albania" in the Attakapas, and "Belle Grove", the Andrews' estate, often had annual sugar crops of over \$90,000.00 each.

Chapter VII. PORTER AND THE BIRTH OF A NATION

"What then remains?
The strength that Fate itself distains:
The soul to Fortune's worst resigned;
Th' unconquered heart, and equal mind."

- De Vere,; from Horace.

Porter, christened Alexander Porter Morse -- in that ancient Roman Catholic Church in St. Martinsville, -- was the eighth generation in America, and in 1855 was thirteen years of age; at the time a student with his two older brothers, Nathan and Malcolm, at St. Mary's College in Emmittsburg, Maryland; and the author of the following letter to his father in New Orleans: "I now take the pen in my hands to inform you how unjustly I have been punished. Last night being Good Friday, we had to go up to the Church, at about nine o'clock, and coming down the hill, being very dark, some few boys threw stones at the Prefect, and today the Prefect punished about sixty boys, and I am among the punished.... I did not throw a single stone the whole time.... I would not tell a lie for these old prefects up here, for they are not worth telling lies for. Anyhow this college is the meanest one in the world for unjust punishment. You know very well yourself how an unjust punishment will sting a boy. Please see into this matter is my earnest request. If I had done it....I would go and tell....as I have often done. I hope you intend to this affair punctually....Malcolm and Nathan unite with me in love to you all."

Following the footsteps of their parent, the three sons, after early schooling in Louisiana, had been sent for their education where they might partake of that intangible something, so valuable in after life, that the rugged mountains seem to impart to those who live in their midst. And Emmittsburg, Maryland, was not far from the old "Cumberland" road, part of the river route of his parents on their journeys to and from the North.

Porter, through his mother, was descended from many of the early Maryland families, such as the Darnalls, Brookes, Blakes, and Captain James Neale of Woolston Manor -- whose Catholicity had prevailed in so many of their offspring, against the then less dominant protestantism of the Lloyds, and Orricks and others of the same province not to mention the Morse background of Puritanism. *(See Appendix 115).

To those youngsters from the deep South, winter in the Maryland mountains, while invigorating, was none the less rigid, in the half-heated school buildings of the period. "The weather has, during the last two days been pretty cold," writes Nathan, "but thanks to the habits we have lately acquired of washing ourselves to the middle every morning, we do not feel the cold." Isaac and Margaretta came up for Nathan's and Malcolm's graduation in 1855, "We have engaged the rooms at Mrs. Shorb's", Nathan wrote, "and the text of my (graduation) speech is 'Society in the South', but my real subject will be slavery -- of course a defense of it....give a kiss to my little sisters and remember me kindly to the servants." The parents at New Orleans, "secured berths" in the ladies cabin (to be out of the way of snags)....for St. Louis, and....the Cairo railroad to Frederick, Maryland, and stopped at Clairvaux", where they were in close proximity to the school, and which was their usual residence when visiting their sons.

In July of 1858, it was decided that Porter was to attend Georgetown College in Washington, where his grandfather Wederstrandt had been one of the two first students matriculated at that Jesuit institution on the banks of the Potomac. His mother, in Washington, with some of her children, attended the college commencement. "I feel highly gratified", she wrote to her husband in New Orleans, "at the exercises at the college -- the whole tone of the institution is far ahead of Mt. St. Mary's. I know it was not, two or three years ago -- but it is now decidedly and universally conceded to be so -- Mr. McGuire has elevated the tone. The three hundred young men as a class, their appearance, manners and compositions all indicate great superiority over any exhibition of the kind I have ever seen anywhere. And such a spirit of patriotism seems to be especially inculcated. Porter is not as enthusiastic as I am, he admits freely the superior advantages of the institution, the excellence and refinement of the professors, but he says: he understands the boys are very high-toned, very aristocratic, and exclusive, many scholars not being acquainted with each other. I feel very proud of the manner in which Beverly Kennedy acquitted himself -- his speech was on 'Socialism', very well delivered.... Mrs. Slidell and Mathilda were sitting near me....all Louisiana boys gave a good account of themselves....Louisa Murdock and her two daughters (of the 'Cedars'; later the Western High School), were especially kind, urging Porter to make their home his home -- that besides their carriage horses, they had three riding horses and whenever permitted to leave the college he must come directly to them....just as we had finished our tea, Judge and Mrs. Merrick

came in to spend the evening with us....at three, we take an early dinner (where we are staying) -- five is the hour of the house -- to accommodate Mr. Hulseman, the Austrian; Mr. Moline, the Porto Rican; and a young Baron (Von something), a nervous young man with very light hair and a moustache, the secretary to the Russian legation; they, with Captain Palmer are all the inmates of this housewe leave here before five o'clock for Baltimore (to avoid the Seventh Regiment of New York Volunteers, who are just returning from escorting the remains of Mr. Monroe to Virginia)." But Porter although fully outfitted with the requisite articles becoming a new student - including "a silver spoon and fork", and the "black frock coat, white pantaloons and vest" - did not become a student at that time in Georgetown. The independence of youth was in his blood.

The College of New Jersey had always been a favorite one for the young men of the South. Porter, not quite sixteen years of age, having said goodbye to his mother and sisters in Washington, made a quick resolution of 'rebellion', took the "cars" north, alighted from the Camden and Amboy Railroad near the little New Jersey hamlet, drove down Mercer and Nassau Streets, and admitted himself as one of the fifty-four members of the class of 1862 at the college in Princeton. * Peter's parents readily acquiesced with this show of independence. Here, at Princeton with Dudley Avery from Louisiana, and other Louisiana boys -- as well as his cousins, the Halsteads, at Newark, and his relatives in Elizabethtowne, he was by no means a total stranger in a distant land. His cousin, Sidney Morse Abbey, of Louisiana, as well as his father's friend, Charles Luzenberg's son, had graduated from this college but two or three years before -- and almost half of the student body were at the time from the South. The faculty was headed by Dr. John MacLean, "the best loved man in America". Porter found comfortable and congenial quarters in "McVeigh's" on the college side of Nassau street, west of the President's house, one of the private houses of the village offering rooms to students. * Among his house-mates were Pinckney Huger of Maryland, McCullough of Maryland, Field of New Jersey, Butler of Mississippi, and James Dundas Lippincott of Pennsylvania.

Fencing and cricket*(and especially the former) were the usual means of exercise for the students, and a new game called "baseball" was just beginning to be introduced. Trenton and Philadelphia were the destinations of those bent on a week-end away from the village, although there was plenty of social activity

* See Appendix 116

* See Appendix 117

* See Appendix 118

in the small town itself. During vacations -- two a year, and but six weeks each -- all students were expected to remain in the near vicinity of the college, and Porter spent many a happy week at "Hillside" on the Passaic river a mile above Newark, the home of General Nathaniel Halstead -- whose wife was a first cousin of Isaac E.'s; or with his uncle, Colonel John D. Johnson, at Islip, Long Island where the fishing and sailing at "Old Domineys" off Fire Island was great sport. The students of the day had at least two publications: "The Nassau Literary Magazine", and a less serious sheet called "Paul Pry", and in the first edition of that latter sheet, Porter and McCullough, in memory no doubt of some escapade known only to themselves or to their group, subscribed the following nonsense:

"Oh, Sangaree the lovely, Oh Sangaree the fair,
Don't eat up all the molasses, or you'll find yourself a bear."

Altogether it was a life of pleasant activities, and of memories that would endure: the stereoscopic view of Porter's quarters, typical, no doubt, of them all, showed walls decorated with prints of race horses, and a tapestry covered table completely concealed and on top of which were crowded almost beyond endurance, boxing gloves, foils, and fencing masks. "Synchronous (according to Porter) with the celebration in the city of New York and in Princeton, of the successful laying and operation of the Atlantic cable, (and) in commemoration of this achievement of mechanical and scientific skill on the part of American and English genius and talent....Princeton indulged in very rare and unusual pyrotechnic displays. The sound of the exploding skyrockets was a new sensation....local imitations on the campus, (well antedating the war)was the origin of the famous skyrocket cheer of the university. While there was no formal adaptation of this college cheer....it was consecrated during the 'Noctes Ambrosianae' of the 'McVeigh group', who contributed something to the history of the college between the years 1858 and 1861, -- not found in the ordinary chronicles. I include in this group, not only the princely fellows who lodged at McVeigh's, but also many of their boon companions whose rooms were in "Old North" or "East" or "West" college, -- and who occasionally participated in the literary and musical exercises in the big brick building, which was not always announced in the college curriculum. Which, by the way was a much simpler order than that which prevailed later. I recall the 'Old Grey Horse', an ever popular melody with a banjo accompaniment of considerable verve." In his junior year Porter was named one of the four orators for Whig Hall, -- one of the two debating societies

of the college -- and around which, and its rival Hall -- Clio -- revolved much of the interest of the students at the time in our history when speeches and orations were of such importance and were featured to such an extent in public life.

At home in New Orleans, as well as in Princeton, as late as the summer of 1860, there was apparently little thought of the dire years to follow. Porter's two brothers were now not too actively engaged, one as an attorney in New Orleans and the other a physician some miles up the river; the sisters were all off at boarding school. As a result, Porter's mother was a frequent traveller, now in New Jersey, then in Long Island or in Washington, in New Orleans, and elsewhere. Writing about that time to her daughters: "Your father left on Saturday for Attakapas....spent one day in St. Martinsville, where he was most enthusiastically received. He spent two days at Orange Island fishing and amusing himself. All the gentlemen of the neighborhood formed a party and went out with him to make his time pass pleasantly. They left New Iberia at sunrise on Friday morning, and at the same Saturday, he went on shore at 'Chatham Plantation', ninety miles above New Orleans to see Malcolm....your father surprised Malcolm; the servant man was standing by his bedside with a cup of hot coffee, which is always brought to him at five o'clock before he arises; that being the universal custom in the country....your father dined at the Claiborne Plantation with old Mr. and Mrs. Thompson, and the two Mr. Montgomerys." On July the eighth, 1860, with a letter headed "New Orleans, Sunday afternoon about vesper hour", Porter's mother relates the gossip of the hour to her children away at school and college: "Yesterday I received two letters from your dear father and May, both written on Tuesday last, the third, giving me the particulars of their trip down to Baltimore, -- of the spark from the locomotive setting fire to May's cape, -- that cousin Ann was expected back from Islip, Long Island -- which implies a very hurried visit to New York and back for her to take, and most fatiguing at this excessively hot season. Your father had not determined whether he should take a little run on to see the "Great Eastern". Nathan left us last night for the Virginia Springs. I made Butler go to the depot to bring me word if he met with any acquaintances going on. Nathan sent me word that Mr. Charles Koch, Mr. J. P. Benjamin, the Senator and lawyer, and Mr. Lea, with the black patch on his nose, were on the train. Nathan will be at the Montgomery White Springs where the Andrews were to wait for him. He was to spend there three or four days with them -- then go on to the White Sulphur Springs where Mr. Shiff was to leave the ladies under Nathan's care while he went on

to Manhattanville for Kate. Nathan expected to spend two weeks at the White Sulphur -- I don't think he will leave there under three or four weeks, then go on and spend a week at Mr. Halstead's with Porter, see the "Great Eastern", pay a visit of a fortnight at Islip, and then retrace his steps homeward.I disliked going to the plantation until I should see him off. Teeney is to come up in the carriage before sunrise Tuesday morning and I will go down in the evening -- taking Butler with me for the summer. Nancy will go down on the boat Saturday, to do our washing -- she will take her baby with her. Mrs. Shaw has observed that Nathan could not fail to be one of the most distinguished beaux at the Springs and a general favorite. The Shaws go over to Pass Christian for the summer, this coming week. I received a pressing note from Penelope Andrews to go right up to 'Belle Grove Plantation'."

And again on August the twelfth, 1860, with the heading:

"Sunday evening, alone,
Sitting in the parlor,
Looking out upon the
peaceful landscape
all around.

"....Your father, Nursey, May, Helen, C., and Grace Lea (quite a carriageful) have driven off -- to take a pleasant ride. They are going up to 'Belle Chase' plantation to regale themselves on cantaloupe and watermelon....Lucy, the housekeeper, is always glad to see them, particularly as they invariably leave her a liberal 'douceux' in the shape of a little silver, which seems to be always acceptable at all times, and in every clime....Porter was there too, but will be, tomorrow, back at Princeton....Nathan I presume is there now....your father is beginning to scold about Nathan's protracted absence from his law office, and says that after having enjoyed three winters as a fashionable beaux, and this summer at the Springs, that he is to give up next winter's Operas, Balls, and Receptions, and devote himself exclusively to his profession *....I hope he will apply himself with the same assiduity to the practice of his profession, that Malcolm does to his....Malcolm has almost made up his mind to rent a very nice house, built especially for Dr. Achilles Signe when he married Miss Minor one of the coast heiresses. It is not more than one mile from 'Belle Grove' plantation, has some of the loftiest pecans and handsome live oak trees about the premises I have ever seen, all

* See Appendix 119

regularly planted. The house is built on brick columns, eight feet from the ground, and about the size and appearance of ours at 'Locust Lawn'. His household this winter is to consist of Nursey and Willie Colbert, the former as his housekeeper -- to prevent the establishment from degenerating into a bachelor's hall -- Mammy Courtney to cook and wash for him, and Butler to take care of his horses, buggies, and man of all work. I went up to the city on Tuesday last to meet your father and Malcolm and to talk over his plans about the house, if he takes it. Cousin Becky and I have selected a very genteel outfit of parlor, dining room, and two bedrooms of furniture, a very handsome satinwood hatrack, a settee, and two hall chairs to correspond, a mahogany sideboard with white marble slab cover, extension dinner table, one dozen heavy mahogany and mohair parlor chairs. Teeney and I selected the silver waiter, tea pot, urn, castors, and green and gold tea set which he is to use when the young ladies come down to take tea with him."

In 1860, the Prince of Wales -- later King Edward VII, visited America. One of the entertainments given for this distinguished guest of the nation was the "Diamond Ball" at the Academy of Music in New York. Porter's sister writes: "I suppose that the New Yorkers must be pretty exhausted after the Prince's Ball, last night. Aunt Helen was there, in velvet, lace and diamonds. We are all on the tiptoe of expectation to hear her account of the Prince's -- or rather the Baron's Ball, the Prince of Wales travels by the name of Baron Renfrew."

In 1860 the Constitution that provided for a more perfect Union of the thirteen American States, was just seventy-three years old. In it the people of the Union were recognized as citizens of the State in which they lived, and slavery was guaranteed. While the Union of 1789 was more perfect than that under which the States functioned following 1776 when they declared themselves separate independent States, yet there was by no means a complete cementation of the "nation". The question as to whether any one or more of the States had a right to leave the Union -- if they so wished -- was generally accepted as in the affirmative. In the absence of any common arbitrator, it was felt that each state had the right to construe the Constitution for itself. Several New England States had indeed already considered separation from the Union and had felt justified that they were well within their rights.* To many of the older school of Americans, the fact was

* See Appendix 120

hardly a debatable one. That the Union was desirable, however, was of course strongly declared by practically all parties.

In course of time, the "old North", with the hum of the mill and the factory as a swan song, had passed away -- bloodlessly and quietly -- and the numerous newcomers that flocked to their shores, trained in the Old World school of authority, had come to look upon the American States as a closely joined-together concern. To them, "secession" was indeed rebellion. In the South, the older American tradition persisted for well over a half century after it had begun to be forgotten in the North, -- and indeed many people from the North, migrating southward in the courses of the decades, had carried with them the old "American way" of thought in regard to slavery and the "Union"; as they had also carried with them many old English traditions, words and phrases -- almost forgotten in the northern areas. Throughout the South both in the tidewater and in the mountains, such old English words, transported originally to New England, as 'tote' for carry, 'hit', the neutral it, 'niger' for negar, and 'reckon' for guess, still survived. The old New England and New Jersey "ordinarys", "plantations", and "planters" persisted in the Southland. Even the phrase "you-all", and the frequent use of the word "Sir", commonly considered a purely Southern way of speech had been used by Queen Elizabeth herself and was transported overseas by the English colonists who came to New England. The treatment of the negro slaves in the South was never harsher than were those massacres and burnings which took place in the early days in New Jersey and New York; and the old slave market at the end of Wall Street in New York was no sweeter or virtuous than many another in the southern area. There was indeed a wide deviation in culture that was becoming clearly apparent between the two types of people in the two sections of the Union; and the Louisiana delta -- although as much Latin as "Southern" -- was bound by tradition, economics, and blood, with the adjoining southern communities.

The South had come to depend entirely on slave labor for its living (due to the ingenuity of Eli Whitney, a Northern man) so that at the time the sectional dispute on slavery came to a head, the South was not yet ripe for wholesale emancipation of the negroes, and they were deeply enraged indeed by some of the insidious and impertinent propaganda that emanated from certain quarters north of the Mason-Dixon line. The South felt that they had built up a great civilization, which was more important to the country as a whole, than the immediate freeing of the blacks, which they argued, would make this negro population scarcely, if any, better off

than the drudges which worked in the factories and mills of New England. And they still spelled state with a capital "S". In subscribing to the Constitution, several of the States had reserved the right of the people to reassume those powers granted -- for the time being -- to the Federal Government, whenever it should become necessary for their happiness. However, many of the best minds of the South - while fully convinced that secession was an inherent right under the Constitution, nevertheless felt that such a step would be suicidal: would not help their situation: and under no circumstances should be seriously thought of.

Such men as Robert E. Lee of Virginia, James Lewis Petigou of South Carolina, and Pierre Soule of Louisiana, felt much the same, as did Porter's father, Isaac E., and many another substantial citizen of New Orleans and the South. Isaac E., in 1860, as the war clouds were gathering, addressed many meetings, urging all to seriously consider their course. In December of that year, under the title of "National Democracy and the Crisis", he urged a Convention of the whole south, before any act of secession -- as a measure -- be advocated. "We can see no cause for the dissolution of the Union", he spoke, "since the election of Lincoln, which did not exist before that election, when all parties declared through their electoral candidates, their speakers, and their press, that the election of Lincoln would not be cause for disunion." Always a conscientious believer in the States Rights doctrine of the older school; and a life long Democrat, when the impending conflict was precipitated, he stood for the integrity of the Union -- and urgently and earnestly, with voice and with vote, opposed the secession of Louisiana -- warning his fellow citizens of dangers and disasters that inevitably would follow such ill advised and precipitated action. He was totally opposed to the scheme of Yancy, Slidell, Cobb, Tombs, Jefferson Davis, and Governor Moore of Louisiana. In a letter addressed four years later to Honorable Harvey McKee Watterson, a lawyer and member of Congress in the forties, and father of Henry Watterson of Louisville, Kentucky, in regard to the state of affairs in Louisiana in 1861, Isaac E. wrote: "Perhaps it may not be known to you, that our state was so equally divided on the question of secession, that many bets on the results have never been claimed or decided. The Convention refused to publish the popular vote, and though the Ordinance of Secession was passed by a large vote in that body, it is no indication of popular sentiment." In a letter from Isaac's wife to one of their children, dated December the sixteenth, 1860, and written on the back of another letter: "This is a note from old Dr. Mercer, the millionaire on Canal Street with whom you are

acquainted by reputation -- the paper he was requested to sign, was an invitation to Governor Morehead of Kentucky, an ex-member of Congress, who is known to be in favor of perpetuity of the Union, to address a Union meeting to be held here this week, to be presided over by Honorable Isaac E. Morse, -- your father dined yesterday as invited, at Dr. Mercer's. Randall Hunt, his brother Judge Hunt, Colonel Seymour, of the "Bulletin", and Colonel Cocke, an officer of the United States Army who was in command of Fort Moultrie, South Carolina at the time of the nullification trouble in 1831 under General Jackson's administration, were the gentlemen invited to meet your father. He represents the dinner passed off pleasantly, and the consequent conversation, an intellectual treat of a high order. We still hope, although almost against hope, that 'the cloud with a sable rim' may be uplifted and depart."

In the gradual evolution of any society, each generation must stand face to face with issues as they arise and must make decisions according to their best judgment. The developments that led to a great war between the American states was no exception. It was no less a revolution in American life, than was the war of 1776. The two conflicts indeed are rather comparable; in both cases they were revolts against a central domination; and in both instances the American people split roughly into three parts. There were those against revolution, those for it, and a third neutral group. While in 1776 those groups against revolution were confined, for the most part, to New York, New Jersey and the South; in the "Revolution of 1861" those for the revolt were for the main part in the South. There were, however, many in the North who were entirely sympathetic with the Secession movement. The Journal of Commerce, a weekly paper in New York, advocated the recognition of the seceding states and felt that the acceptance of the new Southern Confederacy would promote harmony throughout the entire country. Abraham Lincoln, in a speech in Congress in January of 1848 had said, "Any people anywhere, being inclined and having the power, have a right to rise up and shake off the existing government and form a new one which suits them better. This is a most valuable, a most sacred right, a right which we hope and believe is to liberate the world." Isaac E. knew, as the leaders of the movement should have known, that despite the emotionalism and deprecations of the Abolitionists in the North, each Southern state was actually safe from their onslaught; he knew that the billions of dollars invested in slaves could not be touched under the Constitution. And he felt, despite the friendliness of England, that Secession would eventually result in ruin in the South. He perhaps visualized very correctly the future that might await them

should they secede, when in the summer of 1860 with his friend Mr. Finlay, he stood helplessly at the base of the Clay monument in New Orleans from eleven at night until three in the morning watching a disastrous fire which raged nine hours, and in which the entire square in Royal Street from Custom House Street to Bienville Street, on both sides were burnt down. But, Isaac E. could scarcely have known that for some unknown reason this was the midst of a great war decade which would rage for fourteen years among the Christian nations of the World, for in that short space of time there were to be wars in the Crimea, Germany, Italy, Schleswig, Holstein, and Mexico; as well as in America and almost two million men were to perish.

When, on April 12, 1861, General Beauregard fired the shot at Fort Sumpter, he changed the life policies of a great people. The old question as to whether the "States", or the ever-increasing central power at Washington, were to dominate was finally to be decided. More than half of the states of the Union, north and west, threw in their lot with the Federal power. On January 26, 1861, the official count showed that Louisiana had seceded from the Union. For six weeks she existed as an independent Republic, guaranteeing free passage on the Mississippi, and flying its own sovereign flag. This had thirteen stripes, four blue, six white, and three red, commencing at the top. At the upper mast side, was a union of red with its sides equal to the width of seven stripes, and in its center was the single pale yellow five pointed star. Louisiana soon joined her sister states in the new Confederacy.

In the latter part of April, 1861, Isaac E., received one of his last letters from his old classmate, Oliver Wendell Holmes;

"My dear Morse,

Your letter came most opportunably, for I had been for some time thinking that I would write you a few lines, at least, at my first leisure moments. Your letter (to one of the boys) was read at the last class meeting, and called out many expressions of kind feelings toward you. I think I promised then that I would write and tell you how kindly you are always remembered among us. Here we are under two different flags. I do not see that this has anything to do with our personal relations; at any rate it is no question of political differences that

can alienate us here from our old comrades and friends. In point of fact, until within the last few days there has been comparatively little excitement here amongst us. The firing on Fort Sumpter, and its reported surrender, which has just come to us, are beginning to wake up our people. I do not think that there is anything like that hostility to the South, which, no doubt, is honestly supposed to exist by many of our compatriots. The violent Abolition Party does not at all represent our Northern sentiment; yet our democratic, and part at least of our Bell and Everett press, are always trying to make the South believe it.

"We all look upon the Southern movement very much as Mr. Rhett does, as: not An Event of A Day, not anything produced by Mr. Lincoln's election or by the non-execution of the fugitive slave law, -- but as a matter that has been gathering head for thirty years. That is the way he sees it, and that is the way we do. The plain truth is, our civilizations have been diverging, and the old Constitutional joints have worked loose. The slave system and the free labor system have each come to a consciousness of the differences they have, as the nation has grown. I am afraid our difficulties are not functional but organic. You may be right; certainly, your position seems forced upon you by nature; but unfortunately, as one of the most accomplished ladies of the South wrote the other day, to one of our classmates, -- civilization is against you.

"I was exposed to bitter abuse, a few years since, in New York, for reprobating the unkind feelings and language too often used among us towards our brothers of the South. I have never learned to approve the spirit of the language which I then reprobated.

"But now that the national property is appropriated, and the national flag assailed, the necessity seems to be forced upon the government to measure men and money for a while, with those it is necessarily bound to consider as the conspirators.

To make the duty of the government perfectly plain, nothing more was necessary than that the Capitol should be menaced; henceforth you will find the North a unit. It is a great grief to all good men, on both sides, that they may be called upon to spill the blood of those who were their brothers; but there are principles which can only make themselves recognized by trying the souls of their advocates. I have so much confidence in your honesty of purpose, that I know you will join in saying -- "God speed the right" -- however we may differ in its interpretation. At any rate, if any of the "boys of 1829" ever meet under hostile banners, I know we should come out like Glacus and Diomed between the Greek and Trojan Armies and exchange arms, -- as did those doughty warriors -- instead of fighting each other.

"Up to this time, there has been nothing to show a visitor to Boston that there was any cause interfering with the usual prosperous order of things. TOMORROW, the Regiments called out by the Governor are to be mustered on the Commons; and then for the first time, our people will begin to realize the great fact, that has reached them so slowly. Sooner or later, after thousands of lives and millions of money have been spent, we shall learn, as England and Scotland have learned, that we must live together in peace in some amicable relations.

"But is not suffering a part of the discipline of nations, as much as of individuals? An old lady said long ago, 'We want a war here in the North: we have been at peace too long.' No doubt, we of the North, have become too much what Napoleon called England, -- a nation of shopkeepers; too rich, and many of us too lazy and selfish. If it could but have been a foreign enemy against which the steady North and the fiery South, could have waved sabers, and charged bayonets side by side. But I think the South is deceived in thinking that our commercial habits have in any essential point changed our old manhood.

"Let us talk about pleasanter matters. My boy
(authors note: later Chief Justice Holmes, United

States Supreme Court) is six feet high within a fraction of an inch, if not quite that. Rather a slight, good-looking, gentlemanly lad, strong on philosophy and art, pretty social; belongs to all imaginable societies: Porcellian, Hasty Pudding, etc. and is one of the editors of the Press Harvard magazine; took the prize for the best essay in the "University Quarterly", (open to all colleges in the country), does not write much poetry, but chosen class poet almost without opposition. I will make him send you something of com-posit-ion. I don't think his poem will be printed; it is not usual to do so.

"Hoping that nothing need ever change our old friendship, and that we may live to see peace between our States once more, I am,

Always your friend,

O. W. Holmes".

But when this letter reached the New Orleans residence of his classmate, James Ryder Randall, at Pointe Coupes, in Louisiana, was writing "Maryland, My Maryland", the marching song of a new American Confederacy.

In the luxuriously appointed physician's office, near the Mississippi River; and amidst the rows of books in a New Orleans law office; -- and under the elms at Nassau Hall: -- three young men pondered. Overshadowing the political theories of the government, or the right of minority, or the interpretations of the American Constitution, they heard again, the now distant lines of an eight year old letter from their father, addressed to them while students in Maryland.

"I hope we may never have another war, but in case of such an event, I hope I have three sons, who believe that Dulce est pro patria mori if necessary, or as McCauley said:

'For how can man die better
Than by facing fearful odds,
For the ashes of his fathers,
And the temples of his gods.'"

Nathan -- the elder, was soon in uniform as a Lieutenant of the First Regiment of Louisiana Artillery CSA with orders to report at once to Fort St. Philip below New Orleans; Malcolm, heeding the call of the drums, laid aside his physician's career to enlist as a private in the New Orleans Company of "Leeds Light Horse"; -- Porter, then nineteen years of age, surrounded by the quiet and repose of a pleasant New Jersey campus, still lingered in the shade of old Nassau.

In July, the untrained boys of the South, under the leadership of a Louisianian, had worsted the untrained youth of the North, at Manassas; or "Bull Run", as that Virginia battle was called by the Northern Army. The following month, Porter's mother addressed a letter to her children, scattered in schools in the North, a letter to be sent from one to the other, as was her custom:

"My dear, very dear children

"Hour after hour, day after day, you monopolize almost my thoughts....in these dark days of fearful trials....keep as quiet, elect as little attention as you possibly can, -- for I fear that recent events that have transpired may exasperate a disappointed and mortified populace....have the name and initial painted over from your trunks and baggage....it would be much the wiser to hurry home before further military demonstrations and reverses may further embitter the feelings of the opposing sections, against all our people living among them....insinuations are now thrown out, of an intention of exciting servile insurrections, -- this is the greatest of all their miscalculations. Never were the negroes in a more perfect state of careful submission to their position, and they talk about the crisis, and the sinful intentions of the Lincoln men with perfect horror; all determined to fight them out of 'our country', as they call it. I hope and trust that you will get back without difficulty -- if Aunt Helen will start soon enough, Adams Express seems yet to afford a safe means of transportation. Many ladies and children from the schools have been sent for and safely brought by Adams Express. It would be wise to have as little baggage to look after as possible, -- to get through as unencumbered as possible.... I feel very nervous, Porter, about you, for fear of your being thrown off

your guard in conversation, your feelings detected, and persecution would inevitably follow. Be respectful and grateful always to Mr. Halstead, no matter how much your views differ from his....you have never written us how your account stands at Princeton. The sale or pledge of your furniture, it appears to me, with what money you took on, and the \$100 sent after should be sufficient to cover all of your indebtedness there. You had an ample supply of clothing when you left here. A comfortable genteel overcoat is the only absolutely necessary article, with one rough working suit to travel in, that I should think you would need. Don't leave any debts behind you, make a clear and full statement of your situation to Mr. Halstead, and he will get you the money, as he has been in the habit of doing..... All the girls are knitting woolen socks for the soldiers....".

And in another letter from their mother to her sister on the same date:

"It is reported here that J. -. was killed at Manassus, he was a captain in a Philadelphia company; his family here are deeply mortified. I hope R.F.-. will never darken the doors of Southern hospitality again. We are curious to know in how short a time he covered the distance of twenty five miles to Washington. I don't give him credit for getting at any time very near the battlefield. We received Rose's letter from 'Hillside' (Mr. Halstead's place at Newark, New Jersey) after expressing ours 'under cover'..... Fred Brant who commands at Fort St. Philip, says Nathan bids fair to make a first rate artillery officer. He has been made post adjutant, and enters greatly into military spirit; rises at five o'clock every day, and is hard at work all day long. Every fourth day his time comes around to serve as 'officer of the guard'No apprehension is felt here for any successful descent upon New Orleans, but every preparation is being made....I am glad....has left her children in Europe. I think she was wise to have done so, and to keep them there until this dreadful civil war is over. Sometimes I think that, if I were in your place, I would send your three boys over there with Ella....

Ida Slocumb says 'No', but that you ought to bring them all home with you, that their sympathies through life may be with their own home and family.... I deeply lament the interruptions to Porter's collegiate course, -- but it is done now, I fear, unless reason breaks upon the deluded and infuriated Northmen. I fear it will be impossible for him to get his degree at Princeton. What a pity. His best mission now seems to be to devote himself for the next year to making himself useful to you, in return in some measure for your own and his Uncle Johnson's kindness."

But this was not to be Porter's mission for the next year, or for the future. One by one the Southern youths at Princeton were packing up their books, bidding farewell to their classmates, and departing for the war. In a period of three weeks, the class of 1862 lost two-fifths of its members. Of the junior orators from Clio and Whig Hall, eight in all, just one-half, resigned to cast their fortunes with their fellow citizens in the South. On April 21, 1861, Porter "resigned" and left Princeton. For several weeks he remained in New Jersey at "Hillside", the beautiful estate of General Halstead and his wife. Mrs. Halstead and her brother, Dr. Marsh, were cousins of the Morses. It was while here that Mrs. Hartstene of South Carolina, widow of a naval officer, and a friend of Mrs. Halstead, wrote to her in New Jersey: "Does it not strike you (referring to the war) that the women of America can do something?....Let us rise in a body and rebel against this war. I believe every American woman would unite in this....What is to be gained by war?....We are a determined race, North and South; let our countrymen's hands not be stained with each other's blood....Let us settle difficulties as Christians in this great and enlightened age....We can neither overrule or subjugate each other; the blood will not bear it. There can be no forced union. Let us not have war."

But when the War Lords beckon, young men generally enter the fray. Porter, with a parting look at old Nassau, picked up his sister from a convent in New York, boarded the "cars" to Louisville, Kentucky, evaded a Federal officer on duty at that point to prevent unauthorized passage, and eventually he and his sister reached New Orleans. At that very month a class was graduated from Princeton, but a New York newspaper noted "The attendance at the commencement at Princeton was not so great as on former occasions. A very large number of Princeton graduates and nine of the graduating class are in the Confederate Army, some have already been killed in action."

In September, 1861, Porter was one of the twenty or thirty New Orleans boys to enlist in Company I, First Regiment of Louisiana Cavalry, for the Confederate service. * The commanding officer, Colonel John D. Scott, -- recently from the field of Manassus -- had promised his young recruits "immediate service at the front". Company I, due to the generosity of Mr. Morgan, a planter of Pointe Coupee parish, called themselves "Morgan's Rangers", and Porter and a fellow-trooper named Treadwell wrote the words to a sort of troop song the tune of which has long been forgotten:

"Come, fall in -- Morgan Rangers,
The stirring time has come,
And marshal notes are sounding
By the fife and on the drum."

This cavalry troop, known in those days as a "company" was commanded by Captain Ovide LeJeune, and learned in due time the tedious duties of a trooper, the intricate maneuvers of cavalry, and to "point", "cut", and "parry". At Baton Rouge, the companies were assembled from their different troop centers, mustered into service as a unit, and entrained on several troop transports, -- amongst them being the "Magnolia" and the "Vicksburg", -- to Memphis, Tennessee. From there the regiment moved up to Nashville, where they remained a week, preparing their mounts, and drilling and maneuvering as a regimental unit; thence to Bowling Green, Kentucky, to become a part of the army of the Tennessee, under the command of General A. S. Johnson. "Don't talk about cold weather", said old Bill Minor, the burley ensign of that regiment, "unless you were with Colonel Scott on that march from Bowling Green, Kentucky." In addition to the extremely cold weather, measles broke out in camp, and Porter observed, an observation common in all wars, that the city boys were not molested to any extent, generally all having had the disease in their childhood. But the lads from the country suffered greatly. In February, 1862, the army found it necessary to evacuate Bowling Green, and the regiment was sent to a station opposite Fort Donaldson, where the men slept in bivouac in the snow. From here they fell back to Nashville, and received their baptism of fire, as reported in official communications by General Johnson to Beauregard:

"My cavalry, a part of which still observes the enemy near Nashville, had a smart engagement with the enemy's cavalry six miles from Nashville....forty of

* See Appendix 121

Scott's cavalry attacked one hundred of the enemy's, killed twelve, routed them....we lost two....".

There were marches and skirmishes and bivouac, and in April, 1862, Porter was detached from his regiment and ordered on recruiting duty at New Orleans. The war was now a year old, and every man and woman in the South -- notwithstanding the earlier opposition of so many of them to secession as a measure, were solidly against what was now the issue; the Yankee invasion of their territory, as it was called. It was no longer a question of Union vs. Secession, it was a matter, now, of a more simple and vital issue. The protection of the homeland from hostile troops. Perhaps in the minds of many of the more adult population, the Southern Confederacy, from its very start, was doomed to failure: but if such a thought was present, it was never uttered.

In April, 1862, the Federal fleet under command of Admiral Farragut,* approached the batteries at Fort St. Philip and Fort Jackson, the defenses of New Orleans, and important barriers of their war strategy of opening the Mississippi River and thus splitting the Confederacy in twain. These forts lay some fifty-five miles below New Orleans, and about half that distance below the old Harlem plantation, where the Log Book, faithfully as ever, recorded all the activities of the plantation day:

"Wednesday, April the 23rd, 1862: Weather, cool: Temperature, 58 degrees, 8 A.M.: seven in the hospital with the mumps. Sent two boys to the city to work on a boat, by order of General Lovell, (C. S. A.). Eleven men and two mules with plows breaking out the middles for the second time in the new ground. Heavy cannon-ading was heard from eight o'clock last evening until ten this morning. Black and white were on the qui vive all night. The windows rattled and the house trembled at every report. We shall learn whether the fort was taken or not, in the morning. Tom's gang hoeing the Harlem front from the Belle Vue line to the stables. Everything looks sickly and wants rain."

Immediately after the passage of Farragut's ships by Forts St. Philip and Jackson, Commander Porter, U. S. Navy, demanded their surrender. This being refused, the bombardment was then re-

* See Appendix 122

commenced and kept up until near dusk that evening. "A second demand for surrender made three days afterwards (April the twenty-seventh), offering the most liberal and honorable terms, was also declined by the commander of the Confederate Fort, General Duncan, C. S. A.....However, (on Sunday the twenty-seventh, an acute emergency was apparent), leaving General Duncan, in his judgment, no alternative, he reluctantly yielded to the apparently inevitable necessity, and on the morning of the twenty-eighth of April, the flag of truce, announcing his willingness to accept the terms refused the evening before, was sent to the Federal Commander." Porter's brother, Lieutenant Nathan Morse, Post Adjutant at Fort St. Philip, was sent over in a small boat to the opposite fort as well as to one of the supporting Confederate vessels to convey to them the conditions of affairs. In the meanwhile, Isaac E. was in the very act of accompanying a private party of gentlemen from New Orleans to convey supplies to the Post down the river. In a letter addressed to Nathan, at that moment, Isaac E. comments: "You will be much surprised as I was to learn that your old dad was in the whole bombardment in an old hull, the 'Eleanor', Captain Willis' master. A party of gentlemen started to take down some provisions, powder, powder-cotton, turpentine, rum, etc., to the troops at Ft. St. Philip, and just as we got within a mile of the Fort, the bombardment began, and we saw the whole until daylight. The shot and shell falling around us as thick as hail, and it is God's own mercy that we were not all killed, for had an unlucky shot struck us, we were sure to have been burned up, or have drifted right in midst of the whole fleet; - when we tried to back out, it took us a long time to run around, and we could not make more than three miles an hour against the current. Opposite the Quarentien we saw the last of the engagement; being a single fight between the 'Quitman' and one of the Yankee vessels: the 'Varuna', or the 'Iroquoise' or the 'Oswaco' was ultimately sunk by the 'Stonewall Jackson'. Our party consisted of Mr. S. O. Nelion, Mr. Trolett, Mr. Lausaxon, Goodwin, Trepanier, and Ned Nermano, who was going down to join his company on board the 'Louisiana'. Lieutenant Pinckney commanded the Fort at McGhee's plantation and with only twelve rounds of cartridges, did them a good deal of damage, but they came to the city, and the papers will show you our refusal to surrender the city; - and defied them to shell it, - so that this is a barren victory. At the scene of attack General Lovell and some other gentleman, were on board the 'Doubloon', and just as they had, or were about to land, the attack began. As they passed us, headed for New Orleans, they told us that several of the vessels had already passed the Fort, and advised us to be moving. But being the slowest vessel, we had the honor of covering

the retreat, and brought up the rear. So that you, and I, Nathan, were in the same fight. How Malcolm will laugh when he hears of it. As Lovell got up at one o'clock and reported us in the rear, pursued by the Fleet; - and not arriving (in New Orleans) until seven o'clock, the general impression was that we were either sunk or captured. You may judge of the ladies' uneasiness. Your brother Porter had been ordered to take charge of some government stores, but was so uneasy, that he was almost tempted to disobey and wait - when I arrived - most opportunely, to his as well as your mother's relief. There was a good deal of noise and confusion in the city, but little, or no Union manifestation, - to the great mortification of the Yankees. Lovell had taken all the troops from that city and all those from Fort Livingston, Fort McComb, and Fort Pike, to Corinth; besides all stragglers and furlough men. The Governor and all the officials have gone to Baton Rouge, and it is said that the Fleet have gone, or are going, on up to take that place. If they do no better than they did here, as we lawyers say, they take nothing by their motions. Our flag still floats and they are afraid of the mob if they venture on shore to take it down. The telegraph is removed to Kenner, and the rolling stock engaged in picking up troops."

But contrary to Isaac E.'s expectations the "Federals", soon after, did venture ashore, did plant their flag, and not only take over the city of New Orleans, but General Butler ordered all arms and ammunition to be given up to the Federal authorities. New Orleans was occupied by the enemy. In compliance with this order Isaac E. was forced to send out of the city his brother-in-law's duelling pistols, and the very sword his own father had carried at an earlier battle of New Orleans, against other invaders, - the British Army in 1815. At Harlem Plantation below the city the usual hum and activity of a great sugar estate continued. Despite the Federal fleet, and the squads of soldiers that canvassed the plantations and rounded up - as they did at Harlem - many of the healthiest and ablest of the negroes for service in the Union army, there was little interruption in the operation of that sugar estate. Following in the wake of the conquering fleet, the ships of war of foreign countries steamed by, on their way to New Orleans to protect their own nationals. And the Log Book - as important to a plantation as a ship's log at sea - noted it all:

"Monday, April the twenty-seventh, 1862.

Weather, cool and cloudy. Temperature, 62 at sunrise. A French war steamer (called 'Milan') passed up at eleven o'clock, and a Federal Steamer before

breakfast. Two mule plows are sowing earth on the stubble in the 45 arpent cut. Tom's gang hoeing the stubble in the 35 arpent cut next to Fatines. The cane and corn both look sickly, - they want rain very much. Loaned Grismae twenty barrels of corn.

"Tuesday, April the twenty-eighth, 1862.

Weather cool for the season. Temperature, 64 degrees at sunrise. Crops want rain. Eight in the hospital with the mumps. Two mule plows burning off stubble in the 45 arpent cut. Mrs. Smith, three children and servant returned last evening in the carriage from the city. Tom's gang hoeing and filling in with corn.

"Wednesday, April the twenty-ninth.

Temperature, 68 at seven o'clock. Weather cool. River at the highest point this season. An English frigate passed up yesterday. The two forts surrendered on Monday. Two mule plows in the corn at Belle Vue. Tom's gang replanting corn. The ground very hard and much baked. Some of the corn has been replanted three times.

"Thursday, April the thirtieth. Weather and river the same. Killed a hog this morning. Two mule plows working the corn at Belle Vue. Tom's gang following the plow, and planting the corn. Three in hospital. The Federal transports are passing up filled with soldiers. The crops suffering for rain.....

"Monday, May the twelfth. Temperature, 84 at twelve o'clock; the warmest day this season. Five in the hospital with the mumps. Dr. Wederstrandt and Mr. rode up as far as Grant's plantation and then crossed to Conception. Valentine delivered of a boy, on the eleventh of May. Commenced using corn from the corn house. Worked all day yesterday with twenty hands and six carts upon Lessep's crevasse. They hung one of the Lessep negroes yesterday for attempting to kill an overseer.

"Wednesday, May the twenty-first. Weather cloudy and wind southeast. Temperature 77 at 8 A.M.

Two in the hospital. Dr. Egan missed his visit today. Several merchantmen have passed up in the last four days. Also man of war with six guns and a Spanish flag. The Charbonne fly made its appearance today.

"Friday, May the thirtieth. Weather clear, river at a stand. Temperature 74 at 7 A.M. Two of the negroes ran away yesterday, they were the ones that were watching when some sugar was stolen. Five in the hospital. Four loaned to the Confederacy. Tom's gang of thirty follows the plows.

"Thursday, July the twenty-fourth, 1862.
Weather cloudy. Heavy rain last night. Temperature 80 at 7 A.M. The steamboat, 'Time and Tide' stopped here last night and laid by on account of the storm. Two Federal officers of the Thirteenth Maine regiment came ashore and slept here. All hands planting potato slips in the rear of the cowpen, and five and a half arpents at Belle Vue. The corn last planted, comes up in three days. None in the hospital.

"Sunday, August the third, 1862.
Weather unsettled and very hot. Temperature 80 at 7 A.M. On Friday five of the officers of the S. S. Richmond and spent the evening. They were all very young and well educated.

"Monday, August eighteenth, 1862.
Weather fine. Temperature 82 at 7 A.M. The people cutting wood on the Batture. They cut thirty six today, making 1,007 cords to date. None in the hospital. Four men, one woman and two children went to the Federals last night. Rachel delivered of a large boy on the fourteenth.

"Thursday, October the ninth, 1862.
Weather hazy, but looks unsettled. Temperature 76 at 7 A.M. The people cutting hay, - the weather too unsettled to haul any in. Two men making shingles to mend sugar house roof. Three making hogsheads. Lincoln's Proclamation makes all the negroes in the rebellious states free, after the first of January, 1863. *

* See Appendix 123

Rode up as far as Robinson's and learned on the way from Fernandez* that the Lesseps have promised to pay the negro men ten dollars per month and the women seven dollars, - deducting three dollars per month for their expenses. Most of the planters, I learned, will do the same."

The occupation of one's city by one's enemy is not a pleasant experience.* However, Porter's parents, and family managed somehow to keep comfortable at their residence on Camp Street. At Harlem Isaac E.'s brother-in-law, John Weatherburn Smith, "took to his bed at eleven A.M. November the third (1862) and died the same evening of apoplexy. He was buried two days later, nearby; all the neighbors being present. Dr. Wederstrandt, a brother-in-law, read the funeral service." This put upon Isaac E. much of the general management of the plantation, and Mr. Charles Vayhi agreed to take charge of the local management of the place. There was a good deal of difficulty in keeping the negroes on the property, and Mr. James McDonough, contractor, was engaged to work during the rolling season. He arrived with a gang of twenty men; the terms being \$45 a month for each man, he finding himself; and \$15 extra for himself for directing. Often Isaac E. would run down past the blockade to the plantation. Many an afternoon in New Orleans he would while away the time playing whist with his old friend, Mr. Lea on Prytannia Street. From across the Camp Street residence, Father Mullen, Rector of St. Patrick's Catholic Church, was a frequent visitor. Father Mullen had served in the War of 1812 as a midshipman in the American Navy, and later, - after he became a priest - as a missionary to the Indians at Sault Ste. Marie. He was a strong sympathizer with the Southern Confederacy, and of him it is said that when General Butler upbraided him for a supposed refusal to conduct burial services for Union soldiers, the good priest replied that on the contrary, he was willing and glad at all times to bury all the Union soldiers, including General Butler himself. While many of the daughters of Isaac E. and Margaretta stayed part of the time at Harlem, it was advisable for at least some of the family to remain at the house in New Orleans. "I have to remain in town to keep the Federals from moving in", wrote Margaretta, "as they take immediate possession of every house the families leave even for a day. And indeed they are threatening to billet the officers on private families. If on the spot I think I can always evade that infliction. We have no communication with our

* See Appendix 124

* See Appendix 125

northern relatives - but hear that Cousin Anne is still alive." General Halstead, in the meantime, in New Jersey, was in charge of the mobilization of all New Jersey troops for the Federal army. There were, indeed, several distant relatives in the Federal army, and George W. Morse, at the age of fifteen had enlisted in the Second Regiment of Massachusetts Infantry - a regiment to be especially honored in after years by a commemorative tablet in the Boston Library. After four years of warfare he was to return as a Captain, age nineteen, unscathed, except for a slight wound and a four-months life as a prisoner of war. But only years after the conflict was over were the Southern "Morses" and the Northern cousins to meet and discuss the hardships of the great adventure.

Porter, after the fall of New Orleans in 1862, rejoined his regiment somewhere in Alabama; - and just about the time that ordinarily he would have been proudly walking between the rows of smiling faces of a commencement week audience, to receive his degree at Nassau Hall, he was summoned from his tent to the headquarters of his regimental commander, and saluting briskly, received his commission as Lieutenant of Cavalry. But old Nassau, ever mindful of her sons - North and South - ten years later presented him with his diploma as of the Wartime Class of 1862. His new military duties took him to Chattanooga, to Richmond, and back again to Louisiana, where on January the first, 1863, at Avery's Island, "New Years Day", he attended a grand ball given by Mrs. and Miss Avery, with music by the band of the Crescent Regiment, -- while at the same time the couples were whirling around in the maze of the dancing, two Yankee gunboats, the "Grey Cloud" and the "Diana" lay within shell firing distance of the ball room. Porter was attached to the staff of Brigadier General Tom Greene, a veteran of the Mexican war, a beloved leader, and the commander of a cavalry corps in the army of General Richard Taylor. The latter officer was the son of the former President of the United States, a Yale graduate of the class of 1845, and an able soldier. This gray army was attempting to hold for the Confederacy the Louisiana territory west of New Orleans; and at the same time protect Texas from the "Yankee" invasion. According to many, the battle of Camp Bisland, Louisiana, was one of the fiercest and bloodiest fights of the war: the command of the navigation of an important waterway was in dispute. And that was also the time of chivalry and of Waverly novels, and many of these young officers' mounts were named from characters in those romantic books. Porter named his horse "Guy Livingston". "Well do I recall that hot day in April, 1863," wrote Porter, then twenty years of age and commanding a section of artillery on the flank of

that engagement, "when the shells of General Banks' Parrot gun whistled along the usually quiet Bayou Teche, and wrought such destruction in the once flourishing and peaceful cane fields. And memory recalls the gallant day, in which John Avery, among others, stood in the forefront of battle resisting the advance of the invader. Particularly do I recall the execution of the enemy's guns when Major Brownrigg was killed and the heroic Sayres was stricken down at the head of his Valverde battery; when gallant Semmes and Judge McGowan, and the crew of the 'Diana' were captured. And when Tom Ochiltree and his dapple grey steed went down in dust and blood. How many will remember the ball at 'Oaklawn Plantation', the hospitable home of the Porters (Judge Alexander Porter) the night before the battle, - when spurred knights and bonnetted belles danced to delicious music."

But it was found necessary to retreat before an ever increasing force of the enemy, and the cavalry corps to which Porter was assigned fought a continuous rear-guard action as they stubbornly resisted at Jeaneretta, New Iberia, and Vermillionville. For five days and nights, the saddles were not removed from the horses, and men and officers ate and slept, as they fought. At Opelousas, there was a brief breathing spell for the tired men and animals.

In the meanwhile his two brothers were active on other fronts. Malcolm was a cavalry officer on the staff of General Polk, and Nathan, a Lieutenant of artillery, writes him in February of 1863 from the upper Mississippi River defenses, at a post he calls "Morse's Battery; one rifle .32 Pdr., liable to bust":- "I am afraid I would make you proud if I were able to convey to you an idea of how delighted I was at the receipt of your letter of the eleventh of February. Your prefatory explanation of persistence was appropriate. It was so like yourself to wait for nearly two weeks after the terrible battle at Murfreesboro before giving me assurance of your having gotten through safely. Indeed, if it had not been for Bev Kennedy's arrival here I should still have been in the dark. So I must let you know that the 'Orleans light horse', though no doubt a most puissant and redoubtable corps does not occupy that notice in the public journal of the Confederacy which they undoubtedly merit. Your letter to Porter I will send as soon as I can discover whether the mail communication is perfect. The usual channel is somewhat obstructed by the temporary (no doubt) sojourn of a large number of citizens from the more northern states who are spending the winter among us. They have not been received as cordially as they might have ex-

pected and their efforts at a closer acquaintance have invariably been repulsed. There has been an interchange of distant civilities, which has not resulted in any decided intimacy.

"But to be serious, - the enemy have been now over a month encamped across the river in the bend, and just out of range of our heaviest guns. It is pretty well known that heretofore they have directed their principal energies in attempting to make practicable General Butler's canal - in this they failed to realize the results expected, and have not yet passed any craft through it. Indeed, transports would have a hard road to travel if they did find water enough, for we have every inch (indistinct...) which commanded easily the mouth of the present canal. It is possible that they may cut another higher up, which would come out, as they imagine, below our batteries. But if they do, there is still chance of their turning the river. I append a rude sketch.

"They ran a Ram 'Queen of the West' by at daylight one morning. All our batteries fired on her. I fired eight shots from my rifle while she was passing. I think that was oftener than any other single gun. I made very pretty shooting, though I cannot swear to hitting her. It is so difficult with so many firing to declare on the results of your shot. Admiral Dave Porter, U.S.N. (... indistinct ...) two or three weeks, captured a number of steamboats. She was, however, 'obtained' at last on the Red River, thanks to a Confederate sailor whom they picked up, off one of the captured boats, and insisted on his acceptance of an elevated position on their vessel. He attempted to avoid the honor, but they were so persistent. Their sudden confidence was not, however, justified, for by an unfortunate error in his observations, while assuring them that they were about fifteen miles below the battery, he suddenly and most unexpectedly went right under our guns. Feeling in consequence, too much mortified at his want of skill to remain there longer, he quietly withdrew and took to the water. The majority of the Federal crew did likewise, eighteen however remained - to haul down the colors, and do the honors of the boat to some military gentleman in grey who construed the act as an invitation to come aboard. She will - for the future - wear a slightly altered flag, and may do good service for the Confederacy. We have two other Rams of the Magruder breed below; - we may possibly increase the flock. Some four days ago, our ingenious opponents towed down a couple of Mortar flats by means of those infinitesimal tug boats, which at two miles distance, have the appearance of a marine flea. They fired slowly at the town for two days, on the evening of the second day, Captain Barnes opened

from a rifle Blakely shortly after which, they left and have not reappeared. Today being Washington's birthday, they fired a salute, shortly after which there was one of the heaviest and most rapid cannonadings I have ever heard. It is supposed to have been caused by one of our gunboats trying to come out of Yazoo, but nothing definite is yet known. Time will develop what the Federals are about. It ought to be something terrible for they are taking their time. We sleep in the Battery every night and have done so for two weeks, and will do so, I suppose, until the siege is over."

When General Robert E. Lee decided to invade the North, the army of northern Virginia was recruited up to full strength before it set out to make the advance into Pennsylvania; and Porter was ordered to report to his cousin, Brigadier General Nicholls, commanding the Louisiana brigade of the Second Corp of that army. Enroute through a Federal controlled territory to his new post, Porter, now weary with lack of sleep and sick, put up for a brief rest at the house of a friend, Mr. Thornton, ten miles above Alexandria, Louisiana. Here, on April the fifteenth, 1863, Federal troops -- a squad of Captain Perkins' company of Massachusetts cavalry -- surrounded the house and Porter was taken from his sick bed, a prisoner of war. The Battle of Gettysburg would have to be fought without him. Just a month after his capture, Brigadier General James Boyd, U. S. Army, issued a pass to Mrs. Morse's family to see their son, confined to the Custom House in New Orleans. To a prisoner, six weeks in the not too roomy quarters, it was at least something to look forward to, when he and his fellow officers were finally notified that they were about to be transferred to a Northern prison. They were enroute to join the numerous prisoners at Fort Delaware.* And Porter started a diary, of which these are the opening paragraphs:

"June the second, 1863. Sailed from New Orleans this evening in Steamer 'Cahawba', Captain Baker, for Fortress Monroe. Our guard was Billy Wilson Zouaves, - Fourth New York volunteers.

"June the eighth. Reached Fortress Monroe this evening and transferred from the 'Cahawba' to the U. S. transport boat, 'Utica', lying in Hampton Roads.

"June the tenth. Transferred to steamer 'Maple-Leaf' and sent to Norfolk, where we took on some forty

* See Appendix 126

more prisoners (officers) mostly sick and wounded. Met here Grant Weidman, of Princeton memory, Major of the 173rd Pennsylvania Regiment, and Commander at the Post. Left Norfolk at 12 M. Returned to Fortress Monroe, and put to sea on our way to Fort Delaware."

In the meanwhile, Major Grant Weidman, U.S.A., enemy, but fellow Princetonian (Class of 1859) sent to Porter a basket of substantial food and several bottles of wine. The vessel had no sooner got under way than five of the officers, including McGowan, Holmes, Semmes and Porter, went about to arrange a plan for capturing the vessel on which they were prisoners; and at three p.m. when off Cape Henry, with all the Confederate prisoners in the plot, they surprised the guard, seized the arms and ammunition, and took possession of the 'U. S. Maple Leaf', the Federal guard and the crew. With the ship's flag still flying at the mast - the figure 19 in red on a white background, - and with a guard with fixed bayonets over the Engineer and Pilot, this group of escaping Confederate prisoners ran the vessel eight miles South, and landed at dark. It was first intended to take the boat to a neutral port, to Cuba or one of the West Indies, but on examination they found the fuel too low for that journey. The Federals reported several days later that the Confederates planned to burn the vessel unless the Federal officers on board would promise to take the ship direct to Fort Delaware and not return to Norfolk. Nevertheless, the Federal officers on board failed to do as promised, and on getting to Norfolk, immediately telegraphed Suffolk, and two regiments of cavalry were immediately dispatched in pursuit of the escaped prisoners. In order to exonerate the Federals from collusion in the capture of their transport, these seventy-odd Confederate officers had voluntarily signed the following paper addressed to Major General Dix, U. S. A., commanding Fortress Monroe, and adjoining districts: "General: We, the undersigned officers of the Confederate States, while being held prisoners of war, did forcibly seize and take possession of the steamer 'Maple Leaf', guard and crew. Lately yours with regret."

But, to return to the diary:

"June the eleventh. Landed at dark on the surf of Princess Ann Co., Va., and commenced our 'March to Dixie'. Found a fisherman on landing, and promised him one thousand dollars to pilot us, and hanging if he refused or betrayed our party. Marched all night, and suffered

for water; walked thirty-two miles from dark last night to nine o'clock this morning -- all in heavy sand. Our party drank dry a little well in a fisherman's hut, and stopped at the salt works on Currituck Sound.

"June the twelfth. Crossed Currituck Sound last night in small boats; high sea, head winds; landed at twelve midnight; rested an hour, and hurried on to within a few miles of the Pasquotank river; find the enemy has preceded us, destroyed the boats, and are guarding the ferries.

"June the thirteenth. Marched (blank) miles last night, and hearing of the enemy again in our front, concealed ourselves in 'Wildcat Swamp'.

"June the fourteenth. Moved to a still more secure hiding place early this morning, known as 'Runaway Nigger Swamp'; tradition says a negro hid here for five years without being discovered; I don't wonder.

"June the fifteenth. Still encamped surrounded by an almost impenetrable swamp; bought a hundred dollars worth of bacon and cornmeal, and commenced cooking in the woods.

"June the sixteenth. Hearing that the enemy has been informed of our whereabouts, moved during the night to what we call 'Camp Suspense', four miles distant in the Dismal Swamp. Mosquitos terrible, nights cool, and no blankets. Yankee cavalry, infantry, and a gunboat down from Norfolk yesterday in search of us. They are scouring the whole country by land and sea.

"June the seventeenth. Still in Camp Suspense.

"June the eighteenth. Moved back to the water last night with a determination to take the water route; took small boat, started at dark, towed our boats through the canal and entered North River at nine o'clock; set sail but was delayed at twelve, by a very heavy squall and thunderstorm; it became so dark and the lightning was so vivid, we were obliged to lower sail and cast anchor.

"June the nineteenth. Little Broad Creek, near North River. Reached this point at daylight this morning, wet to the skin from last night's rain. Our boat got separated from the others during the storm, and the others have not yet come up. We secrete ourselves here in the bushes until night; nothing to eat today; fired at two deer this morning but missed both.

"June the twentieth. The other boat came up at sun-down, and we went out and joined them. A report of a Yankee gunboat ahead alarmed us all very much, but it proved false. We kept on; crossed the mouth of the Pasquotank, made Wade's Point, and ran the Albemarle Sound into Yeopan Creek, a distance of thirty-six miles. Apparently we are safe now, but very much exhausted. We rested at Ward's until two p.m. and then resumed our march as far as the Chowan River, which we reached at 10 P.M. in a heavy rain. Waited on the bank all night.

"June the twenty-first. Crossed the Chowan River (six miles wide) at daybreak; succeeded in getting wagons and carts from Mr. Hawley and neighbors to take us to Murfreesboro. Past the camp of Major Wright's North Carolina battalion and stopped all night at Mr. Valentine's.

"June the twenty-second. Took an early start, and no breakfast. Paid fifty dollars for a carriage and buggy, passed through Murfreesboro at nine A.M. and reached Boykin Station, at the depot on the Roanoke and Seaboard Railroad in time for the 3 P.M. for Richmond. The train was crowded so the boys of the 'Maple Leaf' just cleared the negro car, which was full, and took possession.

"June the twenty-third, 1863. Reached Richmond this morning at nine o'clock, a dirty, fagged out, used up and happy set of fellows as you ever saw; our whole company of 71 Confederate officers having escaped from the 'Maple Leaf'. We were two weeks making our way into the lines. Reported to the Secretary of War and treated with much consideration; he informed us that we should be paid up to date; and our expenses

refunded. My immediate party consisted of Judge McGowan, Captain Semmes, Holmes, Hughes, Nelson, Alston, Bruguieus and Fiske. I am still suffering with fever, my exposure in the swamp having given me a relapse."

About that time Porter's mother received the following letter from her son, dispatched from Fortress Monroe on June the eighth: "We arrived here this evening after a delightful trip."

While the guns were bombing up in Gettysburg, and the waves of men in blue and grey were fighting a terrific bloody conflict, during those hot July days, Porter lay convalescing at the beautiful countryseat of Mr. and Mrs. James Lyons, "Laburnum" on the Brook turnpike just two miles from Richmond. It was good to be away from the confusion and conflict for a while; but only too soon must Porter return to the front. On July the tenth, with Captain Semmes, Mrs. Raphael Semmes, the wife of the intrepid commander of the Confederate naval ship the "Alabama", and their three daughters, they set out for Mobile. Arriving there, they found many refugees from New Orleans, and Porter found excuses to linger there until August the fourth. But finally he and Captain Semmes set out for their commands on the other side of the Mississippi. They traveled by team; and when this broke down, were fortunate in getting a pair of mules from Major Boone, and thus continued on their way. But it took them nearly three weeks across the country in their old peddler's wagon with one blind horse "which kicked furiously", and an old lame mule, to reach their destination in New Iberia. Here, in western Louisiana, Porter was ordered to report for duty to Major General James P. Major.

The roaming life of a cavalry division on an active and extensive territory, partly controlled by the enemy, afford much excitement and activity - and especially was this so, to those young officers fortunate enough to have been assigned for duty on the staff of such an idol of his officers and men, as General Major. But Porter's detailed account of those stirring times as outlined in his diary, hardly describes the theme of that gay and hard-riding life better than does his account, a dozen years later, on the death of his beloved commander:

"James P. Major, graduated in 1856 from the U. S. Military Academy at West Point.... and served with the Second U. S. Cavalry. On the breaking out of the Civil War he resigned from the Army and joined the Army

of the Confederacy was commended on several occasions by General Taylor, his commander General Major was a soldier of the 'Charles O'Malley' type of which Jeb Stuart was a specimen he was bright, gay, amiable and generous; fond of music and companions, but as a soldier and an officer never negligent of duty. He was prompt to action and his activity in the field, and power of endurance, were notorious. To his many attractive social qualities he added the charm of a clever anecdotist: in bivouac, or camp, or on the march, or in battle, his spirits never lagged. He had a large frame, stalwart body and vigorous constitution It was a striking sight to see him in full uniform and armed cap - a - pie, mounted on a gallant grey But not 'In the land of sun and flowers his head lies pillowed low;

No more he'll sing 'Petite Coquille' or 'Benny Havens, Oh!'. "

The young officers and men followed their commanders for more than a year of hard fighting and tough riding; often alternating with soft music, dances, and the company of the lovely ladies of the plantations along their route. And there was but little of that fair land along the Bayou Teche, or even from the Mississippi to Galveston, that did not echo, some time or another, with the hoof-beats of that gallant army in gray. And permeating all, ran a thread of gayety and romance; balls and house-parties - lovely ladies, music and song. The Quadrilles, Waltz, Polka, Scottish Galope, and finally the Reel were the general order of many evenings. At least this was the usual dance programme of the several parties Porter attended. But there were also days without rations, camps without mint julep beds, skirmishes at Vermillionville, Monett's ferry, Marksville, Bayou De Glaze, and a half a dozen other places, and the big fight at Yellow Bayou. After a brief garrison life at Galveston, Texas, there was a forced march back to Louisiana, and the Battle of Mansfield. Porter described it thus: "Our advance guard galloped up the road before the advancing columns of the enemy, - a heavy cloud of dust and smoke and the sharp and sudden crack of the Spencer rifle followed our last regiment, as it dashed up and wheeled to the right to take position on the left of the infantry. And the pursuit stopped as both armies lay quietly in position. General Mouton's division then moved up and commenced the fight, which soon became general. Our cavalry division dismounted and occupied the extreme left - the charge of Mouton's division was the most brilliant achievement of the day - as soon as the enemy's center (the 13th U.S. Army Corps

and a brigade of cavalry) was broken, our whole line advanced in beautiful condition and drove the enemy from their position - the 19th U. S. Army Corps came up to reinforce the main body, but they came too late - our men fought on, and although checked for a moment, succeeded in capturing 1500 prisoners, 200 wagons, 50 ambulances, and 22 pieces of artillery - the fighting continued until an hour after dark. At eight p.m. while posting the pickets, Captain Winston and I were fired upon from a cover in the thicket close by. Our army continued the pursuit (Pleasant Hill, 22 miles beyond Mansfield) where we found the enemy reinforced with the 16th and 17th U. S. Army Corps in position to receive us. The contest raged furiously all day - but we finally took possession of the field and 800 prisoners. The 16th U. S. Army Corps of western men whose boasts had been that they had never yet been whipped, fought well and gave way stubbornly; and had it not been for the 'Western Roughs' as it pleased them to style themselves, General Bank's whole Federal army would have been captured then and there." *

Not content with land operations, however, the cavalry command captured no less than six Federal transports and gunboats on the adjacent waterways. On May the fifth, 1864, the Yankee transport, "City Belle" with the 120th Ohio Regiment aboard was fired upon, damaged, became unmanageable and drifted to the north bank of the river. General Major dispatched Porter and Lieutenant Martin and ten men, in a small boat to board her. Porter received the surrender of the regiment from Captain Rumell, senior captain; the Colonel was lying in the cabin mortally wounded, the Lieutenant was also wounded, and the Major had escaped. Porter and his companions rigged a hauser, and succeeded in drawing the transport over to their own side of the river. Thirty-eight years later, (1901) on a visit to a Federal reunion in Washington, D.C., he made contact with that same Captain Rumell, who wrote: "I am pleased to say that I am still alive and glad to hear from you".

On May the seventh, 1863, Porter "Returned to camp at eleven o'clock pretty well fagged out - have ridden 65 miles since daylight - well pleased, however, with the day's work, we lay down, after a good supper, to enjoy half a night's rest on a comfortable blanket which, by the way, I share with Lieutenant Morgan, U. S. Navy, the commander of one of the gunboats captured." In May, 1864, this Command received the following citation from their Commanding General:

* See Appendix 127

"To the Officers and Soldiers of Wharton's
(formerly Greene's) Cavalry Corps.

For forty-six days you have engaged the enemy
always superior to you in numbers ... The history of
no other campaign will present the spectacle of a
cavalry force capturing and killing more of the enemy
than their own numbers. This you have done.... On
short rations, and scanty forage, in the saddle day
and night, you have neither murmured nor complained...
I, your Commanding General, honor you for your deeds,
and thus acknowledge my appreciation of your successes
... A grateful people will cherish the record of your
gallantry."

Porter was promoted to Captain of Cavalry in July, 1864, and not
many weeks later was brevetted a Major. Duty carried him to
Mobile, Richmond,* the Bayou Teche, and into Texas. In February
of 1865 he notes: "My delay here (harrassed by the rain, chilled
by the cold, and surrounded by mud) ... has been unavoidable, owing
partly to the weather and partly on account of the sickness of my
horse, which, in his poverty, reminds me of Don Quixote's Rosinante.

On April the ninth, 1865, General Lee, in Virginia, surrend-
ered his army of Northern Virginia. But the cavalry corps to which
Porter belonged was still in the saddle, and over a month after
Appomattox, while attached to General Major's still strong and able
cavalry Division at Brazos River, Texas, he received, perhaps his
last order as an officer in the Confederate army. This was to the
effect that "the regular monthly inspection report had not been
properly forwarded to Headquarters". During the weeks which follow-
ed when the Confederacy was dying, there were numerous rumors afloat;
and amongst these was one of international importance. At that
time Maximilian, with the support of the French King, was in power
in Mexico. Prince Polignac, a French nobleman attached to the army
to which Porter was assigned, was said to be on his way to Paris,
in company with an officer in the Confederacy, for the purpose of
conferring with the Emperor, Napoleon III, to the end that aid from
France would be asked for the now stranded Confederate forces in
Texas and West Louisiana. It was even said that steps had been
taken to create an alliance between the French troops in Mexico
under the Archduke Maximilian, and the Confederate army then occupy-
ing the former Spanish-French colonies of Texas and Louisiana.

* See Appendix 128

The scope of this mission has been disputed, although shortly afterwards several officers and men of the Confederacy did actually join the French in Mexico. Amongst these was General Magruder, Porter's one-time commander, and to whom Porter shipped baggage and impedimenta to the Mexican destination.

In order, no doubt, to keep up their spirits in those most desolate times, resort was made to less discouraging affairs than the purely military. One of these merry rimes ran as follows:

"Yes, our cause is all wrong, and the fight to the strong,
In spite of the proverb, must often be long;
Let our brothers all goad us as much as they may,
They will scarcely forget those old jackets of grey."

Porter's family were fortunate in escaping much of the catastrophies of the war. While it was true that his cousin, Lawrence D. Nicholls, captain of a Louisiana regiment in Stonewall Jackson's corps, had been killed in action at the Gaines Mill fight; and another cousin had lost a foot and an arm; both his brothers and himself came through unscathed. Many of his friends, however, had fallen in battle. Toward the latter part of the conflict a delayed letter from home finally reached its destination: "I have tried in vain to get you out your valise and a few shirts begged again and again but the restrictions are so very stringent, that it has so far proved impossible. I heard from Porter through a letter from Howard Zacharie if anything had happened to him, I should certainly have heard I enclose by a blockade runner, a letter from ELH it would be an immense relief to me to be assured if he (Malcolm) is alive Don't miss a single opportunity to send even one line with date, distinctly traced, telling me of your well being Mrs. McWilliams is trying to go to her son whom she has just heard was severely wounded An intimate friend of Willie Bethel who we hear has been killed. Your dear father ran the blockade and came up from "Harlem Plantation" to see me on Friday and remained until Sunday morning. He left Rosa, May, Helen and Cornelia at the Plantation, - all well and spending a comfortable and improving summer I am here at 157 Camp Street with Nursey, Mammy Courtney, Teeney and Flora."

By the end of the war, Porter, a Major of Cavalry, had not yet reached his twenty-third birthday. What would the future hold in store for him and the other young men of that defeated army? Abraham Lincoln, who had promised to receive the Seceding states back in the family fold, had been assassinated by a mad man.*

* See Appendix 129

President Johnson, his successor, had promised Amnesty and Pardon with restoration of all rights of property with the exception of the billion dollars invested in slaves. Nevertheless, excluded from this pardon, were all who had served above the rank of colonel in the army, all Governors, all graduates of the Naval Academy or West Point, all whose property was valued over twenty thousand dollars, and several other classes of citizenry of the South. Many Confederate officers and soldiers - two thousand of them in all - crossed the border into Mexico. The Confederate officers, General Magruder and General Maury, were but two of the distinguished personages of this group, who aimed to assist Maximilian, and the Empress Carlotta in the creation of what was thought to be an orderly, friendly, and an American-ized Mexico. Many looked to England or to the English colonies for their future residence, for there had existed, throughout the conflict, a great bond of sympathy between England and the Southern Confederacy.* There were many in Britain who felt keenly their inability to help; and from the pen of Sir Henry Houghton in reply to "The Conquered Banner" came the following:

"All alone, aye - shame the story,
Millions here deplore the stain;
Shame alas; for England's glory,
Freedom called, and called in vain."

But Porter and his brothers felt that despite the inevitable hardships, disadvantages, and poverty, that were bound to ensue, their countrymen would rise from the ashes, and re-united with the North and the newcoming West, help to found a great new American Nation. And it was well, perhaps, that the great misfortunes which were about to descend upon the South during the following half dozen years - misfortunes due not to the American people as a whole, but to certain selfish and greedy individuals then in power -- were hidden from their view.

Porter joined a party, many of them refugees from Louisiana then in Houston, and headed for home. The group consisted of General Major, Lieutenants Smith, Villars, and Vickers, Judge Avery's family, Mr. McIlhenny's family, Dudley Walsh, and Mr. and Mrs. Weeks. They arrived in Beaumont by train, and then by wagons drove from Niblitt's Bluff, through Lake Charles - to New Iberia. Here they ran into Federal troops, and on June the eleventh, 1865, Porter again became a technical prisoner of war, and signed his official parole.

* See Appendix 130

"I, the undersigned prisoner of war, belonging to the Army of the Trans-Mississippi department, having been surrendered by General E. Kirby Smith, C.S.A., commanding said department, to Major General E. R. S. Canby, U.S.A. do hereby give my solemn parole of honor

Approved by J. C. Murphy,
Captain, Seventh Louisiana
Cavalry, C. S. A;

and Lieutenant Colonel Smith Anderson
Ninety-third. U.S.C.I., U.S.A.;

Commissioners."

Three days later he took the oath of allegiance to the New United States.

"Furl that banner! True 'tis gory,
Yet 'tis wreathed around with glory,
And 'twill live in song and story."

Fully realizing - as did the other officers and men of that Army in Gray - that the cause of States Rights was forever lost - Porter set about planning to pursue his interrupted civilian career. The "lost cause", a cause affecting the status of all the states of the old American Union, both North and South, was courageously but unsuccessfully fought by the South alone. Henceforth there would be a central, powerful, federal country; this was truly the Birth of a Nation. Perhaps, they reasoned and hoped, it would be for the best. Many of the youth of the South fully expected, after the war, to return to their homes, "convert their swords into ploughshares", and begin what they knew was to be a long hard struggle.

The return to New Orleans was not accompanied with any of the glorious pomp which they might have had, so often visualized while enduring the active service in the field. They came back saddened, and in small groups, or in ones and twos, and there were no bands to welcome them to Canal Street.* The city was still under the control of the erstwhile "enemy" forces, the only parades were the Federal troops - white and black - many with the arrogance of conquering soldiers in a conquered land. Late into the evening these vanquished soldiers would often gather about some homely fire-

* See Appendix 131

side and discuss the conflict, and the future that lay ahead. For some time Porter was unable to accustom himself to the luxury of a bed; and at first found relaxation only by sleeping on the floor, for such is the temporary situation of all soldiers fresh from camp bivouacs and the hardening life of prolonged field service. By the levee, between New Orleans and Harlem Plantation was still to be seen the blackened hull of the burnt Confederate gunboat "Webb". The plantation itself was desolate. "I was invited to attend a very handsome party at "Belle Grove" Plantation, last night, but did not feel in a party humor It has been raining all day, but I ventured out into the Bermudas and killed six ducks General Walker is reported in London, and Generals Smith and Magruder, as double-headed eagles (major generals) in the Imperial Army of Mexico. Turner and Jones had left New Orleans when I returned, but Colonel Douglas and Major Venable still linger in the Crescent City. Von Phul has gone to Missouri in search of 'oil'; and General Major has gone home; and Tom Williams, so I have been told, has gone to Brazil. This will cover my knowledge of the whereabouts of the military gentlemen of our acquaintance, and, as I have been at home (that is to say on the plantation) since the twenty-fourth day of August I am somewhat behind the times, and I only know that we have had too much rain, and that Mr. Johnson has entertained the Governor, which is very cheering intelligence, and gives promise of our controlling our own affairs, and ruling, not being ruled." From Porter's parents we get some of the latest gossip in New Orleans at the time: "Mary Blois wrote a long time account of Eugene Blois' death. He was wounded severely in the last battle before Richmond - was carried to Washington - died, and is buried with honor at Arlington. His mother was sent for, but arrived after his burial The two Miss Finneys have been for the last three years in Richmond, and are very spirited and lively."

".... Captain Beauregard arrived last night by 'Northern Light', so I presume Miss Alice will be made happy shortly (Author's note: Isaac E.'s grandson, fifty-four years later was to marry a daughter of the above couple) General Beauregard informed me", notes Isaac E., "that a few nights ago, while he was staying at his father-in-law's, Mr. Delandes, a guard entered the house about two o'clock in the morning, and searched every place in it. It was supposed that John Slidel was secreted there. Although General Twigg, the Federal Authority, apologized for the time at which the search was made, he could not excuse himself for having given the order. General Beauregard told him that when he saw a Brigadier General and a Colonel scaling the walls at two

o'clock in the morning, that he certainly should have fired on them had he been provided with firearms; - acknowledging the right to search the house, - still there was a proper time for doing it My business at the Government is to try to save the property of Mr. Tuscher, and M. De Clouet. Thank heavens," wrote Isaac E., "I have no favors to ask on my own account. I sent you some letters and pamphlets by the 'Monsoon' on Sunday, but as there was no freight for 'Belle Grove' they said they would leave them at the Randolph's or some other place in the neighborhood for which they did have freight. The Adam's house in New Orleans next to General Twiggs is being fitted up for the Agars The furniture is being moved out of the Nugents and there is a prospect of our having a new neighbor there, and also at the Schwartzes.... We swelter with near a hundred degrees of heat The papers will give you an account of the Slocum property! Also that our Cousin, General Halstead, has presented the college at Princeton with \$10,000."

On November the twenty-first, 1865, Malcolm and the daughter of Mr. and Mrs. John Andrews were married at the plantation of her father, "Belle Grove", two miles below White Castle, in Iberville Parish. This was the occasion of many parties and dances, and "the young ladies all looked so swell in their party dresses". And nowhere else perhaps, could entertainment be so well done as at "Belle Grove".* The mansion was faced with great fluted columns topped by Corinthian capitals, and with pale rose-colored outer walls. The house itself was surrounded by a great forest of trees, and gardens. Some of the seventy-five rooms were forty feet square, with graceful mantels of marble - all in exquisite taste. It was a beautiful and fertile plantation, but was suffering from the effects of the war and within a few years it was to be sold. This was the second wedding of Porter's generation since the end of the hostilities. Three months before, in far off Kentucky, the daughter of Mr. and Mrs. William Moore, became the bride of Nathan.

It was on February the eleventh, 1866, that Isaac E., the father, died at his Camp Street residence in New Orleans.* In announcing his death to his classmates at Harvard, Oliver Wendell Holmes, at the end of his generous eulogy, wrote: "Another of their companions, college classmates, life classmates, has taken his last degree, - missing, but not lost, from that

'One circle, scarce broken, these waiting below,
Those walking the shores where the asphodels blow'." *

* See Appendix 132

* See Appendix 133

* See Appendix 134

Abraham Lincoln, taking his second oath of office on March the fourth, 1865, announced that the southern states should as speedily as possible take their places in the Union. Had he not been assassinated the following month, - and continued to have kept aloof from the evil policies of the radical and greedy wing of his party, much of the chaos that followed in the South, might have been averted. Louisiana had already ratified the Thirteenth Amendment to the Constitution, wherein she acknowledged the freedom of the slaves. And despite this uncompensated Emancipation of 1865 - a loss to the South of some forty billions of dollars; despite their now worthless currency; and despite the wreck and ruin of their war ridden country; - the people of that stricken area, courageously set out upon the difficult task of restoring peace and securing a livelihood to themselves and their families.* In February, 1867, Porter's family was still attempting to operate a small part of the Harlem Plantation, although greatly handicapped by the new and difficult labor situation. In his note, in that month, we find the following scale of wages for the free negroes:

"Monthly hands engaged:

16 first class hands	\$16 and rations
1 ostler	at \$14 and rations
5 first class women	at \$14 and rations
1 stock minder	\$ 8 and rations
1 water boy	\$4.50 and rations
1 cook	\$14 and rations
1 mule boy	\$15.50 and rations"

But even as he wrote, the plantation was in the hands of the court. Before it was finally sold at auction Porter tried his hand at more commercial pursuits and: "returned day before yesterday, sunburned, dusty and rather worn; having spent two days and two nights at Brashear (Morgan) City, waiting to get transportation down for a herd of Texan steers. He brought down 77 with him and 23 more came on yesterday's train." To augment his scant income he wrote articles for Texas newspapers; and to provide for the future he began at home the study of law. And such in general was the immediate post-war life of so many of the young-ex-Confederate officers and men - too young to have yet qualified for a profession or a trade. Many, who still were able to hold their plantations, began by necessity, to contract with tenant-farmers and share-croppers. To the young lawyers and physicians, - as were Nathan and

* See Appendix 135

Malcolm - the road too, was difficult. But they all looked, with brave hearts, ahead.

It was definitely determined by the radical elements at Washington to treat the South as conquered territory and to arm the negroes with the ballot, notwithstanding that this procedure was not even popular in many states in the North. New Jersey, for instance, while at first consenting to grant citizenship to the ex-slaves, later withdrew its consent, and not until a change of party had obtained control of her legislature did she accept the constitutional amendment granting votes to the negroes. The previous legislature, indeed, had not consented to the amendment. Soon, however, at the point of Federal bayonets, these stricken southern people were forced to stand by, as "racketeers", herding the ignorant negroes to the ballot-boxes, polluted and disgraced that fair land. New Orleans, the largest city, suffered in proportion. There is perhaps no blacker spot in American history than those "Reconstruction" days. Many of the good people of the North and in England were shocked at these despicable acts; - but many of the more active of the northern people, to whom the war was not the intimate affair it was to the people of the South, were unmindful of their southern countrymen and were too absorbed in accumulating those fortunes that were to be so apparent in the future decades. Not a few of the South, especially those without a plantation haven, left that fair section as virtual refugees. Many, perhaps braver, stayed on.* In 1867 Porter and his mother and her six other children - the youngest of whom was thirteen - determined to start life anew in Baltimore. There were several reasons for this move to Maryland: Its proximity to Washington, and Margaretta's claim against the Federal government for an unpaid balance of her husband's salary as Minister to Panama a decade before; many of her own people were of that State; she herself was a Vice-regent of the Association of Ladies interested in, and owning Mt. Vernon, in nearby Virginia, the home of the Father of the Country; and the family in Maryland would be nearer to their northern friends who could perhaps help them in their struggle. *

Within a year or two of that exodus from the South four major events of great national significance occurred on the North American continent. Russia sold Alaska to the United States; the Archduke Maximilian, deserted by Napoleon III, was executed before a firing squad in Mexico; the Union Pacific completed railroad communications between the Atlantic and Pacific coasts; and that

* See Appendix 136

* See Appendix 137

decade, it has been said, marked the end of the hitherto predominances of English culture and tradition in the United States. And as the new Nation, in time, (often with reluctance) headed more and more towards its new goal; to take its place, and assume its responsibilities, as a nation of the world, the sons of the old South, acutely appreciative of the passing of the old out-moded government, were to be found ever in the forefront.

In Baltimore, the Morse family found a temporary haven; -- one group of the many exiles from the Southland, who were now to be found scattered in Texas, the Far West, in Mexico and Honduras, and even in far off England. Porter, at #20 South Street in his new capacity of an associate on the staff of a weekly journal of Art, Literature, and the Sciences, -- "Southern Society", it was called for a year, then "The Leader",* -- may have written this editorial in that Baltimore publication:

"The wise man gathers up what is left him from the fire and puts it in a place of safety. This done, he concentrates on what is left of his resources, and strength, and, under a resolute will, applies all his energies to the purpose of making a new capital out of the wreck, for the commencement of a new career."

And many old family friends at the North, Thomas H. Seymour, Caleb Cushing and others, gave new confidence and encouragement. "I have a great reproach on my mind by not writing to you before this," wrote Thomas Seymour, "your kind letter reviving old memories of your dear Father to whom I was much attached, proves to me how much I may find of him in you. Please accept my thanks for the "Southern Society" a memo to me of elegant hospitality, and true heart. I need it to keep my own warm, and should have told you so long ago. Sometimes, when politics get less selfish, if they ever do, I will make an effort to add to your list of names of subscribers. Please present my kind regards to your good mother, whom I remember to have met once, when your Father was a member of Congress"

But there was still more years of trials and difficulties. For Malcolm, with his young wife and infant, struggling through the first few years of a war-interrupted medical practice, writes from Texas to Porter, in Baltimore: "We are living very plainly....I

* See Appendix 138

don't think....we will or can pay any of the \$500 due. Our lands in Polk County are worth about fifty or seventy cents an acre, making the 1300 acres worth about \$650; this money at ten percent interest, can easily be spent on one or two trips to New Orleans. Mr. Andrews, my father-in-law, has sold "Belle Grove Plantation". We are living very happily here and have made no debts in Texas, although we sometimes get as low down as our last \$5.00. We hope to do better soon. The Camp Street House in New Orleans will probably not bring the first mortgage on it. Ma may recover several thousand dollars....if the Maryland property is divided. This runs a great risk of being seized by her creditors. These are disagreeable facts, but it is time that we should realize them. ...my advice is that you leave your fine house in Baltimore at once; let Ma give you her silver and you sell it in your name, -- nominally as paying you for the money advanced to her. If you will stay in Baltimore, rent a little house or some comfortable rooms. If you cannot get a place or some business that will pay, some of the girls must try to do something....by teaching, or writing, or copying. If you have money enough from the silver, perhaps it would be better to rent a small place with a house and ten acres of land and raise vegetables -- for in Baltimore you can raise your own chickens, and have eggs, cut your own wood, and plough ten acres yourself. I have tried ploughing, it is not hard after you get the hang of it. Many of the European noblemen plough on their estates for exercise....God bless Ma and my dear sisters. Write soon to your devoted brother."

After a few months in Baltimore, the little household moved in the fall of 1867 to Washington, to "rooms" on Capitol Hill; and then to 813 - 15th Street, N.W., the old parsonage of St. Matthews Church, and at the side of that edifice: - the entire site -- incidentally and somewhat appropriately -- becoming known years later as the "Southern Building". They sold many of their oil paintings, including Jarvis' portrait of John Marshall, all their family silver and other heirlooms. In a few years they purchased a modest house on Franklin Square (911-13th St.) whose walls, crowded with the old family portraits, looked down for years, upon many a Louisianian as, en route to and from the North, they stopped off in Washington. By 1870, Nathan opened his law offices in New York, a city which had always shown much sympathy with the late Southern Confederacy -- to such a degree indeed, that the Mayor of that city, had during the war days actually suggested that they secede from their union with the rest of the state, and form a "free-city", friendly to the South. Nathan dwelt with his wife and children across the Hudson at Newark, but a few miles from the old Elizabeth-

towne scene of his ancestors. Malcolm, dissatisfied with the outlook in Texas, tried California, but finally settled near Warrenton, Virginia, where he practiced his profession in this beautiful countryside and enjoyed the life of proprietor of "Redland", his country place near Bealton. This section of Virginia, was then a quiet rustic neighborhood, and it would be another fifteen years before that area became the famous hunting ground which was to make it such a popular habitat for so many from afar.*

Oliver Wendell Holmes did not forget the family of his old friend. Writing to Porter in 1868: "I remember saying to him (Porter's father) once when we were looking forward to a possible conflict of sections, how our boys might yet face each other in the field. I wonder how near you three came to my first-born! * He got three bullets from some of you anyhow, two went through his neck, breast, and one stuck in the bone of his foot, but he is as well as ever, and I forgive you if either of you did it. Your father always seemed to like me, and I always liked him. One could not help liking him. I wonder if you know, what a pleasant, amiable, lively, entertaining, witty, shrewd, original young man he was?.....Well, his boys and mine had to fight, but if he had brought up mine in New Orleans, and I had brought up his in Boston, they would have still fought, only changing sides."

Washington, D. C., in 1868 -- when the Morses began their permanent residence in the Nation's capitol -- was still, despite the war, a small town. With half the population of Baltimore, it scarcely exceeded 100,000 people. Its upper boundary was a street of the same name, later to be called Florida Avenue; and the entire city was divided into West, East, and South sections: all interspersed with five creeks. One of these ran through the site of the later Mayflower Hotel and emptied into Rock Creek. Another arose from a spring in Franklin Park, just across from the Morse residence. The Chesapeake and Ohio Canal from Cumberland still crossed the aqueduct bridge and continued on to Alexandria. Below another canal was the "Island" and across the eastern branch was the Anacostia to be, then known as Uniontown. The British Embassy was at 1627 I Street, the French at 1320 G Street, and many of the others in the vicinity of G and H, 15th and I and K. The business section was along 9th Street, F Street, and Pennsylvania Avenue and transportation about town was by way of "Clarence" carriages, chariots, omnibuses, and "horse-drawn cars with jingle bells". Georgetown was still a separate town with its own mayor, and still

* See Appendix 139

* See Appendix 140

retained its old original street names. It was connected to Washington with but one bridge, and steamboats left its wharves every Wednesday for Philadelphia; every Friday for New York. The Arlington Hotel, a famous hostelry to be, was just opening its doors. Porter noted that "Walt Whitman (at the time a clerk in a government department) still stalks up Pennsylvania Avenue in the flesh, with a choice japonica in his buttonhole and a huge soft white hat on his fine shapely head. Beyond the peculiarity of his versification and some idiosyncracies in dress, "Walt" is not unlike other men in the Attorney General's office, and he takes sugar and cream in his tea or coffee, whenever invited. Indeed he is a kind-hearted, good man, and very charitable, his particular proteges being the cab drivers and the beggars, for whom he always has a look of recognition, a kind word, and often alms. Not many evenings, since, he was overheard giving a bored cab driver an account of the different invasions and settlements of England."

"With us here in Washington" -- wrote Porter, "the present influx is of Japanese to study American finance....they are very partial to driving, and two of the handsomest turn-outs in the city with coachman and footman, are constantly at their command.... they take naturally to horse-back riding....and many are living in a large house across from our former dwelling, a billiard table was put in the third floor, and from the street one can hear the balls being knocked about at a furious rate..... Wormley, the celebrated colored caterer, furnishes them a sumptuous table." Porter also remarks that five members of the new House of Representatives are colored men, and Elliot of South Carolina is coal black.

The White Sulphur Springs, at Greenbriar, late in Virginia, but then in the new state of West Virginia, despite the blight of so many war years, was still an attraction to the young and old. Porter, in the summer of 1871, was a visitor there, and "great oaks cast heavy shadows over an undulating velvet lawn where gambol a score or more little ones, while many couples, 'children of larger growth', en route to Lover's Leap, engaged in talk and earnest converse nearby; groups are scattered here and there reclining on rustic benches, or upon the green sward....the roads echo to the gallop of parties on horseback, or to the roll of buggies and carriages as they sweep by with their joyous load....though the heaviest accession are from the South and consist of most familiar faces, East and West are well and numerously represented. Kentucky, in particular, is well represented. Quite a party is here from Baltimore, including Miss Armistead, Miss Tierman, and Miss Florence

Patterson. The latter young lady has a carriage and four, here. Her coachman and footman wear beaver hats with gold bands, and a livery of grey cloth edged with crimson cord and mounted with brass buttons....carriage and harness are severely simple, bearing the letter 'P' in Roman Capitals, and the horses are blooded bays of fine metal and style....Washington is well represented, and there are present many ladies from Louisiana, good types of their respective elements (American and Creole) which compose society in that state; whose life prior to the War was an Arcadian existence. While the White Sulphur itself continues to be as attractive as of yore, there is little of that adventure among the guests here this season which ought to pertain to a mountain resort with such surroundings, and which was once to lend so great a charm to the place. As it is, instead of a change of life, or exemption from the restraint and exactions of society, one discovers that to the many, life here is too often but a return to the repetitions of the excesses and dissipations of city life. It is remarked that there is lack of enterprise on the part of the young people to encourage excursions, picnics, out-of-door sports, and rambles in the mountains; as a consequence, the more healthy exercises yield to the curious fascination of flirting and the 'German'. The bowling alley is almost deserted by ladies; favorite strolls are to a measure abandoned, and even croquet has only a few devotees. Dancing and flirtation divides the hours of day and night, and their charms constitute the maelstrom which draws most men and women to follow the ballroom by day as well as by night...."

Porter graduated in Law at Georgetown University (its first class in Law) and entered for the time being into a partnership with Randolph Coyle. Two of his sisters secured positions with the Federal government, and his mother -- without special encouragement -- prevailed upon the United States government to pay a handsome fee for her translation into English of a French treatise on orange culture. But Porter's mother was particularly active in her duties as vice-regent of the Mt. Vernon Ladies Association. The Mt. Vernon estate had suffered much during the Civil War, not that it was molested in any way by the troops in the neighborhood, but neglect and weather had rendered the dwelling into a delapidated and gradually decaying structure. While the sale contract had been made three years before the War, the heir and owner of the estate, Colonel John Augustine Washington, of the Confederate Army, had been killed in battle. This greatly delayed the rehabilitation of the property and it was not until 1868 that Colonel Washington's heirs were able to finally execute the deed confirming

the contract. Many of the Ladies of the Association made great personal sacrifices so that the project would be successfully carried out. In addition to some \$13,000 collected by Margaretta in Louisiana, she had been instrumental in finally obtaining \$7,000 from Congress. But despite these large sums derived from Mr. Everett's lecturers, and the great amount from New York, the Ladies of the Association were sometimes put to hard straits to collect the small sums to pay even the pressing obligations of the Association. At one time it was necessary for them to sell a pair of oxen which were useful in the estate, in order to raise the money to pay certain emergency bills.* Finally, after her years of active interest in the Association, Margaretta, having come to reside in Washington, and thereby forfeiting so much of her Louisiana interests, resigned. So much were her long services appreciated, however, that a year before the War Mrs. F. P. Butler, daughter of Nelly Custis, and a great-granddaughter of Martha Washington, in token of appreciation of the efforts of Margaretta in promoting the project, had presented her with a porcelain mug which "was used daily at Mt. Vernon by General Washington, and from which he drank milk every morning and evening". Many years later this prized article, through the generosity of Mr. J. Pierpont Morgan to one of Margaretta's daughters, became a permanent part of the accessories of General Washington's estate. One of Porter's first law cases was before the American-British Commission.* Successful in this and the recipient of a large fee, it was possible for him for the first time since the War, to obtain a prolonged rest and vacation. He could scarcely have chosen a more appropriate place than Newport, Rhode Island, which, before the Civil War, had been a favorite summering place for those of the South, and which, according to the local guide-book of 1873 -- "is not, it is true, the center for the greatest crowds to assemble, or for the finest gaming houses to open their doors, or where the best race-courses are found, for it has none of these and desires none. The 'fast' set are not admirers of Newport. Neither do the 'shoddy' classes find its society congenial. The men who have made the town what it is, belong to neither of these classes and give countenance to neither. In this respect the fair name of Newport is above reproach and the town shows a marked contrast to some of the popular 'resorts' which claim to be its rival."

Here Porter found among the less than 300 summer residents such friends and associates as J. Mandeville Carlisle, Oglesby of New Orleans, J. D. Lippincott, a former college mate at Princeton,

* See Appendix 141

* See Appendix 142

John LaFarge, Fred Kernochan, and John Auchinclos. There was also the Marquis De Noalles, the French Minister, and H. Stafford Northcote, Secretary to the British Minister.

Armed with his virtual pile of letters of introduction to many throughout the entire continent of Europe from Liverpool to Rome, and well supplied with advice from his friend Frank Riggs and others in Washington in regard to the best method of traveling abroad, Porter, in 1874, embarked for Europe. "With Paris", he writes, "we were of course entertained and instructed; older visitors complain that it is not what it was under the Empire; there is yet a good deal of glare and glitter, froth and gilt about the place. Also a great temptation to idleness, dissipation and vice. To the student the place offers a wealth of treasuresthe French are interesting, -- if, a puzzling-race....While in Italy we revelled in figs, (they are not generally as good as the Louisiana product), -- and I taught George Appleby the Louisiana mode of eating that fruit, which he much enjoyed. I hear of W. L. Washington at Carlsbad;....the Stauffers are at L'Athenee and Sunday night, while hunting quarters, I unexpectedly encountered my steamship friends, the Misses Bell of Louisville. I have been anxious and pained about the condition of things in Louisiana; but hope that ultimately, good will come out of the latest movement in that quarter; much sympathy is expressed for the white people; and I was much gratified to hear Professor Pierce (of Harvard) speak out so plainly in their behalf as he did last night; he thinks, and hopes, the attention of the people of the whole country (all America), will be called to the deplorable condition of things in suffering Louisiana; he thinks that the movement against Kellogg was not ill-timed, and regards the submission of McEnery, and Penn, at once, to the authority of the United States as wise; -- and says that it shows that the Conservatives have no quarrel with the United States. I do hope, that one of the early -- if not immediate, results, will be to rid our persecuted, patient, and long suffering fellow-citizens and friends, of K., W., and all such unscrupulous and weak 'canaille' -- who, having been dressed in a little brief authority, have cut such antics before high heaven, as make the angels weep....* I met Miss Florence Patterson, Miss Ellicott, and Miss Williams of Baltimore, (the latter a granddaughter of Mr. John S. Gittings).... General Torbert inquires after Rost, and begs to be remembered to Norris Halstead. At Geneva I noted your warning about Mt. Blanc and will not attempt any

* See Appendix 143

dangerous ascent.Top of Riga Kulm, -- three hours and a half of mountain climbing, - but not dangerous. At Lucerne we met Mr. M. W. Gaw and sons; there are a great number of Americans; the Perkins and a Miss Bayley from Louisiana.Just as I was leaving Interlaken I ran up against Ed Farquhar who inquired very particularly if I had any late news from home. He had ascended every mountain that he has yet approached. At Vevay, I met Miss Carlisle and family of Washington. At Geneva.... met Mr. and Mrs. Allfrey of Stratford upon Avon, England -- they invited me very particularly to come to see them at their home near 'Charlecote Hall'. Miss A. is a good specimen of a young English lady, who plays, sings, and rides like a hunter; more comely than English girls generally are....

"ENGLAND. Yesterday we escorted Mrs. Cameron of Virginia, Mrs. Bell of Louisville, and Miss Dunlap of Louisville, to the fourth of July reception at the American Minister's, 65 Great Cumberland Place, Hyde Parke; Mr. Moran (who has been very polite) having especially invited me, authorizing me to bring my American lady friends; Major Otey Bradford was the first man my eyes lit upon, on entering the room with Mrs. Cameron on my arm; he was very glad to see both Mrs. Cameron and myself, and we had a very pleasant meeting and talk with him, after passing General Schenck and two of his daughters; Sir J. R. of Canada, who married Lady Temple of London, was the only prominent Englishman who elbowed us during our stay. In appearance, as a general rule, English women do not compare with American women; in other points, I have not had a fair opportunity of contrasting.

"Otey Bradford is en route to Rome to establish himself in banking operations. I dine with W. McLeod Fullerton, barrister, (Cauthley's friend) at Notting Hill; met Mrs. F. -- clever, cultured and traveled; the Reverend Mr. Anquier, associate rector of the Temple, a good Shakespearean scholar, and an agreeable anecdotist; a Mr. Williams was invited to meet me but did not put in an appearance....I have been at the House of Lords, and in the House of Commons by invitation of Mr. Moran and Mr. Anderson of the House of Commons. We can learn a lot from the English, but there are many things which Americans can teach them."

As an ex-cavalry man, he found in the crowd at Hyde Parke, many fine horses, but, he added "few good riders". "Here I am", he notes, while on his short visit to Northamptonshire, "alone, discussing a joint of English roast mutton, and washing it down with Burton ale; I feel quite at home in old England."

The trip home was made in company with his friend, Mr. George Applby, on the Royal Mail ship, "Bothnia" -- one of the new style Cunard ships, but recently built. They left England, October 3rd, for New York; and among their fellow passengers were Mr. and Mrs. James Roosevelt, and Mr. Roosevelt, Jr., the right honorable Sir Edwin Halton, Lord Bostwick, and others.

In the summer of 1876, Porter again returned to England. Perhaps, like many other ex-Confederates, he saw (after all) a better promise of future success abroad, than could be hoped for in the "new" United States. He spent a good deal of his time this trip in London. "I dined with Mrs. Bradford (Number 8 Half Moon Street) and met her son William, graduate of Trinity College, and Sydneyalso Mr. Benjamin. Mrs. Bradford received me kindly and inquired particularly about my sisters; and Mme. Janin. She goes to Brighton for two months and Mr. Benjamin to the Continent this summer. Today I am in receipt of a polite and courteous note from the Marquis de Ripon (to whom I was introduced by His Eminence Cardinal Manning) and tomorrow at one o'clock, I will go to his town house, Number 1, Carlton Gardens, Pall Mall....he spoke of the Washington Treaty, Extradition, of Grant's hostility to the Catholic Church. Of the coming Presidential election, he seems to have regard and sympathy for the Democratic Conservative side, wanted to know who Hayes was, and asked my opinion of Mr. Tilden's prospects of election:....and hoped his friend Mr. Bayard would have received the nomination...." In London Porter visited Mrs. O.P. at the St. James Hotel: "Though by birth a northern woman, she is a great southerner in sentiment and sympathy and she talks freely of the gloomy prospect for the United States; has not much faith in the intelligence of our voting population, and says that it is strange that Southerners are the most hopeful of the government; refers to her visit to England and Spain forty years ago, and of the warm sympathy of the better class of Englishmen with the South; and declares that the Southern gentlemen and ladies represented a higher and better -- as well as the purest -- civilization in the United States prior to the late disasters and unfortunate war. Lord and Lady M. preceded me in calling upon her; and Lord H. it seems is an old friend. He asked her how long the United States' institutions would last....to which she replied: 'Longer than your present government in England, which cannot long stand the strains put upon it, owing to causes developed by Republican institutions.' She disapproves the present educational bill agitation, and cites the United States as an example of a country where (in certain locations) the people are overeducated....there are so many new schoolhouses in Massachusetts, she says, 'that the number of insane asylums has been largely increased, as a result'."

Porter also called upon Sir James McMichel, Baron of Marlborough and Secretary of the 'International Telegraph Company'. The Baronet's mother was a daughter of General Morse, of the same family stock as the Morses of America. Many of his new acquaintances in London mistook Porter for an Englishman, and when informed by him of his American citizenship, and his participation as a member of the late Confederate Army he was received with much sympathy, and friendship. Many agreed with Lord Rosebury, "who came to the conclusion that the Republican administration of the United States towards Louisiana, was comparable with the treatment accorded Poland by Russia." He was a frequent visitor to the office of Mr. Judah T. Benjamin, prominent member of the Confederate Cabinet, and whose Louisiana plantation was directly across the Mississippi River from 'Harlem'. Mr. Benjamin's office was Number 4, Lamb Court, Temple, London. Porter, however, determined to return to America, to try his hand with the new order of things.

On his arrival in New York, he put up at Mrs. Byrne's boarding house at Number 28, West 26th Street, which his friend, Mr. Grima, had recommended as a popular place of transients from New Orleans. After a short stay there, which included a visit to Mrs. S. F. B. Morse, at No. 25 Gramercy Park, Porter, with a brief stop in Washington, proceeded to New Orleans.

Travelers by the 'cars' not infrequently were the bearers of messages from friends of one city to another. Porter was no exception. In this instance he carried letters from Miss Eustis to her brothers, from Mr. Cochran, and from other "Washingtonians" with New Orleans friends and relatives."while passing through Wythsville", he noted "General Terry, a member of Congress, came aboard and read a dispatch from James F. H. Harvey, assuring Tilden election to the Presidency, and that this was conceded by the Republican Party"....At Mobile, he met a troop-train with two companies of the 18th U.S. Infantry, among the officers were Captain Charles E. Morse, a native of Wiltshire, England, who was then an officer in the American Army. Discussing with him the possible Eastern War, and the status of the British Army in such an event, and the merits of that force, they apparently both agreed that English troops "have to be well whipped and defeated once before they get to work in earnest and show what they can accomplish".

In the autumn of 1876 the people of the United States had indeed elected Samuel J. Tilden, a Democrat, President of the United States. But the Republican party, who had nominated Hayes, now claimed the victory. This apparent peculiar situation, arose, by

the presence of the "carpet bag government" in the southern states; particularly in Florida, Louisiana and South Carolina. For in those states, there was still a double government: -- that of the white citizen, and that of the negro and racketeer carpet baggers. The latter were Republicans. Had not both candidates, Tilden and Hayes, been men of acknowledged integrity, another bloody conflict might well have ensued. There was apparently no provision in the Constitution for an unbiased decision in a controversy of this kind, and a compromise, in the nature of an Electoral Commission, was created by a Special Act of Congress. The Committee was composed of seven Republicans and seven Democrats, and, Justice Bradley, who voted on every occasion, and who presided, was a Republican. Hayes, the Republican aspirant, was declared elected. In this Commission, Porter was appointed one of the counsel in the Louisiana and Florida cases, for the Tilden supporters.

By 1879 he began to take an active part in international and constitutional law questions. In that year he published -- in the Albany Law Register -- "Citizenship by Naturalization", and two years later, his book, "Citizenship by Birth and Naturalization", a treatise commented upon very favorably by the leading authorities of the times, dedicated to the Right Honorable Sir Robert Phillimore, D. C. L. In regard to this volume, Grover Cleveland, wrote: "The subject is one of such vital importance to the welfare of society that any effort to make his responsibilities better understood should be applauded....am glad to possess it and thank you for your kindness in sending it." In 1880 he was appointed a Delegate to the Association for the Reform and Codification of the Laws of Nations, which met in London, and two years later, with the permission of the American State Department, he was appointed by the Republic of Guatemala, the Secretary of their Legation in Washington, D. C.* It was during this service that the President of that country visited Washington, for the purpose, it was frankly stated, to persuade the United States to cooperate in the consolidation of all Central America -- under his control. Needless to say, the mission was unsuccessful. According to the Washington newspaper accounts of that visit: "Senor Don Jose Rufino Barrios, President of the Republic of Guatemala, the wealthiest and most important of the Central American States, arrived in this city yesterday morning at 6 o'clock. He was accompanied by Senor Don Fernando Cruz, Minister of State, Dr. Don Ansel Maria Arroyo, El Commandante Manuel Enriques, Senor Don Jose Montero, Colonel Don Andres Felers, Don Befido Castaneda, Don Antonio Jerion, Don Jesus Antuero and

* See Appendix 144

Don Carolos Murga, and a number of servants. The visitors were met at the station by Minister Montifar, and his acting secretary of Legation Mr. Alexander Porter Morse, and escorted to the Arlington Hotel where a suite of rooms had been assigned them. The party are fine specimens of Spanish-Americans. President Barrios is a general officer of cavalry, and is now serving his third term as president.at 10 o'clock, A. M. President Barrios will be formally received by President Arthur....The New Orleans papers reported that as Barrios passed through that city last week, he seemed to be extremely afraid of assassination, and kept in his bed room, four trusty servants, being also guarded by a special detail of police....." There is no doubt that that Barrios was a Dictator of the swash-buckling type. His critics call him a tyrant, and it is true that in his enthusiasm "to Americanize" Central America, that he had no qualms in placing his opponents before the firing squad, or indeed to be burnt alive, or to have his railroads constructed at the point of a bayonet. Unsuccessful in obtaining the cooperation of the United States in his scheme, he nevertheless attempted to consolidate by force the old Spanish Guatemala which had embraced the greater part of Central America, and in the attempt was himself killed on the battlefield of Chalchuata.

Porter's familiarity with Spanish as well as with French, made for him many friends in the South American countries, but perhaps his most intimate friend of that section was Senor Carolos Martinez Silva, one-time Minister to the United States from Columbia, and himself an author on international affairs. "Senor Silva", notes Porter, "was suddenly recalled in 1903 by his government for political reasons, for which Recall he expressed himself highly gratified, because it would not fall to him to sign the Treaty with the United States for trans-Isthmian canal rights. Such, he said, would be political ruin. Senor Silva died in Columbia in March, 1903, near Bogota, having been ordered out of the capital by the Secretary of War to put him out of the way of possible political agitation."

In 1880, as a result of claims of citizens of France (residents of Louisiana during the Civil War), against the United States government, the two nations decided to present their controversy before four Commissioners selected for the purpose. To the work of the Commission, was also added certain claims of United States citizens against France, for damages sustained by them in the course of the recent Franco-German war. Altogether, over 700 people were involved in a matter of over 17 million dollars. Porter was appointed by France as "Conseil Adjoint pres la

Commission des reclamations franco-americaïnes," to assist Charles Adolphe de Chambrun, in the interests of the Republic of France. This work, with Headquarters in Washington -- continued for several years.

911 Franklin Square was a small house. The entrance and stair hall was reached by eight brownstone steps; and to the left of the high-ceilinged hall was a living room with two marble mantelpieces, and with rear windows looking out upon a small and modest garden. On the floor below, in the basement, was the dining room. But despite its lack of space, the Morses held many receptions and teas at this dwelling. Members of the Louisiana families of McIlhenney, Avery, and Grima, as well as many distinguished persons from New York and Maryland, frequently were guests. On these occasions a colored butler, Smith Thompson, who often served without remuneration - be it ever remembered - was always on hand to assist in "opening the door", and in serving.

Washington, by 1883, was rapidly becoming a center of much importance in the diplomatic circles of the world. In April of that year, according to a local newspaper: "No private citizen was perhaps better known to the diplomatic corps than Alexander Porter Morse." The occasion was his wedding to the daughter of Dr. Daniel B. Clarke, a descendant of several old Maryland families,* and at the time, the President of the Bank of the Republic.

"The ceremony took place at 10 o'clock, at St. Matthew's Church, at Fifteenth and H Streets, and was performed by the bride's uncle, Reverend Father William F. Clarke, S. J., of Loyola College, Baltimore. He was assisted by five priests; Reverend Father Chappelle, Boland, Waters, Ryan, and McDevitt. The ushers were Messrs. Selden, Hanna, Pedrick, Quicksall, Bouefe, and Conway Robinson, Jr. The bride was attired in white satin and embossed velvet, with Point Lace trimmings and diamond ornaments. After the wedding a reception was given at the home of the bride. The presents were numerous and costly. Among those present were W. W. Cochran, Mrs. General Sherman, Mr. Rouston, the French Minister, and others of the French legation, Miss West, the daughter of the British Minister, Marquis and Mme. de Chambrun and representatives of

* - See Appendix 145

nearly every foreign legation; Miss Dahlgren, Miss Biddle, General Halstead of Newark, New Jersey, Dr. Carroll Morgan, Dr. James E. Morgan, Dr. and Mrs. Busey, Baron d'Arinos, Mrs. Commodore Franklin, Mr. de Geoffrey, and others."

This was the wedding description of the Press of the day; and, as good Southerners, their honeymoon took them to New York where they stayed at the "New York Hotel", Broadway between Washington Street and Waverly Square; -- then the New York mecca for Southern visitors.

It was the following month that the great "Brooklyn Bridge" was opened for travel and traffic.

In 1888 Porter was selected -- by Protocol between the United States and the Republic of Haiti -- Arbitrator in a controversy between these two countries in the matter of a treaty right. When this -- the Van Bokelan case* -- was satisfactorily settled, many foreign and American Journals spoke highly of this real and definite advance in the cause of Peace, between nations, and the Secretary of State wrote: "I desire to express to you the highest appreciation of the State Department, of the learning, ability, and impartiality with which you discharged the duties of your responsible office." At the United States Supreme Court, Porter was counsel for his native state, Louisiana, in several leading cases on constitutional law; and as late as 1888, in a letter to a friend, he wrote, "I take a deep interest in the welfare of my state and people, and I often feel (in Washington) as an exile in a foreign land," and some eight years later, the official report of the Attorney General of Louisiana, carried the following paragraph: "I deem it proper to express my appreciation of the consideration and assistance of Alexander Porter Morse, Esquire, of the Washington, D. C. Bar. Although I had no appropriation to pay him, nor authority to employ him, through professional courtesy he has rendered me valuable assistance."

The Mafia or "Black Hand" as that secret society was called, was rampant in New Orleans in 1891. Many of the victims were of the same nationality as the criminals, and feeling ran high in the Crescent City. Eleven persons, -- all subjects of the King of Italy -- were indicted and awaiting trial when a mob of several thousands stormed the jail and lynched three of the prisoners.

*- See Appendix 146

When the Italian government heard of this, it was greatly incensed that an established government would permit such irregularities, and Diplomatic relations between Italy and the United States were actually severed. Governor Nicholls of Louisiana, Porter's cousin, addressed him as follows: "Please go to the State Department and ascertain whether T. C., the Consul of Italy here, has been recalled or not; and if recalled, whether it appears as a personal Recall, or a mere temporary substitution of another person in his place. I presume that the papers of the person replacing C. ought to show the facts. Shakspear -- Mayor of New Orleans -- has requested me to ask for the recall or dismissal of that party. My impression is, that there would be nothing to act on, if he has already been replaced. I think Blaine is in a frame of mind to resent any request made at home by anybody on this subject in Louisiana, and I doubt whether there are many precedents for 'requests' of this kind from state or city officials. I am inclined to believe that the Secretary would take the position that complaints, if any, might be sent to him, with such remarks as the person complaining might think proper to make; -- but that communications should not go to the extent of 'requests'; - that the papers being before him, it should be left to him to write such advices as he might think right without any requests on the subject. Do you know of any precedents of such requests? I very much question the wisdom or policy of placing the Louisiana people, or Louisiana officials, in a position to be snubbed, or receive an official rebuke by doing some unprecedented or unusual thing. Please telegraph me."

Eventually the Federal government settled this delicate matter by the payment of 125,000 francs to the families of the three murdered Italian suspects.

In the following year, a long controversy came to a head -- the Behring Sea Fisheries question, -- between Great Britain and the United States. Porter, at the request of the American Secretary of State made extensive investigations from the angle of international law and customs in the preparation of the American side of the case. In 1894 he was Agent and Counsel for the United States before the Commission to arbitrate the claims of the Venezuelan Steam Transportation Company, against Venezuela. Two years before, Senator Edward Douglas White, of Louisiana, former fellow-Confederate soldier, and later to become Chief Justice of the United States Supreme Court -- wrote as follows:

"Dear Porter:

It is very kind to have written me such a nice letter of congratulations. My speech did not deserve the praise it has received. The evils of paternalism to which you refer is a patent and growing one. It will be the duty of the men of our day to stem its onward flow, and try to mold and shape public opinion in favor of the true principles of government. If I can in any way contribute to that end, I shall consider that I will have done the public a great service."

Porter wrote numerous articles and treatises for American and foreign journals, on international subjects -- a good many on the rights and responsibilities of neutrals in time of war -- and the Brooklyn Eagle newspaper referred to him as "one of the highest of contemporary authorities on international law". During this decade he was not infrequently in New York, Boston and other Northern cities.

Ever mindful of his Louisiana associations,* he frequently found time to make journeys to that loved land of the Spanish mosses and the silver bayous. In a letter home in 1895, he describes a delightful visit to "Avery's Island", the home of his dear friends, the scenes of so many of his war-time activities, and the Attakapas residences of his father and grandfather. "....An island of about 5,000 acres of land arising from the dead level of the surrounding country, 180 feet above tide water, -- a great elevation in this region. The live oaks and gum and China-berry, are the trees of the locality; -- all festooned with grey moss -- and the woods are filled with mocking-birds and cardinals. Two residences, double houses, with English basements and broad veranda crown the crest of the main hill -- facing a lawn studded with live oak, rolling away toward the southwest and the Gulf of Mexico, which lies about four miles distant, and which sends us air laden with balmy sea breezes. The horizon is very extensive, and the prospect of woods, water and sky is varying and pleasant....the property includes a sugar plantation, the celebrated salt mines, and the fields of 'tobasco' pepper whose essence is carried to all parts of the world where a tablecloth and good cooking are to be found. But the Averys, of course, are more attractive than the place itself...."

* See Appendix 147

In the gradual march of the United States towards its destiny, it was perhaps inevitable that certain European footholds on the Western Hemisphere would be in jeopardy. Sympathy with the plight of Cuba, dated back for at least a half a century, and in 1897, the year before the Spanish-American war, Mr. F. G. Alvord, wrote Porter: "The indifference of this (United States) government (towards Cuba) is, I agree with you, disgraceful. History is going to deal harshly with somebody; it will be the harshness of justice." The sons of the South, themselves victims of a temporary despotism, were in close sympathy with the struggles of the Cubans, and in the war that followed, one of the outstanding military leaders at the front was General Joseph Wheeler, ex-Confederate officer, who is reported to have ordered his men in one of the attacks on the Spanish troops to "charge those damned Yankees". Both Joseph H. Choate, and John Bassett Moore, wrote Porter in that decade, that they appreciated his excellent suggestions concerning international questions which would be of much service to them; and that they were glad to find him fighting at the old notion that diplomacy necessarily meant trickery, evasion, and injustice.

Some years before, Princeton had conferred upon him the degree of Ph. D.

Nantucket Island lies off the south shore of Massachusetts, and had among its earliest settlers, Tristram Coffin, close friend and associate of Anthony Morse. Some 250 years later, Porter, a descendant of Anthony found it an ideal spot for relaxation and rest from his arduous law practice. And, still not unmindful of his early war years he had pasted in his notebook the following lines attributed to P. Y. Black:

"The days of peace and days of pleading
Have been with me for many a year;
And further ever are receding
The daring days of blow and cheer;
Then days and laurels alike were near;
The victor's sword, and the hasty spade,
When the sweetest music to the ear
Was the clang and clatter and clash of blade."

Chapter VIII. GENERATIONS NINE AND TEN

"All we have in freedom, all we use or know,
These our fathers bought for us, long and long ago."

-Kipling.

Ten, in all, of the ninth and tenth generations in America, spent much of their early lives at "Valley View", on Ridge Road; - from the galleries of which the Washington Monument and "forks of the Potomack" were in constant view beyond the dense woodland and foliage. This forty-two acre summer home of Porter's father-in-law, Doctor Clarke, was the "land-heir", of his earlier estate further down the river, itself a part of "St. Margaret's", -- an early plantation of his ancestor of the same surname who came from London in 1637 to the Maryland shores of this historic stream. Almost an hour's drive in the earlier days, from the cares of business, "Valley View" was ever an isolated spot, and especially so, when the customary spring rains would wash away whole sections of the new cut Seventh Street road, into serpentine walks of the Jesuit College at Georgetown. Well beyond the turn of the century, "Valley View" retained much of the general atmosphere of a country place of the past: -- boxbushes, rose gardens, a wealth of vegetables, berries, and fruit trees; a stable full of horses, and a herd of jersey cattle, to say nothing of a great and vain peacock and his mate; and always - dogs. Among the latter was "Toots", a reddish wiry haired Irish Terrier, remarkably intelligent, whose death was succeeded, so it is said, by a phantom likeness - "The red dog of 'Valley View'", encountered more than once, it has been claimed, at irregular intervals in the years that followed.

Theodore Roosevelt and Woodrow Wilson, both in their time, not infrequently chose Ridge Road for their afternoon ride or drive, and were often observed to stop at the gate, to receive, perhaps, a bit of repose and contentment that even a view of that forest-clad place afforded. Here, in the summer of 1898, the youngsters of the ninth generation played at war, and would liken the thunderous blasting on the palisades of the Potomac, to a Cuban bombardment; and "Beware, Spaniards are hear", in crude pencilling on the attic door, remained undisturbed for decades. But a visit to the rows upon rows of the tented Camp Alger, across the river in Virginia, was the closest this group ever got to the fighting front of the Spanish-American War.

"Valley View", after telephones, electricity, and good roads

came about in that quarter, became the all-year-round family residence,* and its sturdy oaks of some two hundred years growth, witnessed more than one family wedding, birth, christening and death. They still shelter the present residence of one of Porter's grandchildren. Dr. Clarke was a genial host, and it was not uncommon for twelve to fourteen to be seated for Sunday dinner, and in this spacious house, resided for brief or long periods, many members of the Doctor's family, which, besides the Morses, included many Janins, Waggamans, Spauldings and Clarkes. There was, for instance, "Cousin Mae" Clarke on her return from Havana, where Dr. Findlay had unsuccessfully urged her to become a volunteer for his yellow fever experiment. And there was "Cousin Dick" Clarke, a member of a volunteer infantry regiment enroute to the Cuban front in 1898, and for some weeks in camp in nearby Virginia.

Although the effort to settle the Cuban controversy between Spain and the United States by Arbitration was unsuccessful, nevertheless there had been for decades past, many steps taken to set up a proper tribunal for the settlement of such international discussions. Two years before the Spanish-American War, Porter, in association with Henry E. Davis, Calderon Carlisle, S. E. Hackett, and J. H. Astor -- all members of the Washington Bar Association -- were appointed a Committee to act with a similar Committee in New York, to endeavor to bring about a "Perpetual system of Arbitration, primarily with England". Porter was always a great believer in the inherent fairness of the people of the land of his English ancestors.* About this time, Porter was also active in attempting to obtain the neutralization of the cables throughout the world. This also was not effected; and on a hot May morning in 1898, "Williams", the negro gardener at "Valley View" awoke the family, in the early hours of the morning, to announce in great excitement the victory of Admiral Dewey, over the Spanish fleet at Manila. *

Following the War, Porter was the author of leading articles in the "Harvard Law Review", and the "American Law Register" concerning the bearing of International Law on the inhabitants of the Philippines and Porto Rica, and in 1902 he resigned as an attorney in the Spanish Treaty Claims Commission to accept the post as Counsel of the Americans in their Fiji Islands claims against Great Britain. Perhaps one of the most important occurrences in our government in the beginning of the 20th century, was the question of our Island expansion, -- the proper disposition of the political status of the Philippines and Insular possessions. In May of 1901, the U. S.

* See Appendix 148

* See Appendix 149

* See Appendix 150

Supreme Court, rendered a momentous decision which was to affect the entire future overseas policy of our country. There were considerable discussions and debates on this issue, and Porter, as a recognized authority in this controversy was immediately asked by the Press his opinion of the Decision:

"It distresses me," he answered, "....I have thought of little else since. Yesterday I read the full text, of all the opinions carefully, trying to solve their intricities of reasoning. They haunted me even after I went to bed, as if I had eaten something I could not digest. I dreamed that I saw the Court divided into two parties, facing each other with flushed and excited faces. On the one side was the Chief Justice and Justices Peckham, Harlan, and Brewer, waving their arms in the air and shouting, 'The Constitution follows the flag'. Opposite stood Justices Gray, Shiras, McKenna, and White, shaking their fists and vociferating 'The Constitution does not follow the flag'. While midway between the two, motioning with his hands in the soothing manner of a peacemaker, stood Justice Brown, urging his colleagues in soft persuasive tones, to be calm. 'Gentlemen, gentlemen' he was saying 'pray suspend this noisy contention'. 'Sometimes the Constitution follows the flag, and sometimes it does not. Now, if you will only keep quiet long enough to listen to me, I will tell you when it does, and when it does not.'

Then I awoke, but I am sorry to say that my dream has left me more distressed than ever."

In George W. Cable -- a fellow Louisianian, and fellow ex-Confederate trooper -- Porter found a bond in another "exile" living in the North. Both men, in addition, had another characteristic in common. Both were endowed with that gentleness, kindness and quiet disposition, that was not so frequently to be found in current society. There was a correspondence of several years between them and many aspects of Cable's Civil War novels were discussed by both.

"Thank you most gratefully", wrote Cable, "for the book, and for all your kind thoughts of me. I have also, today, secured the 'Ordinance Manual' for the use of officers of the Confederate Army I wish you could see how I have changed the opening again of my story. I have it right this time, and this I owe, in degree, to

you, -- to your patient and interested attention to my reading of the first draft....I have your letter of the seventeenth (October, 1902), and am enjoying the Manual of Artillery Tactics greatly. It delights me that I have chosen my hero from this so highly scientific arm of the service, and which has been so widely overlooked by the story tellers. I hope you may hear from Major Semmes, for it now seems to me that -- as Richard Malcolm Johnson's people used to say -- 'I just got to positively must' have the old Confederate tactics in hand as I write."

In 1904 Russia and Japan went to war. According to the New York Herald, of January of that year, -- a month before hostilities broke out -- Porter proposed a joint action on the part of Great Britain and the United States, to insure world peace. "Mr. Alexander Porter Morse, a well known authority on international law and politics, speaking today of the northeastern situation and the possible effect upon the status quo in Asia, said 'the occasion for a concert of action seems to have arrived; for prompt measures must be adopted if the new hopes are to be realized. If universal peace may not be secured, universal war may be avoided, or postponed.'" Four months later, President Theodore Roosevelt was successful in arranging the ultimate peace conference between the two warring nations.

Porter's active participation in the affairs of the country -- which included numerous lectures on international law, at the U. S. Naval War College in Newport, and elsewhere; and as one of the official "Visitors", to the U. S. Naval Academy, -- ceased about 1908. "The United States", Porter noted in 1901, "is not in the loose and inaccurate misleading sense of the term, a 'Democracy'; -- i.e. government controlled and administered by all the people without discrimination or qualification, -- but it is a 'Representative Republican form of government': and it can only realize the dream and purposes of the framers of the constitution so long as it continues to be such in fact as well as in name."

In 1908-09, Porter, with his entire family, except one, spent several enjoyable months in well-earned relaxation in Italy at the Pension Hayden, 42 Piazza Poli, in Rome. "At this Pension are several from Washington, the Phelps, Miss Wilkins and Admiral Potts' family....Dan is making sketches....we had tea yesterday with the Duke and Duchess de Arcos in their palace. The Duchess was Miss Lowery of Washington, her brother was a great friend of mine.... At the present time there are 10,000 Italian troops stationed here, and almost as many priests and students studying for the priesthood."

On several occasions thereafter, the family spent long sojourns in Rome, and in one instance leased an apartment. "It is the custom", writes one of the ninth generation, "for the lease to extend for two years, sometimes as long as six....leasing an apartment here is most complicated; each party must have a lawyer; these lawyers meet and talk as though discussing the peace of the world....all this takes about ten days. Three months rent must be paid in advance, and a deposit put in the bank in case several other payments are not made, and in case anything is damaged. The day we moved in, was the day the heat was obliged to be turned on by law; the pipes were found to be broken and had to be repaired; the electric current was not strong enough for the electric heaters (kindly loaned us by the Hotel Flora). We had a small fireplace in the entrance hall, and all of us practically lived there, but one cannot have a hot bath and a fire at the same time -- as one flue does for both.... Mr. F. sent to northern Italy for two maids; after a week they arrived, and knew little or nothing. The cook had to be told (mostly by signs) everything; the waitress may have been in a restaurant.... we hate to send them away for they are so honest and willing---but impossible and entirely out of place here where everything is so luxurious...when they have finished their day's work they stand at attention -- so to speak -- in the kitchen, waiting to be dismissed to their quarters."

After Porter's death at "Valley View" in July of 1921, Chief Justice Charles Howry, wrote his family: "Alexander Porter Morse was an unusual man, scholarly and accomplished, a learned lawyer as well as publicist, he was capable of achievement in most any field of intellectual endeavor. I often wished I could see him and in his learning derive information which I knew he could impart.. ..my attachment for your father began twenty-eight years ago. It continued through his life. He was a good man, and without guile, always a gentleman." * He was buried on July 4th - "Independence Day", and on the initiative of his surviving sister, a small Confederate battle-flag was placed in his coffin.

The College of New Jersey was Princeton University when two of Porter's sons were students there between 1908 and 1915; and there was still that same indescribable atmosphere of friendliness and democracy which has ever characterized both faculty, students and townsmen of that ancient seat of learning. Perhaps the most outstanding extra-curricular features of that later period were: "Doc" Topley, the back room at the "Nass", Joe's Sipley, the Trenton

* See Appendix 151

Trolley, and the benches on Nassau Street.

In the summer of 1914, Porter's three sons enrolled at a military training camp held by the United States Army that summer, at Asheville, North Carolina. A previous camp of the same sort had been held before in Pennsylvania. And these two camps, a very early plan of fostering national defense, were inaugurated by General Leonard Wood and his associates, and were the forerunners of the C. M. T. C. of later days. However, so far was the general public or Congress from any realization of possible future wars and military defense requirements that no appropriation was forthcoming for the schooling of the enrollees for those early six weeks soldiering courses. Not only were they obliged to pay for their own uniforms, their army rations, and traveling expenses; but even equipment damaged in the course of training was charged to, and cheerfully paid for, by many of these embryo soldiers. And the three sons of Porter, were not the only sons of "rebel" fathers who spent the summers of 1914, 1915 and 1916 in the arduous training camps there or at Plattsburg; for many of the youth and older men, sons both of the North and the South, keenly felt the necessity for providing themselves with some military knowledge of defense of this great unified country. In 1914 automobile travel throughout many parts of this country was not particularly an easy matter; at least not in an old Model-T Ford; which five young men of Washington dubbed the "Rubber Donkey". Nevertheless Porter's sons together with Rufus Lusk and Philip Pratt, thus set out from Washington to Asheville, N. C. to learn there the art of soldiering. The following log is indicative of the roads and the traveling of that day, - when even as late as 1914 the traveler by road from Washington to the South was obliged to use the "Old Cumberland Road", for a portion of their journey:

"Left 'Valley View' (Home of the Morses),	2 P.M., July 1, 1914
Arrived, Frederick, Md.	5 P.M.
Harpers Ferry, Md.	6:15
CharlesTown, W. Va.	6:45
Winchester, Va.	9:00 P.M., and
Put up at the Hotel Evans; Left here	8:00 A.M., July 2, 1914
Staunton, Va.	12:20
Lexington, Va.	- --, and
Spent the night in a Roadside Improvised Camp near Buchanan, Va., except that Dan Morse, on account of a severe cold, put up at The Botetout Hotel, but could not sleep on account of the insects.	
Arrived Roanoke, Va.	7:45 A.M., July 3
Departed	10:15 A.M.

Dan Morse took train for Asheville, N. C. Two bad
fords and bad hills.

Arrived Rockey Mount, N. C. 2:00 P.M.

Brakes had to be relined here.

Left Rockey Mount, N. C. 5:20 P.M.
Arrived near Martinsville 10:00 P.M., and

Spent the night in an improvised roadside camp.

Left Martinsville	6:00 A.M., July 4
Arrived Winston-Salem, N. C.	11:25 A.M.
Left here	12:00 Noon
Lexington, N. C.	2:00 P.M.
Salisbury, N. C.	3:00 P.M.
Statesville, N. C.	6:30 P.M.
Catawba, N. C.	7:45 P.M.

Ran the auto into a small ditch (about 15 minutes
to get the front wheels out) but steering gear was
probably damaged. Slept that night all huddled
in the auto as a big rain storm came up before we
could assemble camp.

About 2 miles from Catawba	8:15 P.M.
Left	5:00 A.M., 7/5

At Hickory, N. C., steering gear went wrong and we
ran into a 4 ft. bank (speed 18 miles an hour). All
thrown out but Rufus at the wheel. 6:00 A.M. had to
have Machine fixed at Hickory, but we had no money,
but they trusted us (\$10.30), including a one dollar
loan. In appreciation we gave them a quart of
whiskey (this is a dry county). Phil Pratt left on
train for Asheville to gather enough money to see
us on our way. He wired \$20.00 to telegraph office
at 4:30 P.M. However in the meantime the auto was
fixed O.K. So we left Hickory, N.C. 1:30 P.M. We
intended to go right on by way of Marion to Ashe-
ville, but were advised to take the lower route via
Shelby, Gaffney and Spartensberg. No road map from
Hickory to Shelby and we had about 70 cents between
us. About 5 P.M. we were hailed by a Sheriff with

a handcuffed prisoner who asked us (that is, we were hailed by the sheriff) to take him and his prisoner to Shelby so he could turn him over to the authorities. We were glad to have them because we now would have a guide and we knew the court officers would pay us for transporting them.

Arrived Shelby at
Arrived Gaffney

6:00 P.M.
7:30 P.M.

Ten miles past Spartensburg, S.C. we camped in a woods.

Left Spartensburg at

4:00 A.M.

Greer at

6:00 A.M., and

3 miles the other side at a Church we took the road to the right where we met the Hendersonville-Greenville Highway, about 11 miles North of Greenville.

Past Hendersonville

9:15 A.M.

Arrived at Sheville, N. C. at

10:30 A.M.

Met and rejoined Phil Pratt and Dan Morse at the Grove Park Inn, cleaned up and had a good meal, and reported to Capt. Preston Brown, Commanding the Students Military Training Camp, at a beautiful site a little distance west of the Grove Park Inn. We were all assigned to Capt. Ware's Company, and began our five weeks training. At the termination of Camp we returned to Washington as we came. This time, however, we were particular in procuring ample supplies of army foodstuffs which a well disposed mess sergeant very kindly supplied us -- not in accordance with service regulations. On our way back to our homes, through the isolated countryside, just getting news of the beginnings of the World War (1914), we were often looked upon, being partially garbed in soldiers clothes, as Germans hastening to the Fatherland."

And their training, thus begun, was not in vain.

The first World War was the adventure of the day to many young men of military age. At the First Officer's Training Camp*,

* See Appendix 152

at Fort Myer, Virginia, the ingenuity of the Army Medical officers was often taxed to the utmost, to detect physical ailments so skillfully covered up, by those candidates eager for enlistment. In the test for hearing, at least one hardened Army Sergeant was made ten dollars richer by simply whispering the spoken numbers delivered by a medical officer from across the room, and meant only for the ears of an embryo infantryman. All the known lettered charts designed to detect acuity of vision were carefully memorized to perfection, by those who knew they possessed something less than normal eyesight and at least one of those youngsters of Fort Myer in 1917, swears to this day that he owes his life to his deafness -- when an enemy bullet in France, penetrated his neck, at the very moment he was leaning over to catch some indistinct word of his Sergeant. Of Porter's sons -- all eventually lieutenants in Uncle Sam's army -- one never left America; one was en route with his troop train to the front on the day the Armistice was proclaimed; and one fought and lived in the mud and shell-holes of war-torn France.

"Dan got his commission, coming out first in his company in the officer's school. He was to be on recruiting service which requires a man with plenty of money which the government will pay back (when ready). He is now booked for overseas dutyas well as I can make out from the newspapers, Walter is in this great drive around Verdun....In regard to the influenza epidemic in Washington, every doctor is worked to death; nurses cannot be gotten, so everyone must look out for themselves... the papers are advertising for pall-bearers, grave diggers, and undertakers are sending out of town for coffins, but don't worry about us....we are all wellwe don't go into stores, street-cars, or in fact anywhere. Churches were closed last Sunday and will continue so....Walter has been in the line of battle since September the sixteenth....Rufus (Lusk) has a wound in the neck....Carlos has been promoted to Captain....(and later) Tuesday we had Dan's card announcing his safe arrival in France; also a letter from Walter who is at present sleeping in shell holes, - but all he complains of is cooties and "no water". The water is so poisoned, it is unsafe to wash one's hands in it."

Dan, the third son of this 9th generation sailed for France with his Tank battalion, October 19, 1918. He had originally entered

military service in May, 1917, as a Candidate for a Commission in the Infantry; in the Spring of 1918 was a "Flying Cadet" at the U. S. Flying School, Memphis, Tennessee; physically disqualified from Aviation he had been discharged and was immediately "Drafted"; and later earned a Lieutenancy in the Tank Corps. As such he sailed for France aboard the S.S. Megantic:

"Aboard the Old White Star Liner, "Megantic", all, as was the custom, were obliged to wear life preservers when not in their berths, and a "flu" mask of gauze over the nose and mouth, as a protection against that scourge, then rampant. Many of these troop transports suffered considerably with Influenza, at that time, but this ship-load had but one death from that malady. Their Convoy containing 23 additional ships, carrying troops and provisions, all in close proximity.....a large American Cruiser and two submarine chasers furnished additional protection, together with the one, or even 6-inch guns on each merchant vessel. From Liverpool, the Battalion entrained for the vicinity of Winchester, and enroute, (this ninth generation) skirted the Marlborough Downs, in Wiltshire, and encamped at "Knotty Ash Camp" near Winchester. At Southampton, the Battalion boarded the Old (American) Fall River boat "Yale" for Havre, (a little over 283 years since Anthony, the first generation, had set out from the same port, for America.) At La Havre, they encamped on a high plateau back of the town, and while waiting train connections at Charmont, en route to Cohors, heard the news of the Armistice.

In May, 1918, the second son had sailed for France as a 2nd Lieutenant. He writes:

"Oct. 24, 1918.I might have gotten a D.S.C. for it, but the shelling was so bad, I couldn't keep up my lines: the wire was cut in 38 places by shell fire before night. I find it is pretty safe in the trenches, not a bit more dangerous than in the artillery areas....Yesterday, I had nothing to do, -- was given a day's rest -- so followed the scriptural injunction of burying the dead. That is, those who were around the building I was living in; -- there was one dead German in my room when I moved in. I buried three German machine gunners who had died at their posts, -- and it was the most disagreeable task I have ever done; -- two had been killed by high explosive shells and when I tried to get the identification tag of one of them, could only find half of it, as a shell had taken away his head and shoulder.

"I also buried two Americans, an Infantryman and a machine gunner. The Infantryman was in a shell hole, had been wounded in the leg, and dressed it himself, and was sitting down resting his head against his gas-mask reading in a Protestant Bible, when another shot killed him. I sent his Bible and some photographs he had in his pocket, back to his family, -- he was in the 30th Infantry, and came from West Virginia. The machine gunner was in a shell hole with his gun, had been shot through the chest and was leaning back against his gun holding a Catholic medal (the Blessed Virgin on one side, and Pope Pius on the other) in his hand before his face, when a rifle bullet passed through his helmet and forehead. I sent the medal back to his family. I buried them all together, just outside my room, and read a few prayers from my prayer book over them (which didn't have any burial service in it).

"There had been heavy fighting in this woods; in one spot, just a few hundred yards from where I was living, I counted 184 dead Americans and Germans, in a place no larger than twice the size of the front lawn at 'Valley View'. However, there are plenty of humorous things, and everyone seems to see the best side of everything. The other day I was watching two 315th Field Artillery men carrying the wounded man across a field, when a shell burst above them; they dropped the wounded man (pieces of the shell struck both of them, but not badly) and dashed to a shell hole near me, but found the man they had been carrying, beat them to it. Got there before they did. The same day, I saw an American using two rifles as crutches, going back to the rear; his leg had been shot off. I said 'You've had pretty hard luck, haven't you?' He laughed and said: 'Well, I can't kick,' and went on down the road. I have been slightly gassed three times, but the only bad effect was 'shooting my lunch' in my mask, which is rather uncomfortable. Well, write again soon. Love.....

"October 27, 1918.

This is a beautiful warm fall morning -- the sun shining bright, and seems like a Sunday morning at 'Valley View'it is very quiet today, only an occasional rattle of machine guns and rifle fire, and a few high explosive shells dropped on two little towns about half a mile to my right and left -- there is nothing in either of the towns except Field Hospitals....(in my front) I have

looked down on a deep valley, on the first buildings I have seen at the front -- untouched by shell fire. From day to day, I have watched this town, with its church and pointed steeple, gradually crumble and fade away, first under our own fire, -- and later under the German fire, until now it looks the same as any other town here....it is very different from the opening days of this drive, when we had separate guns in the front trenches, and occasionally ran the guns by hand up in advance of the Infantry, almost in the German lines and fired point blank. While I presume this method of fighting is no secret (certainly not to the Germans) it is best not to read the last page of this letter to anyone except the family...."

In a letter of October thirty-first, 1918, he writes to his father:

"Am now in B battery....and kept very busy as we have but three officers instead of five. We have been very lucky in regard to men killed and wounded, although one shell hit in the battery yesterday morning, only a few feet from me; it wounded two of my mechanics and one gunner, -- one died before we could get an ambulance.... we have had hard luck with horses, -- have had between 90 and 100 killed. Day before yesterday we got twenty-five new horses and had five killed by one shell that night....I am living in a little hole in the ground about ten feet deep, ten feet long, and four feet wide, covered with sheet iron and ammunition boxes full of dirt. Generally we go to bed at six o'clock, right after supper (unless we are making an attack), and only get to sleep until six till nine or ten....Day before yesterday, I fired my first shot at a German artillery....the rest of the morning I spent shooting up some German machine guns, and small groups of troops moving on the road, -- very good practice for me and for the battery..... The Germans started shelling us just as I finished sealing the letter. The first shot hit just to the right of me, badly wounding one of my men, -- hit him in the leg, cutting the big artery, but I think he will live. During the night I fired 500 shells at some crossroads the Germans were retreating on....

"The Drive started at 5:30 A.M., November first. I was the only officer with the Battery, fired all night before, and fired the barrage from 5:30 until 12:10 -- a seven-hour barrage, shooting 400 rounds per hour, keeping the shells just in advance of the Infantry. As soon as the barrage was over, we packed up, brought up our horses, and were on the road before 1:00 o'clockthe bridges were broken down, thousands of dead horses along the road, dead men in the fields, -- along the road and lying in shell holes by their guns, and what attracted more attention than anything else, was a dog which had been killed by the same shell fragment as a German, and was lying beside him. We had seen so many dead horses and men, that it seemed strange to see any other animal dead....We see Engineers along all the roads, and at all the bridges, -- live ones where the roads need repairing, dead ones, where the roads are repaired. They deserve as much, if not more praise, than the Infantry and shock artillery.....where there were no trenches, we ran our guns by hand in advance of the Infantry line....In one position we were fired on from the front, from the left, and from the right, also from the right rear, were in full view of the Germans, but got a direct hit on a German 77 gun and a machine gun emplacement before we pulled the gun back to some woods to hide. We are always moving, and always it is at night....We have had over three-fourth of our horses blown to pieces, -- but very light casualties among the men....the other night one caisson of ammunition pulled by six horses was hit by a shell, killing 5 of the horses, three of these having men on them, and didn't injure but one man, and that man was not on a horse, not even near them.

"November the ninth, was very quiet except for a few hours of shelling when the Germans dropped some pretty close to the guns; one of their shells struck within fifteen feet of my two best sergeants, but by the Grace of God, didn't explode....Got a good sleep until two A.M. when the phone rang and I got orders to move the battery; that the horses would be up at 3:30, that I must be on the road at four; that we would cross the river with the infantry and attack the Germans on the east. Let me tell you, it is no easy job, on an icy cold morning, with ice on all the shell holes, with only a film at the top frozen, the mud three feet deep, a raw cold wind blowing, in absolute darkness,

no lights permitted, -- to move a battery in an hour and a half. The men had to be gotten out of their dug-outs, roll their blankets, put the guns in order to travel, take down and pack the very large heavy camouflage nets and poles, load ammunition, and a thousand other details to attend to....We passed through three or four French towns, one of them good-sized, all more or less shot up by the Germans, (and by us), and finally came to the bridge the engineers had built, where we crossed the Meuse River, a little after dawn. Luckily there was heavy fog which hid us from the Germans....continued northward, taking advantage of the fog, passing two or three French towns, where we saw a few dead Germans, and large number of dead horsesThe Germans were shelling the town as we came up, but in spite of the shell-fire a considerable number of the inhabitants were in the street to welcome us -- most of them dazed, others delirious or even insane with joy at the departure of the Germans. They were the first civilians; -- the first women and children we had seen in two months. There were two or three old women, where the road enters the town, serving coffee to those who could stop and get it; -- coffee they had hidden and saved for four years and three months, -- saving it for the first friendly soldiers to enter....We took our positions in a cabbage field just beyond the village cemetery. We had had nothing to eat since three o'clock the day before, and had since then done a good day's work and had marched over twenty kilometers through ice and mud....After getting the guns laid, and the men fed, and the camouflage over the guns, I scouted around and selected a big barn, and the last two houses in the village for the men and myself to live in.... While eating breakfast the Germans started shelling the town again, one shot killing four of our men, and the last shot they fired (this was the time of the Armistice) landed in the street among some civilians, -- blew the head off the town doctor, cut off the leg of an old woman, and injured three others. That was the last shot the Germans fired, and in a few minutes I received word that the Armistice was to go into effect at eleven o'clock. I didn't believe it, but finally got orders not to fire after eleven. Shortly afterwards I got orders to start firing at some roads the Germans were on, and continued until the Armistice was effective. It seemed to me like a useless destruction of life, and waste of ammunition; and I was glad when just as I was going to fire, other

orders cancelled it. Since then, I, as well as everyone else here, have been going around in a sort of dazed condition, cannot really believe it; and yet everything is absolutely quiet, not a shot, not a shell to be heard."

The war was over, perhaps, too soon for many. Writes Porter's wife, to one of the three sons; shortly after the Armistice: "Your disappointment, in not getting over seas is a great sorrow to me; -- when I consider the long list of killed and wounded, and the broken pieces of humanity returned here, I feel we should give up cheerfully our personal ambitions....even though in a disinterested way, Peace has come too soon. Germany should have been beaten on her own soil, and practically exterminated except as a group of small separate nations. As it is, she will give us more trouble yet...."

In the meanwhile, the girls at home (their husbands both in France) were serving with the Red Cross or with the Canteen Section on duty at the Railroad Station in Washington where the wounded were being transferred from the trains to Walter Reed Hospital. The War in Washington had quite overwhelmed the city. In order to provide for suitable accommodations for many of the war workers from afar, there had been enacted certain landlord and tenant laws, which caused much dissatisfaction among the people of the town. According to Porter's wife: "Mrs. L. is one victim. She sold the Somerset Place house and bought a house in town; -- in the kindness of her heart she has let the tenant stay a month longer; and now that she has returned from the West, she cannot get possession. She has gone to court, but the present occupant is 'protected', and the only way she, (whose son has just been wounded in France), can get possession of her house again, is to be a 'war worker' herself so that she has just recently gotten a place in the War department and works from 8:30 until 4:30 for the house she has already bought and paid for. She is but one of thousands. Someone had P. W.'s house at a nominal rent of \$50 -- and the tenant sublet it at \$250 -- and when she returned with an invalided mother, could not get the house back, although the lease was for the summer only, and had expired. The people in Washington having no vote, seem always to suffer."*

In the meanwhile, following the Armistice, the American Army moved into Germany. One of the 9th generation in January 1919, writes:

"This town is on the border of the division between

* See Appendix 153

the American and English armies of Occupation. There are Canadians billeted in the next town just a few minutes walk from here. All these stories you have heard about the Germans starving to death are all 'bunk'; they have more to eat, more in the country and towns, than the French had; even in Brittany or around Bordeaux; in fact they have more than the average American ate before the war. The only thing they haven't is coffee, white bread, (their brown bread is as good as white bread), lard and sugar, and candy....Most of the younger men in town were killed in the War. But they have enough older men and boys to get along alright. All those that came back from the Army go around in their uniform; cut off the buttons to make them civilian clothes. Their uniforms are of much better material and warmer than those we have. All through Germany and in every town I have been in, one cannot help noticing the difference between them and the French towns. Practically every town in Germany has running water, something unheard of in France, except in those towns occupied by the Germans....the insides of the houses are an even greater contrast....the furniture in the sitting room and bedrooms is better than those in France as are also the bedclothes, and many of the houses have steam heat. We see a few private automobiles, -- better than the average automobile in New York or Washington, and occasionally a private carriage with equipment and driver in livery....I find that many more Germans speak English than do the French."

At "Valley View" after the great war, there were many gay parties.* But always following a great world disturbance, many -- unwilling perhaps to return to less exciting ways -- found need for further stimulus. The most dangerous, perhaps, of these -- although at the same time probably the most popular -- was speculation in the field of finance. In America, this ran its full course, just a little more than a decade after peace was finally declared. And the ninth generation of this family, while by no means escaping the financial gambling common to the times, dealt also with more tangible adventuring.

One, a young physician, lately completing his war-interrupted medical course, at old Charity Hospital in New Orleans, spent a year, with his young bride, in an infested malarial swamp of southwest

* See Appendix 154

Louisiana, as a surgeon to a saw mill camp miles from town; -- where horses, the only means of conveyance in the rainy season, -- were too frequently obliged to swim the swollen creeks carrying in the saddle the only physician for miles around. The youngest son returned to Paris; -- to art and architecture, and lived for a time with his cousin, Wolcott Waggaman at the charming residence of Mme. Renédant and her sister at 22 Rue de Fosse, not many steps from the Pantheon and the Luxemburg, and close to the quarters where his grandfather had lived, also as a student, almost a hundred years before. One sister, alternated between New Orleans and the Canadian Rockies; another to Italy and the Mediterranean. And the second son joined an expedition to the Gold Coast of South America.

In the summer of 1920, the front pages of the American journals spelled out in large letters that "Secret Soviet-German Pact Puts Red War Up To America -- Officials Prompt the U. S. To Protect The Validity Of Victory In The World War -- Suggest Using A.E.F. Brigade To Back Up Poles in the North."

And soon after, one of this generation, yet unsatisfied with his experiences in the great war, received the following letter:

"In reply to your letter of....in the matter of enlisting into the Polish Army, I beg to inform you, that at the present time, the Polish government, is unable to avail itself of your worthy and noble offer. If in the future, however, there will be any recruiting in America for volunteers to serve in the Polish Army, I will be glad to inform you without delay."

But the second son, in Dutch Guiana, South America, was living the adventures of that far away land where: "breakfast is never served before eleven, generally eleven thirty or twelve; they eat no lunch; have tea at five in the afternoon; and dinner about eight. Coffee and rolls are served at six-thirty, in the morning, in bed.... Leaving Port au Prince, we kept close to the Trinidad shore, passing some beautiful scenery, very mountainous, and covered with dense tropical vegetation; and passed by a large number of very small islands rising out of the sea....one of the larger islands we passed was a convict island, with large stone prisons along the hills. The water here was filled with sharks, which they feed, so as to keep the convicts from attempting to escape by sea; and over the island were flocks of vultures; it was not a pleasant sight. --- We expect to be here (Georgetown) all this week; and take the French Mail for Paramaribo, wait there for some time, and take the Dutch

steamer for Albina, where we will be sometime before going up the Marowine river...."

".....I got here (French Guiana) at last on Saturday, Nov. 27th, 1920, just thirty six days after leaving New York, and am now permanently settled at Forrestiere on the French side of the Marowine (or Maroni, as the French call it) river. The river here is very clear, about a mile and a half broad, and is the boundary line between French and Dutch territory. Forrestiere was formerly one of the French convict camps, but was abandoned some five or six years ago because so many of the convicts escaped to Suriname by swimming the river.... The (old) pier we still use, though it looks as if it may be washed away any time; and the old convict barracks (30 x 100) now, with a new palm leaf roof and woven grass screens for walls, makes a very comfortable dining room and office, still leaving room enough for four large bedrooms, and a six foot porch all around. The other buildings which were built by our Djoukas and negro laborers, of rough poles and plaited palm-leaves, consist of a small one-story house, the ware-house and store, cook house, a barracks where the negro servants sleep, a big open shed for the Djoukas, a barracks for the Frenchmen, a barracks for the negro laborers, a chicken house, and a few scattered one-room huts on the edge of the jungle, built by the escaped convicts so they can escape quickly when the man-hunter comes around....The Frenchmen, here, are divided into two classes: the "liberes", or ex-convicts, who have served their terms in the penitentiary but must remain there ten or twenty years, or in many cases for life in French Guiana, and are forbidden to leave the country. The other class is the escaped convicts, who, if not captured inside of five years, become a "libere". The French government has many "Man-Hunters", who go in canoes up and down the river and creeks picking up escaped convicts, and receiving ten francs for each one they kill or capture. The man-hunter brings two convicts whom he can trust, with him, and uses them to paddle his canoe, and as decoys to capture the escaped men. The black population here is divided into three very distinct classes:- and there is more difference between each of these classes, than there is between the negro and the white man in the Southern states. In the first class are the Djoukas, or Bush negroes, -- the descendants of slaves who escaped two or three hundred years ago from the sugar plantations along the coast. They have returned to the old African tribal customs, but they have a religion and language entirely their own. Their language, which is called "Taki-Taki" is a peculiar combination of English, Dutch, African, French, Indian, East Indian or Hindustani and Chinese. The talk is a kind of sing-song -- sounding like Chinese -- a single

sound having a half dozen different meanings according to the tone in which it is uttered. Their religion is a form of paganism, having many different gods and goddesses of varying importance and power, -- all of them being inferior to the great God and his wife and son: -- this chief has no name -- is merely called the great God. His wife is Verge Marie, and their son is called Jesus. The other lesser gods, such as the god of Rain, god of Thunder, etc., have different names, most of them of African origin, though a few of them sound a good deal like the names of our Christian saints. The main article of clothing of the Djouka man consists of a thin cord like a shoe lace, tied around the waist, and a piece of colored cloth going between the legs, about four inches broad and 18 inches long, held up by the string in front and behind. Their only other article of clothing is a pleated straw hat, painted red or green or blue. The hat, however, is only worn on dress occasions or when they go to town. In the town, the authorities make the Djoukas wear clothes, -- these generally consist of a short piece of red and white or blue and white striped cloth draped around the shoulders. The women, if unmarried, wear a shoe string around the waist, with an apron 4 inches square in front. If married, they wear a sash around the waist...The Djoukas are divided into three tribes, corresponding roughly to the parts of Africa from which they originally came. One tribe is of tall muscular men, another of medium sized men, and the third, of short thickset men; -- all of them as black as the ace of spades. Each tribe has its own Chief, and there is another Chief, head of all three tribes. The office of the Chief of the tribe is kept in the same family, but the law of succession is very peculiar. When a Chief dies, the leadership passes to the eldest son of the dead chief's eldest sister. In this way they are sure of having a Chief of the same strain of blood, whatever might be the morals of the chief's wife....The rest of the black population is composed of our negro laborers (about twenty) whom we brought up from the towns along the coast of British and French Guiana. Our Store-Keeper is in a class by himself; - he is a 'coloured man', not a 'nigger'."

Guiana was even then the land of surface gold, Bush Negroes, tropical diseases, and Devil's Island; a land where the white men grow beards, listen to the monkeys chattering in the jungle, shoot sixteen-foot boa constrictors, and eat tropical food served by quasi-liberated Frenchmen from the penal colony. Here it was where the jungles close in upon the incompleated trail, and where, they say, lies a fabulous store of surface gold in the hills beyond.

On the morning of October 30th, 1922, Benito Mussolini and his band of black-shirted Fascists marched peacefully into Rome. From a hotel balcony nearby the city gates, Porter's daughter, one of the ninth generation, and incidentally, a close school-girl friend of Elinor Hoyt, the celebrated authoress, witnessed the beginning of a new regime in Italy. She, and her mother, were spectators of the only disturbance of that entry into Rome; a lone Communist, later apprehended elsewhere in the city, made a temporary escape through the first floor of the hotel in which they were residing. Among the distinguished residents of the Holy City, at that time was Guglielmo Marconi. From him, several months later, came a letter addressed from his yacht, "S. Y. Elettra".

"I would be so glad if, together with your son and daughter, you could come on board tomorrow, Saturday morning, at eleven. It would give me great pleasure to meet you."

And then in time, the fever of adventure over for the moment, they all returned to Washington and "Valley View".* Shortly, the Great Depression, - as it was called, and which was but one of a series of similar previous financial disturbances in America, was at hand. There were few, however, as frank and honest as was a daughter of old New Orleans, who, in reply to a friend's sympathy at the loss of a large fortune, replied "Not at all, my dear; I lost nothing; I spent it all". And this, perhaps, was the true story of so many. To the sons and daughters of New Orleans and the old South, remembering as they did, the tales from their parents and grandparents of the desolate days following the civil war, the Crash of 1929, and the Depression was not the drastic or horrible thing it was to so many other Americans.

Another half decade passes. Whatever lies beyond the horizon? Be it good or evil, it will nevertheless constitute some great new adventure, which in due time will be properly chronicled and find its niche in the history to come.

The ninth and tenth generations still live on in the fair land to which their ancestor came three hundred years ago. The ten generations, in America, have seen a great united nation steadily arise from humble and precarious beginnings.* They, with so many other families in America, have lived through the struggles and

* See Appendix 155 * See Appendix 156

adventures, hardships and pleasures, the blood-shed and turmoils which in the end have resulted in the firm establishment of a great people who look forward through the probabilities of further commotions and temporary mishaps to an ever glorious, though ever-changing, destiny.

And, as into the set-up of the American nation itself, so, also into the make-up of this American family, have gone the heritage of Cavalier, Puritan, Quaker, Huguenot and Roman Catholic. In common with all, both old and new arrivals on these American shores, there is the same background of yeoman and gentry, noble and peasant. And in their veins, in greater or lesser proportions, runs the adventurous blood of the French, Spanish, German, Swede, Scot, Welsh, Irish, Italian and Dutch,*- all blending harmoniously, with the ancient Blood of an Englishman.

* See Appendix 157

A P P E N D I X

-1-

"Puritanism", said Lord Morley "came from the depths. It was a manifestation of elements in human nature that are indestructible ...it sprang from aspirations that breathe in men and women of many faiths and communions." And, wrote Dryden - "If Puritanism did not fashion an Apollo, or a Venus with an apple, it fashioned virile Englishmen."

The English King and the Archbishop, in their zeal to break up Puritanism, did but provoke it..."the worse weapon which they could have chosen to beat it down....and many men who had before been loose and careless, began...to enter into a more serious consideration of it". (from Harlequin Miscellany)

Of those 'Puritans' and their Associates, who emigrated to America, Dalby Thomas wrote in 1690; "Settlement was made in the Northern parts of America, to the great increase of good shipping in the Kingdom; by this means a general notion of having enough profitable lands in those parts of the world, for nothing, so infected the whole Kingdom, that not only the necessitous and loose part of the nation flocked thither, but many non-conformists did solicit his Majesty for leave to make a settlement together, under priviledges and liberties, both in civil and church matters, by a Constitution of their own. This combination King James prudently consented to, and confirmed by his Letters-Patent, wisely foreseeing that tho' a species of a Commonwealth was thereby introduced into his Dominions, yet the dependence thereof must be upon the Crown for protection, and consequently that Part of his Subjects, then called PURITANS, would not be totally lost to the Nation, as they must be if driven forever to remain in foreign Countries."

The Puritan Migration to New England.

It has been said that fully half of the English people who migrated to America under the auspices of the Puritan movement, were puritans only in the broad sense that about half of all Englishmen were Puritans in some shade or other. The whole movement, however, has been judged by the type which were the most radical and trouble-making. And, according to Donald A. Roberts, in a survey of a book "The Marian Exiles", appearing in the New York Times;- "Crusading cartoonists and politicians endowed with more lung power than information have tried hard to make the people of the United States dislike the Puritans."

APPENDIX - 2

"...Since the Art of Printing was found out...all Sorts of Learning have been diffused and cultivated, Than in a Thousand Years before...finding out abstruse Secrets, and discovering the hidden Mysteries of Art and Nature...we come to know the Lives and Actions of the renowned Worthies of the first Ages of the World....This noble Mystery has illustriously shown its Usefulness in the Assistance it has given to the Propagation of the true Religion... But it is not by Printing of the Holy Bible only...but also by emitting many other good Books, and useful Tracts into the World, whereby the Errors of Popery have been discovered and confuted,...:-

'The noble Art of Printing found
No sooner, but it ROME did wound;
And ever since, with nimble Ray,
Spreads Knowledge to a Perfect Day"

-Thus writes one Mr. Francis Burges, a Printer, on September 27, 1701, indicating the influence the art of printing may have exerted in moulding the opinions of so many of the English people who became "Puritans". According to this same author, Printing was first brought into England in the year 1471, and was for many years accounted the King's Prerogative as much as was coining... "And it being first set up in a Church occasioned all Printing-Houses in England to be called CHAPELS, which Name they retain to this Day" (1701)." No doubt many of the yeomen and gentry who could read, were impressed quite as much with the written account of the abuses said to be prevalent in England at the time, as they were with actually witnessing those alleged abuses. The four cardinal topics were Extravagance in apparel, drunkenness, lawyers, and popery:- and these were the basic reasons for what became known as Puritanism.

APPENDIX - 3

"Come, my friends,
'Tis not too late to seek a newer world.
Push off, and sitting well in order, smite
The sounding furrows; for my purpose holds
To sail beyond the sunset, and the paths
Of all the western stars, until I die.
It may be that the gulfs will wash us down;
It may be we shall touch the Happy Isles
And see the great Achilles, whom we knew.
Tho' much is taken, much abides; and tho'
We are not now that strength which in old days
Moved Earth and Heaven; that which we are, we are;

One equal temper of heroic hearts
Made weak by time and fate, but strong in will
To strive, to seek, to find, and not to yield."

-Tennyson.

America, was by no means an unknown quarter of the world, even to generations before. The first account of America printed in the English language, was done in 1511: "Here aforetymes in the yere of our Lorde god M.CCCC. xcvi and so be we with shyppes of Lusseboene (Liston) sayled oute of Portyngale thorough the commaundement of the Kynge Emanuel. So haue we had our vyage. For by fortune ylandes ouer the great see with the great charge and daunger so haue we at the laste founde oon lordshyp where we sayled well. lx.C mylee (mile) by the cooste of Selandes there we at laste went a lande but that lande is not nowe knowen for there haue no masters wryten thereof nor it knowethe and it is named Armenica (America)."

"New" England, that part of the new world where Anthony settled, was so named mainly because of its geographical resemblance to "old" England. Less than 15 years before Anthony's arrival in the New world, this portion was believed to be an island - "as far as we can yet find out ---being cut out of the main land of America as (old) England is cut out from the main land of Europe".

Massachusetts was the English corruption of the Indian word "Mais Tchusaeg" - meaning the country this side of the hills.

APPENDIX 4

According to Fuller, the yeoman:

"...wears russet clothes, but makes golden payments, having tin in his buttons and silver in his pockets... In his own country, he is the main man in Juries. He seldom goes far abroad, and his credit stretches further than his travels. He goes not to Londen, but se defendo, - to save himself a fine, being returned of a jury; where, seeing the King once, he prays for him ever afterwards.."

Joseph Addison (Sir Roger de Coverly Papers; 1711) writes: an honest man; ...just within the game-act, and qualified to kill an hare or a pheasant: he knocks down his dinner with his gun twice or thrice a week: and by that means lives much cheaper than those who have not so good as estate as himself. He would be a good neighbor if he did not destroy so many partridges: in short he is a very sensible man: shoots flying: and has been several times foreman of the petty jury."

In referring to the Yeoman of the early 17th century, R. H. Gretton; The English Middle class; London, 1919;- "It is not to the freeman, but to the man who gradually converted service into rent, and rent into freehold by purchase, that we must look for the origin of the yeoman ...". "The freeman of the (ancient) manor was tied to the manor.."

According to Hallam's Constitutional History of England, referring to the late 15th, and early 17th century, and the classes of persons in England: "The peers alone, a small body, varying from about fifty to eighty, enjoyed the priviledges of aristocracy; which, except that of sitting in parliament, were not very considerable, far less oppressive. All below them, even their children, were commoners, and in the eye of the law, equal to each other. In the gradation of ranks, which, if not legally recognized, must still subsist through the necessary inequalities of birth and wealth, we find the gentry, or principle landowners, many of them distinguished by knighthood, and all by bearing coat armour, but without any exclusive priviledge, the yeomanry, or small freeholders and farmers, a very numerous and respectable body, some occupying their own estates, some those of landlords; the burgesses and inferior inhabitants of trading towne; and lastly, the peasantry and laborers."

APPENDIX 5

It was, indeed, a propitious time for the enlistment of Mercenaries or Allies from the region between the Rhine and the Channel; It has been said, that many of the lesser sons, of even noble families in that region - due to economic disturbances of the day - were, in many instances forced to a choice between becoming Courtiers, Highwaymen, or Mercenaries in Foreign armies. And besides Edward III had prohibited the export of wool from England, thus practically forcing Flanders, - even if otherwise disposed - to cooperate with the English in the Hundred Years War.

It has been said that most of those even of the upper class of Netherlanders or 'Germans' who settled in England after the demobilization of Edward III's army in France, were well content to become English yeomanry.

The Englishman is distinct from the Welsh, the Scots and the Irish, and even the people of Cornwall. What is now England was once the habitat of people of the Celtic race, who spoke a language similar to Welsh or Gaelic. Following the departure of the Roman Legions,

a 'third' people invaded the land and they drove the natives and those of the Romans who remained, back to the hills of Wales and Cornwall. These new invaders were the Saxons, a wild, venturesome people from the eastern shores of what was to become Germany. Anglaland was the name of one of the areas from whence they came. Later the Normans from the coast of France invaded the place now called England. However, from time to time, other migrations from the Old England on the continent came over. This was especially true during the time of Edward III; these people were closely akin to the earlier Saxons, both having the same origin on the continent. It was in this wave that the Mors family came to S.E. England. This occurred at a time when the land was becoming organized as a unit of peoples, and a common language was in the process of forming. While the French tongue - for a while the common language among the Norman conquerors, - was still prevalent, the English language, especially in Suffolk and Norfolk, was more Saxon than in other parts of the territory. Sometimes in America, the people of Wales, and even of Scotland are referred to as "English". The people of Wales and Scotland will quickly resent this quite as much as Americans not of the New England states will resent being called 'yankees'. The following is an example of the tongue which the English yeoman of the 14th century spoke:-(Time of Edward III)

The translation.

"Lordynges that be now here,
If ye will listen and lere
All the story of Inglande

Lords, that be now here,
If you will listen and learn
All the story of England

.....
 For tho that in this lond wonn,
 That the Latyn ne Frankys conn
 For to haf solace and gamen
 In felawsship when they sitt
 samen."

.....
For those that are in this land
Who know neither Latin nor French,
For to have solace and delight
When they sit together in
fellowship."

(From a history of English Literature by Frederick A. Laing)
London.

The great majority of the English who peopled America in the early 17th century came directly or indirectly from Southeast England. (East Anglia)

APPENDIX 6

The Ancient House of Mors on the Continent of Europe

"...The fortunes of the House of Mors afford a

striking example.....From 1414 until 1463 Dietrich von Mors was Archbishop of Cologne, and therefore, the Duke of Westphalia, and Count of Arnsberg.....His eldest brother Frederick was Count de Mors, and his youngest brother John married the heiress of Mahlberg-Lahr.....the House of Mors seemed to dominate all north-western Germany.... In 1450, the House of Mors was opposed by that of HoyaJohn of Cleve supported the Hoya cause....The long struggle (weakened the House of Mors)...the gainers being the Duke of Cleve and the Papacy".

-Vol. VIII: The close of the Middle Ages; The
Cambridge Medieval history; McMillan Co.

In 1358, Sir Hugo De Mors, appears in English history as an "Englishman by Obedience", in the service of the English king Edward III, during the Hundred Years War in France and the Netherlands. His Coat-of-Arms are identical with that device of the early Mors family in East Anglia (Suffolk and Norfolk). About that time, - when Edward III encouraged so many of the Netherlands to settle in East Anglia, the name of Mors appears for the first time in England, where, according to records, most of these Germanic families - due to many factors - easily fitted in as independent owners of farm lands; : i.e. yeomanry.

Family History; before the American Migration.

APPENDIX 7

The family from which sprung the American emigrant Anthony, had originally come from Suffolk where it had been planted during the 14th century. The name was spelled, at first, Mors. Other early spellings, some of which still persist in America, were Morss, Mosse, and - (but only for brief periods) Moss. The suffix 'de' was dropped very early. It is of interest to note the findings of one Researcher in that section who stated in substance: "In East Anglia (Suffolk, Norfolk, etc.) there is one peculiarity about the common surnames. A large proportion are monosyllabic. This singularity is so striking that it forces itself upon the most casual observer. Perhaps it is owing to the large infusion of names of Dutch or Flemish origin. In course of time the 'de' and other suffixes were dropped as the families became thoroughly anglicized." And to quote from another observer "It has been said that the Germanic immigrants to England brought with them something of their abstract, theoretical and poetical natures, which has made so many of them so noted in inventions. And their pride of family - so inherent in them - in addition to their certain lack of shrewdness and practical ability made their early associations with their new fellow countrymen, perhaps a little more distant than was for their own good.

It was, therefore, natural for them to become readily identified with the yeomanry class."

The ancestors of Anthony Morse, the American emigrant, were originally from Suffolk. The branch to which he belonged, however, some decades after the "War of the Roses", and about the time of the accession of Henry VIII to the throne, settled in Wiltshire. The main stem of the family, however, remained in Suffolk and Norfolk, and by the time of the Puritan migration to the new world several had become of the gentry class. Among these was Charles Morse of Weybred, 'gentlemen'; Robert Morse of Tivitshall St. Mary, 'gentleman', and Lionel Morse of Thorpe, 'gentleman', and others. Robert, Thomas, Anthony, William and Edward, were the common given names throughout all branches. Probably all in Wiltshire, in 1635, were yeoman.

The grandfather of Anthony Morse who came to America, (the first generation of this narrative) was William Morse, - if we accept the logical interpretation of relationship as revealed by the ancient Wills. This William Morse, the elder, of Radbourne-Cheney, Wiltshire, yeoman, died in the year 1578, and left considerable property to be divided, somewhat unequally, between his four sons, one of whom was Anthony's father, also named Anthony. Among the properties of William Morse, 'yeoman', was 'Edwards House', lands in Haydon-Weeke, Moreton and Pyton, and farms in Weeke, in Goulding and in Radbourne. At his death he left money to the poor, and bequests for the reparation of his parish church and for the reparation of the Cathedral at Salisbury. For some reason not now known, he left but little to his son Anthony, - (the father of the Anthony who emigrated to America), except a small annuity, his "Third Bed with all the Things Belonging to it", some cash, and "A Young Roan Mare". After the estate was settled, young Anthony, less than 21 years of age at his father's death, apparently removed to the village of Marlborough, nearby, where he acquired a dwelling house, some estate, two marriages and children. This Anthony, who also described himself as a "yeoman", died in 1620, leaving money for the poor, a dwelling house in Marlborough, some estate, a widow and children. Ten shillings was left to 'Mr. Hearne..to preach at his funeral; and ten shillings was left for the reparation of St. Peter's church in Marlborough; which stood at the west end of 'High Street'. This church, with its high pinnacled tower is probably still standing. At the other end of 'High Street' was the old church of St. Mary the Virgin, of early Norman architecture with a low square tower. In both of these churches are many records of the family. The village of Marlborough consisted of one broad street-High Street-crossed by lanes of minor importance. Many of the ancient dwellings were irregularly construc-

ted and had high curiously carved gables.

At the time of their father's death, Anthony and William who were destined to go to America were 14 and 6 years old, respectively. There were two other children, and a fifth yet unborn. But Anthony and William were step-children of their father's widow, who, some eight months later was to marry a neighbor Thomas Quarrington. Their own mother had died when they were quite young.

In 1635, fifteen years after the death of their father, Anthony and William, then aged 29 and 21 respectively, left their native village to join the Puritan migration to Massachusetts Bay. When these two young men, (both shoemakers) set out for overseas, they left behind them half brothers and sisters, uncles, aunts, and cousins; and for the time being their young wives and young children; -who, however, were soon to join them in the new adventure. The other members of the Morse family who emigrated to America in that decade were from Norfolk, Essex or Suffolk. All, however, were yeomen and related one to another. And all had cherished that ancient 'device', simple in design, - the Morse Coat of Arms, - which is identical with the Coat-of-Arms of Sir Hugo Mors (or De Mors), and " ..the fact of the Coat-of-Arms of Sir Hugo and that of the Mors or Morse family of Suffolk (etc) were one and the same and ran back to the time of Sir Hugo, has given rise to the generally accepted conclusion and recognition of Sir Hugo as the progenitor of the family. (Carpenter 1937)."

Among the earlier Morse wills in Suffolk, was that of Nicholas Mors, alias de mors (1478), who Bequeathed his Soul to God Almighty, the blessed Ste. Mary the Virgin, and all the holy saints in Heaven; bequests to the High alter of St. James church; to several bodies of friars; to the reparation of the churches of Hengrave and Fornham; and to his wife, Alice, his house in Bury St. Edmunds called "The Morne". While the will itself was in latin; the English language, as preserved by Chaucer - also a member of Edward III's army in France - was the current tongue of the people. Chaucer's lines, as follows, are indeed not inappropriate to the text of this book:

"Me thyngketh it accordaunt to resoun
To tellé you al the condicioun
Of ech of hem, so as it seemèd me,
And whiche they weren, and of what degree,
And eek in what array that they were inne."

.....
Through all these centuries, both in England and America, the family of Morse, have preserved amongst themselves an ancient emblem - said to have been the original insignia or 'coat-of-arms' of its original English founder Hugo de Mors. When members of the Morse family in

England have been knighted or awarded arms, it has been the custom for the new arms to carry at least one detail from the original insignia. In America, where there is no formal registration of such emblems, the family - as do many other American families, - preserve the original emblem intact. The Morse colors are red, black and silver.

APPENDIX 8

It has been estimated that in the mid-1600's the population of England was about 5 Million (or but a fourth as many as in France).

Liberal arts.....	9,000	Lawyers.....	15,000
Army and Navy.....	9,000	"Gentlemen".....	16,000
Public Officials..	10,000	Yeomen.....	180,000
Clergy.....	10,000	Town Dwellers..	1,500,000
Merchants.....	10,000	Farm Laborers..	2,500,000

APPENDIX 9

Twice the dimensions of the "Mayflower", the "James", in size was about comparable to a modern 150 ft. yacht: the "Queen Mary" is about 200 times the size of the "James". In voyages of 1635, food and water was rationed; the food was generally ship biscuit, salt meat, peas and cheese. Passengers were advised to remain on deck as much as possible and to keep their cabins sprinkled with Rosemary or vinegar. The "fare" to America, in 1635 was, for adults, £ 6; equal in the present day currency to about \$150.00.

Among others from Wiltshire who emigrated to America in that decade, were Francis West, Randall Holden, John Green, Roger Eastman, William Worcestor, Christopher Avery, Nathaniel Merrill, Henry Webb, Nicholas Noyes, Thomas Thatcher, John Boyley, John Cogswell, and John Richmond. These all settled in the Massachusetts Bay Colony. From the same English shire, to Virginia, went John White, John Woodbridge, George Lodlow, James Clack and the Bartlett family.

The "James" was but one of the several vessels which plied between England and the Massachusetts Bay, during that decade when great bulk of yeomen families left their native shores to found in the new world the first overseas portion of the first British Empire. Among this fleet were:

The "Hopewell"	The "Great Hope"
The "Susan and Ellen"	The "Bachelor"

On the one hand, it is true that the...
On the other hand, it is true that the...
In the case of the...
The...
The...

APPENDIX

The following table shows the results of the...
The following table shows the results of the...

1. The first...	2. The second...
3. The third...	4. The fourth...
5. The fifth...	6. The sixth...
7. The seventh...	8. The eighth...
9. The ninth...	10. The tenth...

APPENDIX

The following table shows the results of the...
The following table shows the results of the...
The following table shows the results of the...
The following table shows the results of the...
The following table shows the results of the...
The following table shows the results of the...
The following table shows the results of the...
The following table shows the results of the...
The following table shows the results of the...
The following table shows the results of the...

The following table shows the results of the...
The following table shows the results of the...
The following table shows the results of the...
The following table shows the results of the...
The following table shows the results of the...
The following table shows the results of the...
The following table shows the results of the...
The following table shows the results of the...
The following table shows the results of the...
The following table shows the results of the...

The following table shows the results of the...
The following table shows the results of the...
The following table shows the results of the...
The following table shows the results of the...
The following table shows the results of the...
The following table shows the results of the...
The following table shows the results of the...
The following table shows the results of the...
The following table shows the results of the...
The following table shows the results of the...

The "James"	The "Blessing"
The "Increase"	The "Elizabeth and Dorcas"
The "Truelove"	The "Mary and John"
The "Elizabeth"	The "Diligent"
The "Planter"	The "Frances"
The "Elizabeth and Ann"	The "Speedwell"
The "Hercules"	The "William and Frances"
The "Lion"	The "Rainbow"
The "Hector"	The "Martin"
The "Defence"	The "Bevis"
The "Angel Gabriel"	The "Griffin"
The "Abigail"	The "Confidence"
	The "Paule"

In 1640, and after ten years of considerable trans-oceanic activity, the Great Migration from England ceased. This Migration, as a great movement, has been compared to the Crusades to the Holy Land, centuries before.

Passenger List of the ship "James", William Cooper, Master.

There were, in all 53 passengers, including several families, many with servants and 4 or 5 servants. Some 14 of the passengers settled in Newbury.

Andrews, --	Levage, --
Autrum, --	Morse, Anthony
Batt, Nicholas	Morse, William
Brown, Thomas	Musslewhite, John
Carpenter, --	Pithouse, --
Cousins, --	Parker, --
Colman, Thomas	Paddy, --
Davyes, --	Pike, John
Emery, John	Parsons, --
Emery, Anthony	Rose, (Ross) --
Field, --	Smale (Small), --
Goddard, --	Shafflin, --
Greene, John, surgeon	Scoates, --
Hawes, Edward	Salter, --
Hide, --	Smith, George
Holt, Nicholas	Thatcher, Anthony
Ingles, --	Verren, --
King, --	Woodman, Hercules
Knight, Richard	Walker, --
Knight, John	

The early English in America called their temporary huts, "Wigwams", in deference, no doubt, to the vocabulary of their new environment. The word, it has been said was the English corruption of a standard Indian word which actually sounded more like "Wetnomuch", meaning "Home". While it is difficult to conceive how the pronunciation could be so different, one must remember that even today, certain native or foreign names are not infrequently, (one might say purposely), muddled by we English speaking people. Examples are the pronunciation given so often to French names during the world war, by the English and American troops. If a present day observer will follow the life and activities of the modern English speaking people as they come in direct contact with foreign and native populations, he will grasp a good deal of the same reactions which existed between the English and the natives in 17th century America.

From the standpoint of type of habitations, there were three great groups of Indians on the North American continent. Those of the 'plains', where wood was scarce, built conical tepees; those in the southwest lived in caves dug in the side of a hill or cliff; and those in the Atlantic sea-board - the ones first contacted by the early English colonists, - built their dwellings, (which were called Wigwams, or waginogans), out of barks of trees fastened on slender poles. These were usually 10 feet in width, and extended to a depth suitable to accomodate the needs of the family occupying the structure. In the top was the 'smoke-hole', about 2 feet square, immediately below which, on the floor of the hut, was a shallow trench for the fire. The bark covering of the hut was in strips about 3 feet in width: these were usually packed up and transported to whichever new location they had occasion to remove.

The early English, until they were finally settled in their Elizabethan houses, copied this type of architecture; often substituting canvas or sails for the bark covering.

APPENDIX 11

That the Puritans of the Massachusetts Bay were justified in their insistence that it was necessary in maintaining political peace in their community, to deny those of other religion beliefs leave to live among them, was clearly revealed by what actually happened in the colony of Maryland. The Roman Catholics in Maryland, having invited Puritans and those of other oppressed religions into their Palatinate, were soon to pay the price of their hospitality. In a short time they were outnumbered. The newer, or Puritan element, having sided with Cromwell - as would be expected - set up their own government at Annapolis, and defied the "Papists" authority. A "Catholic" army of some hundred men, under the command of Governor

Stone, acting for Lord Baltimore, came to battle with the more numerous army under Captain Fuller. With drums beating, and loudly shouting "Come out ye Rogues, Ye Roundhead Dogs", they advanced towards the Puritan host. It was said the contest was "Fierce and Sharp", and that a third of Stone's men were killed or wounded by the entrenched force, greater in numbers. Several of Lord Baltimore's army were executed by Drum-head courtmartial, others condemned to be shot, and in the end the few survivors fined heavily and their estates confiscated by the victorious Puritan forces. The battle occurred in March of 1655, and Puritan observers remarked that the field of battle was literally scattered "with papists beads".

Religion and politics were closely allied in the 17th century; and Tolerance was in fact a dubious virtue.

APPENDIX 12

Proposed migration of people from Massachusetts to Maryland.

1642 - Newbury people thinking about emigration.

In that year, 1642, Lord Baltimore invited those Englishmen of the Massachusetts Bay who were desirous of removing to some others of His Majesty's Possessions in America, to emigrate to Maryland. For Maryland at that day "was unsurpassed for happiness and Liberty. Conscience was without restraint; a mild and liberal proprietary conceded every measure which the welfare of the colony required". Lands and privileges and "free liberty of religion" was offered to those now dissatisfied with the Massachusetts Bay, but Gibbons, to whom was forwarded a commission, was "so wholly tutored in the (then) New England discipline", that he would not advance the invitation of the Maryland proprietor. But, no doubt, primarily on Governor Winthrop's Appeal to remain, and with the refusal of Gibbons to give the invitation sufficient publicity, these Englishmen, many of whom were to chafe under the rigorous discipline of the officials in the Puritan controlled colony, were to be denied the advantages of the fertile soil and colonial contentment which the shores of the Chesapeake and Potomac, afforded.

APPENDIX 13

Even from early days there was, in America, not a little migration between the several colonies and states. Virginia colonists removed to Massachusetts, Maryland and the Carolinas; and New Englanders settled in Virginia and the Carolinas, as well as in the Dutch settlement of New Amsterdam. Many from the Island of Barbadoes settled on the main continent of America. After the American Revolution many Tory families removed from the Carolinas and Georgia to the banks of

the Mississippi. In the early 19th century there were 200 families from New York settled in one county in the South.

APPENDIX 14

Social distinctions in New England were quite as strict as in Old England. In Newbury, fines even over £ 20 were imposed upon those who persisted in sitting in pews to which they did not rank. In 1653 two women in Newbury were arrested for wearing silk; but were released when they showed that their husbands were worth £ 200 a-piece. Anthony Morse possessed an estate which at the time of his death was valued at over £ 345.

APPENDIX 15

The "Purchase of Land at Achtor Kol by the English colonists, 1664". Three of the leading Associates, having engaged as interpreter, Captain John Baker an Englishman of Nieuw Amsterdam, (now New York) proceeded to Staten Island, where the chiefs of the Indians in that general area resided; and on October 28, 1664, after the usual "Pow-Wow" and exchange of peace pipes, in some forest clearing, the tract of land was duly purchased. The original Indian 'owners' - so called - were Mattano Manomowaouc and Cowescomen. The deed was duly made out in the usual legal terminology, and duly signed by all, including both white and Indian witnesses. A day or two later, this "Purchase" was officially confirmed "at Fort James in New York on the Island of Manhattans", by Governor Nicolls, representing the Duke of York (the future James II of England).

Wampum, or Peage, were beads made from shell, the manufacture of which, was an art among the Indians. The Dutch called these beads Seawan or Zeewand, and in Virginia they were often referred to as 'roanokes'. There were two colors: a dark purple, and a white; and by official regulation had a definite monetary value. Although the value of the exchange often varied, at one time three beads of Wampum were equivalent to a penny.

.....".....upon ye disbursement off ffour pounds a peece in bever pay (Each one of the colonists were) to bee Associates...in ye purchass....which mony...disbursed ffor indeen trade which sayd indean goods went to the purchass of ye sd land at Affter Kull."

Part of the official Grant which followed and confirmed the Purchase, reads - "...Together with all Lands, Meadows, Pastures, woods, waters, fields, fens. fishings, fowling.....Rendering and paying Yearly unto his Royal Highness The Duke of Yorke or his assigns a certain Rent according To the customary Rate of ye Countery for New Plantations."

APPENDIX 16

"In all the colonies the lands within their limits were by the terms of their original grants and charters to be holden of the crown in free and common soccage, and not in capite or by knight's service. They were all holden as of the manor of East Greenwich in Kent, or of the manor of Hampton Court in Middlesex, or of the castle of Windsor in Berkshire....The yeomenry are absolute owners of the soil on which they tread....all of the colonies admitted allegiance to the king, as their sovereign liege lord..."

--Commentaries on the Constitution of the United States;
Joseph Story, 1878.

APPENDIX 17

Governor Lawrie, the Scotsman, some years later, described the area as follows: "...It is scituate in a good Aire, which makes it healthy, and there is great conveniency for travelling from place to place throw the Province in Boats, from a small canoe to vessels of 30, 40, or 50 Tuns, and in some places 100. The soil is generally black, and in some places a foot deep, beareth great burthens of Corn, and Naturally bringeth forth English grass 2 years ploughing: the ground is tender, and the ploughing is very easie, the trees grow generally not thick, but some places 10, in some 15, in some 25 or 30 upon an acre... Several Merchants of New York have left their several plantations there, to come to East Jersey." Notwithstanding this, the"subduing the Earth and replentishinge of it (in this part of New Jersey), was a very difficult worke, and requires much hard Labour."

APPENDIX 18

Among the earlier "Ordinaries" or Taverns to-be in Elizabeth-towne, was one kept by Peter Van Covenhaven, in 1666. He also had a Brewery adjoining. Another Ordinary Keeper, a few years later, was Jonas Wood. The "Tapp-Rooms" of these places of refreshment and conversation, were required to close their doors at 9 P.M.;- except for those of the inhabitants who could give a reasonable excuse for extension of time.

APPENDIX 19

When Captain Philip Carteret, a young man of 26 years of age and a distant cousing of Sir George Carteret, formally took over his duties as Governor, he made a radical departure in the technique and formalities usually incident to the occasion. He omitted the usual petty-royal pomp as affected by many provincial governors. He was, however,

10. 10. 1944

Dear Mr. [Name],
I have just received your letter of the 10th inst. and am glad to hear that you are still interested in the project. I am sure that the results of the work will be of great value to the community. I am sure that the results of the work will be of great value to the community. I am sure that the results of the work will be of great value to the community.

11. 10. 1944

Dear Mr. [Name],
I have just received your letter of the 10th inst. and am glad to hear that you are still interested in the project. I am sure that the results of the work will be of great value to the community. I am sure that the results of the work will be of great value to the community. I am sure that the results of the work will be of great value to the community.

12. 10. 1944

Dear Mr. [Name],
I have just received your letter of the 10th inst. and am glad to hear that you are still interested in the project. I am sure that the results of the work will be of great value to the community. I am sure that the results of the work will be of great value to the community. I am sure that the results of the work will be of great value to the community.

13. 10. 1944

Dear Mr. [Name],
I have just received your letter of the 10th inst. and am glad to hear that you are still interested in the project. I am sure that the results of the work will be of great value to the community. I am sure that the results of the work will be of great value to the community. I am sure that the results of the work will be of great value to the community.

no less theatrical. With a hoe over his shoulder, he proceeded from the Landing place to the crude quarters used as the headquarters of the English settlers. As a further effort to promote harmony and good-will among the colonists who had already started the settlement, he became, by his purchase of several Lot Rights, a fellow-land-owner in the community.

The English settlement which became Elizabeth-Towne

When Carteret set foot at the English settlement, there was said to have been but four families residing there. This young man of 26, unskilled in the way of the frontier, and his French associates may well have been mistaken. No doubt, there were not many families at that spot, for several of the pioneers had not yet completed their first onslaught on the forests, and were living as bachelors in those crude wigwams barely visible to the amateur eye. For the physical establishment of this frontier settlement was no haphazard affair. Several of the Englishmen in the group had been well taught in the setting up of these communities. No less an observer than Benjamin Franklin, writing in 1787, outlines the general characteristic of early American settlements. The Master Plan was an arrangement of two lines of huts facing each other, with the general headquarters in the center of the square. The 'forest sides' of the huts were treated with an eye to provide a maximum field of vision. Closest to the hut, on the forest side, was the vegetable garden, then came a sort of Paddock for one or two cows and a horse, and beyond that, a clear field from which the trees and underbrush had been removed. In the vicinity of the 'Town Square' was a raid shelter - often a well constructed Meeting House - sufficient in size to accommodate the community. Arrangements were made for quick traffic between the huts and the raid shelter. The general scheme varied with the terrain and with other factors. At the English settlement which became Elizabeth-towne, the general plan was followed with the following alterations made necessary by the lay of the land. First of all the settlement was made at the border where the marsh lands met the uplands, and where a good stream and the old Dutch trail met. This was the most strategic position in the whole half million acres of their Purchase and Governor's Grant. There were two local situations which were taken into account: a small hill on the south, and the known direction of possible enemy raids - from the Southwest. Thus, in their solution of the problem, the stream was used as a suitable means of traffic between huts and raid shelter; and the general Headquarters was on the safer side of the stream. The northeastern or more friendly position was more or less discarded, as a front line of huts and palisade, and the hill was amply occupied, to forestall enemy occupation.

APPENDIX 20

Carteret and his immigrants were mainly from the Island of Jersey, from which the whole territory formerly Albania, was now named. The Island of Jersey is the largest of the numerous Islands and rocks, which in their formations are actually a projection from the mainland of the French coast into the English channel. Geographically, they are as much a part of France, as the Isle of Wight is a part of England. The island of Jersey is in the form of a parallelogram, about 10 miles by 5 miles in extent. It lies southwest of Southampton. The language, laws, customs and religion, in 1665 were French. The inhabitants scarcely knew of England, and Englishmen, were generally ignorant of the existence or nature of these islands. A certain type of cattle, and a typical knitted garment were, and even now, are associated with this place.

APPENDIX 21

The revolution of 1671-1672

No one will deny but that the English are a stubborn and persistent race, ever jealous of their prerogatives as Englishmen. While this trait is to be found present in all phases of the colonization of the British empire, then and now, it probably existed to its greatest extent among those who went overseas in the first contingents - the early 17th century. While this fact perhaps robbed the mother country of the several elements in its population which might have stood it in good stead in after years, it nevertheless, was the potent factor in the development of the far-flung empire. The little group of Englishmen at Achter Kol, - known as the Elizabeth-towne Associates - comprised but a mere handful. Yet, those dominant qualities prevailed. The quit-rent controversy, and the supposedly illegal transfer of certain of their claimed domain by their Governor were but outward excuses of the prevailing dissatisfaction towards a certain element in their administration. They were always loyal to their King, but so often were distrustful and in total opposition to their authorized intermediary between the King and themselves. And it was not uncommon in the American colonies for the crown to make deplorable selection in these appointments. Culminating their first six years in the New Jersey settlement, they decided, not to secede from the crown, but to effect a change in government. And being Englishmen, steeped in the traditions of their race, they saw nothing incongruous in this bold and audacious attempt to overthrow their duly selected Governor. The Governor, sensing trouble ahead, in 1670 withdrew the military commissions from the two leading military officers, Luke Watson and Woodruff, and ordered the militia to disband

and to conduct no more training, under pain of death. What kind of people did the governor think they were? Had he forgotten they were English? Despite warnings, the militia continued their exercises, even in the face of possible death. Did not these warnings encroach on their inherent status as subjects of the crown? After a short period of passive resistance, they soon determined to take active steps. They met in a duly authorized town meeting and quietly but boldly deposed the Governor, set another up in his stead, occupied the Governor's residence with the new government and delegated squads to offset the harm that had been already done. The deposed government was obliged to remove to a safer place. From here the Englishmen were declared in mutiny, their citizenship revoked, their properties declared seized, and fines were declared levied. The stout yeomanry, refused to comply with the stipulated conditions - complete revocation of their acts - which would have removed these penalties. The new government was perhaps unfortunate in its elected leader, but the deposed government had no means at the time to enforce its will. The people were confident that the crown would support their contentions. History will never record what the final outcome of this rebellion would have been, for in a few weeks, and without warning, a hostile Dutch fleet sailed into New York harbor and reconquered their old territory. Unprepared to resist the invaders, the English were obliged to take allegiance to the Dutch, but, (despite the recent rebellion), with certain definite reservations: That they would never be called upon to take up arms against England. The Dutch occupancy lasted less than 18 months. According to accounts, the following were apparently the most active in the revolt: John Ogden, Luke Watson, Joseph Meeker, Hur Thompson, Samuel Marsh, Nicholas Carter, Robert Morse, Stephen Crane, Joseph Osborn, Nathaniel Tuttle, Peter Morse, and John Wilson. All, however, with but very few exceptions, were united in what Hatfield calls "an open and determined resistance to all usurpation, and a manly defense of their vested rights."

APPENDIX 22

WEAVING. --This art had its great impetus in the low countries, and many of the people who settled in Suffolk and Norfolk during the Reign of Edward III, as well as their descendants, were well accomplished in this art. From weaving was developed the making of tapestries, which often brought the weaver into successful rivalry with the painter in the decoration of palaces, and churches. Flemish tapestry weaving in the 15th century created for Arras, an eminent position as an art center. Of course the weaving done in the ordinary countryside was strictly utilitarian in character.

APPENDIX 23

RAHWACK NECK

The early English in America were not too precise in the matter of spelling. Then on the other hand, many of the Indian names were quite confusing. Take for example Rahwack Neck. According to the Handbook of the Indians: Book of American Ethnology; 1931: - the original Indian word was RAGAW'AK' or REKEWAK or REGAW-IHAKI, which signified in the Indian tongue "Sandy Land", and was used to designate a subtribe of Indians formerly living on the South and East coast of Long Island. Rockaway was a further corruption of the old Indian word; and the ultimate spelling as used in the vicinity of RAHWACK NECK was Rahway, - its present and permanent name spelling. Rahwack Neck was so named because an 'Indian of that name lived there, when the English arrived'. It would probably be more true to say that the Indian in question had been a member of the Long Island subtribe mentioned above, and had taken up his domicile on the Neck of land which was to bear this name. He may have been a survivor of an early Dutch massacre, and, true to the ethics of Indians, was - as a survivor - an outcast from his fellow warriors. Other spellings were Rackwack; Ragway; Rackawack; Raway; Rackaway; Rechkewick (1647); Rechowhacky; Reckowacky (1663); and Reckkeweck (1641). In like manner the word Raritan was formerly spelled Raruwitan.

APPENDIX 24

The greater part of the old Morse plantation is now the property of the Standard Oil Co. at Linden. Travelers approaching New York from the South, on United States Highway No. 1, will recognize the location by the numerous large oil storage tanks encountered immediately before the traffic circle from which begins the road over Goethals Bridge to Staten Island. In the vicinity of the old private burial ground, the Standard Oil Co. has erected a Memorial Tablet with the following inscription:

"From this point North-easterly as far as the creek which bears their name were the plantations of Peter Morss and many of his descendants for over 200 years. Peter and his brother Robert were among the earliest white men to settle this area known as Raway Neck in the Old Bounds of Elizabeth-Towne. They were of the original company of eighty English colonists whose Indian Purchase and Governor's Grant, in 1664, preceded the arrival of Captain Carteret, and embraced half a million acres of this part of New Jersey."

The old planters of Raway or Rawack Neck, as a unit in themselves, were a good example of the cosmopolitan character of New Jersey as a whole. The Morse family were English, as also were the Olivers and the family of Marsh: Joseph Marsh, however, was not a Puritan, but was a Quaker; the Trembly family were French Huguenots, and the Winans were Dutch. Not a few of the Presbyterian element were shortly to join the Church of England. It was no doubt the contact with the Dutch neighbors which accounted for much of the gradual and definite widening of the cultural scheme of these English. Besides possessing a great respect for other peoples' opinions, including religious beliefs, the Dutch introduced their "Sinter-Klaas" at Christmas time, their love for gardens and flowers, periodic house-to-house calls, especially on New Year's Day, and a true hospitality to strangers. The English in New Jersey did not agree with their cousins in New England one of whom remarked that "the Dutch of New York and New Jersey are little better than the savages of our American deserts".

APPENDIX 25

According to the late Mr. Marsh of Rahway, - whose knowledge of the history of "Rawack Neck" was extensive - there had been within his own memory, the ruins of an old Indian Stockade near his family's plantation. It was the custom, when there was fear of an impending Indian attack, to fire three shots; this to be repeated from plantation to plantation, to advise the populace of the alarm. Although New-Jersey proved in the end to be safe from such raids, the usual precautionary measures were followed, particularly after 1675 when news arrived of a serious Indian uprising in New England in which many of the English were killed and four settlements put to the torch. The "friendly Indians" of the neighborhood, derided these stockade contraptions, and called the palisaded huts: "pig pens for the Englishmen".

APPENDIX 26

The Yeomanry, in America, as well as in England, usually started the day before 5 AM, in the summer, or before 7 AM in the winter. There was a heavy breakfast; Dinner at 10 AM; Supper at 5 PM; and 5 or 6 "Tiffins" or "Drinkings", between.

No doubt many of the Yeomen-planters in America had access to some of the pamphlets published for the proper setting-up of plantations. Among these pamphlets in common use was one entitled "A Discoverie for Division, Or the Setting Out of Land, as to the Best Form", published in England in 1653. The author advertised the great advantages of his book for Adventurers and Planters in the Fens, especially.

The first of these is the fact that the British Empire is not a static entity, but a dynamic one. It is a system of relationships between different parts of the world, and it is constantly changing. The second is the fact that the British Empire is not a homogeneous entity, but a heterogeneous one. It is made up of many different parts, each with its own characteristics and interests. The third is the fact that the British Empire is not a monolithic entity, but a pluralistic one. It is made up of many different groups, each with its own voice and influence.

The fourth is the fact that the British Empire is not a static entity, but a dynamic one. It is a system of relationships between different parts of the world, and it is constantly changing. The fifth is the fact that the British Empire is not a homogeneous entity, but a heterogeneous one. It is made up of many different parts, each with its own characteristics and interests. The sixth is the fact that the British Empire is not a monolithic entity, but a pluralistic one. It is made up of many different groups, each with its own voice and influence.

The seventh is the fact that the British Empire is not a static entity, but a dynamic one. It is a system of relationships between different parts of the world, and it is constantly changing. The eighth is the fact that the British Empire is not a homogeneous entity, but a heterogeneous one. It is made up of many different parts, each with its own characteristics and interests. The ninth is the fact that the British Empire is not a monolithic entity, but a pluralistic one. It is made up of many different groups, each with its own voice and influence.

The tenth is the fact that the British Empire is not a static entity, but a dynamic one. It is a system of relationships between different parts of the world, and it is constantly changing. The eleventh is the fact that the British Empire is not a homogeneous entity, but a heterogeneous one. It is made up of many different parts, each with its own characteristics and interests. The twelfth is the fact that the British Empire is not a monolithic entity, but a pluralistic one. It is made up of many different groups, each with its own voice and influence.

APPENDIX 27

In 1677 it was published (and reprinted, in the Harleian Miscellany) "WARR IN NEW-ENGLAND VISABLY ENDED: 'KING' PHILIP, THAT BARBAROUS INDIAN, NOW BEHEADED, AND MANY OF HIS BLOODY ADHERENTS SUBMITTED TO MERCY: THE REST FLED UP INTO THE COUNTRY, WHICH HATH GIVEN THE INHABITANTS ENCOURAGEMENT TO PREPARE FOR THE SETTLEMENTS."

APPENDIX 28

These Indians were a sub-group of the Algonquin tribe, and called themselves "Lenapes", which means, "the original people". This method of so denoting their own prowess was the usual Indian custom in many parts of North America. The Cherokees, in the south, for instance called themselves "The beloved people", and the Iroquois Indians gave themselves the name "Chief of Men"; as the savages in the Windward Isles were wont to refer to their own number as "The Warlike people". In turn the Indians - the Cherokees, for instance, - called the white man: "Nothings" or "The accursed Race".

Those of the "Lanape" sub-tribe, which were more familiar to the inhabitants about "Rawack Neck", were called 'unani', and subsisted to a great extent upon the products of the sea, especially turtles - which they called 'poke-oo-ung-o. The Indians about East New-Jersey were skilled fishermen and oystermen.

APPENDIX 29

The Quakers:

It was not long before these sons of the early "Puritans", especially after they had been exposed to the broad and cosmopolitan atmosphere which prevailed in New Jersey, became fully appreciative of the many good qualities of the 'Quakers'. This was especially true in the Rawack Neck section of Elizabethtowne, where Quaker settlements were close by. One of the witnesses to the Will of Peter Morse (1701) was John Bishop, a man noted for his defense and liking for these 'people called Quakers'; and Peter's grandson, Joseph, when he drew up his last testament in 1773, had the signatures of two strict adherents of this sect.

APPENDIX 30

This was in response to the demand of Governor Andross to accept him as their right and lawful Governor in lieu of Captain Carteret. This, an effort on the part of the Crown to consolidate the colonies north of the great Sugar and Tobacco areas, the inhabitants of the

CHAPTER I

The first part of the book is devoted to a general survey of the subject. It is divided into three sections: the first deals with the history of the subject, the second with the present state of knowledge, and the third with the future prospects.

CHAPTER II

The second part of the book is devoted to a detailed study of the subject. It is divided into two sections: the first deals with the theory of the subject, and the second with the practice of the subject.

The third part of the book is devoted to a critical examination of the subject. It is divided into two sections: the first deals with the strengths of the subject, and the second with the weaknesses of the subject.

CHAPTER III

The fourth part of the book is devoted to a summary of the subject. It is divided into two sections: the first deals with the conclusions of the book, and the second with the recommendations of the book.

CHAPTER IV

The fifth part of the book is devoted to a final summary of the subject. It is divided into two sections: the first deals with the conclusions of the book, and the second with the recommendations of the book.

Elizabethtowne area refused to do.

And, indeed, they may have sensed something of what might have been in store for them, under a man of this dictatorial type sent to govern colonies not in such great favor at home. For almost from the very beginning, there had been no great love for the colonies north of Virginia. According to Dalby Thomas, 1690, in "An Historical Account of the West Indies": "The colonies in New - England (which included New Jersey) live without applying themselves to planting any Tobacco or other American Commodities, except for their own private use. But by tillage, pastures, fishing, manufactures and Trade, they, to all intents and purposes imitate OLD ENGLAND.... (and) therefore if any, only such should be neglected and discouraged who pursue a method that rivals our native Kingdom and threatens, in time, a total Independency thereupon."

APPENDIX 31

Only after 1725 "Pirates" or Buccaneers were seriously hunted down, and to a large extent became scarce along the Atlantic seaboard. In 1723 a group of 23 were hanged at Newport, and, in accordance with the custom, were buried on the beach: half-way between High and Low tide.

In the decades preceding, however, Pirates were quite common, and, in some instances, tolerated. In 1702, it was proposed to enroll a thousand of them in a proposed expedition to move all the French, and Spanish out of the Western hemisphere. In this fantastic plan outlined by an Englishman who had lived in America, it was proposed that the English colonies in America enroll a total of 15,000 troops: 800 of which number were to be recruited from New Jersey: and, augmented by the Pirates, to drive out an estimated 200,000 non-English troops in the new world!...In this plan "all plunder, except cloths, linens, and loose money were to be reserved to the King"!

APPENDIX 32

The West Indies were in frequent contact with the American mainland. In the colonial days, much of the trans-ocean route was by way of the West Indies. "At that time the usual route of vessels bound (from England) to America (even as far north as New York and New Jersey) was to run down on the other side of the Atlantic towards the Cape de Verdes, and until they got the N.E. trades, and with them to steer for America.....this route brought them upon the coast of the southern states, where their first landfall was generally made. Then steering northward, they drifted along the Gulf Stream until

THE HISTORY OF THE UNITED STATES

The history of the United States is a story of growth and change. It begins with the first settlers who came to the continent, and it ends with the present day. The story is full of challenges and triumphs, and it is a story that we can all learn from. The United States has been a land of opportunity and freedom, and it has been a land where people from all over the world have come to live and work. The history of the United States is a story of a nation that has grown from a small colony to a great power, and it is a story that we can all be proud of.

CHAPTER I

The first chapter of the history of the United States is the story of the early settlers. These settlers came to the continent for a variety of reasons, and they brought with them a rich and diverse culture. They were the first to establish a permanent settlement in North America, and they were the first to create a society that was based on the principles of democracy and freedom. The early settlers were the first to build a nation, and they were the first to create a legacy that we can all be proud of.

CHAPTER II

The second chapter of the history of the United States is the story of the early years of the nation. This was a time of great growth and change, and it was a time when the United States was truly becoming a nation. The early years of the nation were a time of great challenges, but they were also a time of great triumphs. The United States was able to overcome all of its challenges, and it was able to create a nation that was truly great.

they made the Capes of the Delaware, or other headlands to the northIf...as it often happened, they were driven off the coast by snow storms and westerly gales...they stood back to the West Indies, where they would spend the winter, and wait until the spring before making another attempt to enter the northern ports." This tended to make the site of what was to become Charleston, in the Carolinas, a convenient point of contact, in place of the West Indies. The first permanent settlement at Charleston was in 1670; and it rapidly became a most flourishing port with many emigrants from Babadoes and some from New England. After about 1800, when the course of the Gulf Stream became better known, Charleston lost a great deal of its former importance as a sort of a half-way port. Vessels, instead of running to Charleston to avoid a snow storm, "stood off for a few hours until they reached the tepid waters of the Gulf Stream, in the genial warmth of which the crew recovered their frosted energies, and as soon as the gale abated, they were ready for another attempt to make their haven."

Extracts from Wind and Current Charts; by Lt. Maury,
USN. 1851.

APPENDIX 32-A

The life of a Mariner was a hard one: It was said that over two-thirds were lost at sea or died aboard their vessels by pestilence, hurricanes, shipwrecks, drowning, attack by sharks, famine, or from attacks of Pirates.

A ship's Log of that day reads in part; "saw a Brig, Bore NNW, Dt 4 miles, Bore away for him - Fired a shoot at him - a frenchman from Cape Briton...a Great Short sea from ye north...Saw a light Like a fire..Hard Squall, much rain, clewd up Top sails...The ship almost up with us, shoted guns of all sorts, hald up coses, Stood on good Lofe, we hald upon wind....." Writing of those early mariners, Lt. Maury USN, in his volume of 1851 states: "The wonder is...that men should have been found rash enough to become mariners at all."

APPENDIX 33

Nearby was the huge barn with hand hewed beams, wooden pegs, a center large double front and back doors with immense strap hinges. The north side of the barn was used exclusively for hay storage; the other side for livestock, The stalls were of hard wood, wedged and pegged together. - (Recollections of Miss Anne Capraun of Linden, N. J. - 1940 - who as a young girl lived in the Horse house before it was finally destroyed by fire).

APPENDIX 34

The English on Long Island, as early as 1651, asked that African slaves be made available to them as "they were too much fatigued by work".

APPENDIX 35

While a great deal of the medical care was done entirely by the household, it was not uncommon for some of the early English colonists to call in a friendly Indian to treat certain disabilities of the times. This was especially true of such conditions as wounds, fractures and dislocations. It has been said that the average Indian knew a great deal more of the human anatomy than did the English; and the suturing of extensive wounds with sinews of animals threaded on bone needles, was merely one of their accomplishments. Fractures were treated with good splintage, and open fractures were commonly washed continually with either cold water, or with a solution of turpentine boiled from the wood of the white pine. Nicotine, which is an antiseptic - was a common poultice, after tobacco was chewed and applied as a sort of compress to the inflamed part. In reducing dislocations of joints, the Indians appreciated the need of relaxation; they obtained this relaxation of muscles by the copious use of emetics, before setting about to restore the bone in its socket. Many of the herbs were found to be very useful in the care of the sick. Centuries of actual 'trial and error' had resulted in an ultimate application of sound, common-sense techniques. That the Indians walked in a 'pigeon-toed' fashion, was but a modern Orthopedic remedy for one who must travel great distances with the loose foot-wear as was the leather moccasins they wore.

APPENDIX 36

The Will of Joseph Morse 1, drawn three years before his death, reads in parts as follows:

"In the name of God, Amen, the sixteenth day of March in the thirteenth year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord George, by the grace of God, of Great Britain, France, and Ireland, King, etc., and in the Year of our Lord Christ (according to English account) one thousand, seven hundred and twenty-six, I, Joseph Morss, of Elizabethtowne, in the County of Essex, and Eastern Division of the Province of New Jersey, yeoman,
.....
..... bequeath unto my two Sons, namely Joseph Morss,

100

100

100

100

100

100

and Amos Morss.....my whole plantation.....my negro man Peter shall be to my son Joseph.....and my negro man Joseph shall be to my son Amos.....

Some of the negro slaves belonging to the Morse family intermarried with Indians, and many of their descendants served the family for generations. As late as 1937, one of these, Hagar Van Doren, born in slavery on the Morse plantation on Rawack Neck, died in Elizabethtowne, age over 100 years.

APPENDIX 37

Rawack Neck, as far as communication with the settlement at Elizabethtowne was concerned, was virtually an Island. Even after a crude sort of flat boat or raft of logs was made for passage across the creek in the vicinity of the "Dutch cottage", and when the narrow bridge across Morse's Mill Dam became possible for horse crossing, it still retained its island character. Width of the streams and creeks in the 17th and 18th century, about Elizabethtowne and Rawack Neck, were considerably greater than in later centuries. And as far as transportation or travel was concerned, Rawack Neck was dependent for many decades upon either the sailing craft or the saddled horse. Wheeled vehicles were unknown in New Jersey, and even in England in those days they were extremely uncommon. The 'Ridings', both in England and in the colonies did not permit of their use except in very circumscribed areas. The colonists, as the Englishmen at home, were fond of travelling in the saddle, and at Rawack Neck they rode on horseback to their neighbors, to funerals, weddings and to hunt. The women rode either on a side-saddle or on a pillion buckled to the saddle of their husband. Often the younger children rode two or three on a pillion or cushion on another horse. Pack horses were used when the need required, and the small horses, barely 14 hand high were well adapted for this use. Some planters, however, obtained the larger horses available on Staten Island, but horses were plentiful, and in some parts of the colony were almost free for the catching. In some areas they roamed the woods untamed, with foals unclaimed. The barrier - Morse's Creek - was no doubt a big factor in the ultimate building up of the settlement on the Rahwack river, which became the meeting point of the larger neighborhood scattered throughout the wide territory southwest and south of Elizabethtowne. This Rawack (Rahway) river settlement became in due time known as Rahway, of which the Morse family were among the chief, so-called, Founders (it has been said that Robert Morse was a "Founder", and Dr. Isaac Morse, three generations later, its first physician). Members of several old Rawack families, including the families of Marsh, and Morse (Morss) reside there to this day. After the American

Revolution, when transportation to and from Rawack Neck was made more direct by the old white bridge at Morse's Mill, access to Elizabethtowne was easier and more convenient than ever before. And thus; the splitting up of the interests at Rawack Neck doomed it as an entity, until years later, as a part of a newer settlement called Linden, and the presence of great Industrial plants and docks which occupy so much of the area, it lost, forever, its status as a recognizable relic of old America.

Extracts from Will of Joseph Morse I: Will drawn 1726

"...I give, grant, devise and bequeath unto my two sons....all that my whole plantation (140 acres)...All that small Island of Upland called "Pardon's Island" in Raway Meadows (9 acres)...My salt marsh meadow ground (43 acres)...All that small Island of Upland (2 acres)...All that small parcel of salt marsh (3 acres)...All such lands and Rights as are or by any way or means hereafter shall be belonging, coming, and appertaining to me in any future divisions of any or all the lands contained in the whole township and Purchase of Elizabeth-towne.....(and bequests of two year old heifers, and six to twelve shillings apiece, current money to grandchildren)..... My negro man Peter to my son Joseph....and my negro man Joseph to my son Amcs....(with certain income to his wife and daughter, of 'all my estate of Lands, Houses, and Tenements to me belonging')...."

APPENDIX 38

Morse's Mill

New Jersey was in the heart of the flour producing area; and New-York, the great export center for that region shipped annually thousands of tons of bread and flour - much of it to the fellow British colonies in the West Indies. Most of this 'bread' was in the form of 'hard-tack' for use on the vessels which sailed the coasts and seas of the new world.

APPENDIX 39

"What introduces Whig and Tory,
And reconciles them in their story,
When each is boasting in his glass?
A Pinch of Snuff."

APPENDIX 40

On May 26th., 1757, The Governor's Council, meeting at Elizabeth-towne, complained that "Justice Joseph Morse (and others) had been

negligent in securing seamen supposed to have deserted from the "FERRETT"; and admonished them to proceed more actively in their duties as Justices of the County Court" -(Archives NJ).

By virtue of his official position, this branch of the American family, through Joseph Morse II - became of "the Colonial Gentry Class" (1755). The great majority of all the early English-speaking settlers in America were basically the product of English yeomen families; - families which possessed their own fields and meadows and who worked them with the aid of their 'servants'. Very few of these migrated overseas. Those who migrated to America were generally the sons or grandsons of these yeomen, whose hereditary acres had been lost or decreased to such an extent that it was necessary for them to embark into other pursuits. Such men became carpenters, weavers, shoemakers, tailors, and like occupations. Such modern day pursuits as law, medicine and journalism were recruited, generally from a lower class of society, and did not command the respectability which later was in effect. Certain sons of the yeomanry, so inclined, were able to break into the 'upstart nobility', as it was called, and the 'faking' of lineage and coats-of-arms, as well as the direct purchase of titles was not an uncommon procedure. In the early 17th century, knighthood was often sold outright to merchants and others to raise money for the King's army. Many, indeed, who voluntarily refused to buy, were indirectly forced to do so. Many scions of these middle class English families became eminent in the American colonies. The fathers and grand-fathers of Governor Winthrop and William Pepperill, and John Harvard, were clothiers, butchers, or grocers. Sir William Phips and Frederick Phillipse were carpenters; William Biddle who settled in Philadelphia in 1681 was a shoemaker, and George Cabot of the Massachusetts Bay colony was a bricklayer. It must be remembered that these early Americans, however, also were engaged in many diverse occupations. The era of specialization had not arrived. In New Jersey, for instance, one yeoman, or planter, would be a weaver and 'boatman' as well; another a surveyor and a surgeon; or a brewer and surveyor. There was one who called himself a tailor and a 'gentleman', and Mr. Harriman, a clergyman, at the same time was miller, surveyor, teacher of navigation, an agent for furnishing window glass to the community, and a dealer in real estate as well as a planter. There were, indeed, Great Proprietors in the American colonies; but they were vastly outnumbered by the yeomanry. As in England, there was much merging between the upper yeomanry and the gentry, despite the accustomed class divisions which theoretically existed to such an extent in colonial America. The transition of families from lower to upper strata of society is not an exclusive product of our modern America. "The highest social class in

England in the 18th century", writes R. H. Gretton, "was made up, principally, of the middle class families which had risen in the first land speculation of the early Tudor times." The American colonial gentry was also, almost exclusively, recruited from the middle class. And as many of these families in the course of time, intermarried with descendants of some of the Great Proprietors, there are few old American families today (1940), who cannot trace direct descent from one or two of these among their several hundred less eminent, early American ancestors.

APPENDIX 41

The French Count de Rochambeau, writing of his impression of America some twenty-five years later thus describes the county gentry of that quarter century: ".....neither a Lord of a Manor, or a Farmer: he is a Proprietor in a full sense of the word; possessing the 'quantum sufficit' of his necessities and he lays out the overplus of his crops in the purchase of good and comfortable clothing, - without any of the exterior appendages of luxury. The same simplicity is observed in regard to his furniture, and unblemished cleanliness is its principle merit.....20 or 30 years (after the original settlement) they remove to a brick house composed of a kind of open Hall, a neat drawing room, which is not scantily supplied with fuel during the colder months, and a kitchen next to it. The family sit all day in their drawing room; they take four meals a day, interrupted only by moderate labor; and a little negro is incessantly occupied in spreading and clearing away the cloth."

As late as 1740 not more than ten per cent of all the inhabitants of North America lived in the towns. It has been said that the average size of a Virginia plantation was not more than 500 acres; it was less in the Middle colonies. The nine or ten inch top-soil of these days, assured profitable crops. Today (1940), the average thickness of the top-soil is about 4 inches.

APPENDIX 42

The 'yeomen' of East Jersey, as the yeomen of New England, were from the start thrown upon their own resources to an extent not known among their fellow yeomanry in Maryland and Virginia. A contented and genial contact between a country-side gentry and yeomanry had been beneficial to both classes in old England, as it was to a great extent in early colonial Maryland, and to a certain extent in Virginia. Society consisted roughly of the following well defined grades: Gentry, yeomanry, farmers who possessed no land of their own, itinerant laborers, and (in America) negro slaves. Certainly

there was no effort on the part of the yeomanry to volitionally break down the existing social distinctions to which they had been accustomed to at home. They almost cherished them as a part of their own institutions which they had carried with them overseas. That these class distinctions did eventually tend to break down, in America, was due to several factors, not the least being the type of gentry that so frequently was to be met with in colonial America. For a 'gentleman' in early America, was so often one by self-assertion only, and such a gentleman invariably embodied all the bad traits of his yeoman back-ground with none of the good qualities. It proved in many cases a much too rapid transition, and one not conducive to respect on the part of the yeomanry. Due to the geographical location and the frequent change in political status, and its accessibility to the great mercantile centers in New York and Philadelphia, New Jersey was destined to be saddled with more than its normal proportion of new arrivals, fresh from the accumulation of wealth in the adjacent mercantile or law fields. These people, in many cases, formed a sort of clique among themselves and were silent about their humbler origins. With them can be included some of the new wealthy from the iron mines beyond the Jersey mountains. Much of this new wealth centered about Perth Amboy, New Brunswick and Morristown, while Elizabethtowne was fairly exempt. In the meanwhile, many of the descendants of the early Englishmen in East Jersey, lacking the incentive to accumulate fame and fortune, were apparently content to be early observers of a changing America. And for the time being, they seem to have elected to remain in their smug and comfortable tide-water plantations, as observers. The yeomen at Rawack Neck, as those in other old Jersey communities, were happy to abide on their ancestral acres enjoying the pleasures of their fertile fields, the visits with their neighbors and kin, and the life of the woods, the marshes and the streams, untouched by the new wealth which had come into the colony. And in due time, but gradually and more gracefully, these typical English yeomen were soon themselves to be classed as colonial gentry, a distinction they not infrequently, at first, accepted with some reluctance. No doubt many reacted somewhat as did their ancestors at home, who on seeing 'the king' felt not a little compassion for his 'job'. To paraphrase the wording of Thomas Fuller in a description of the English yeoman in the 1640s: - They seldom went to the gatherings of the American "gentry" in the nearby colonial towns, except on business and after seeing something of the life at those centers, with its frequent artificiality, its affectations, its snobbishness, they returned home thankful for their own independent and more normal existence.

APPENDIX 43

Thomas Paine, the Englishman, author of "Common Sense", an important pamphlet which in no small way was a factor in the ultimate independence of the American colonies, wrote: "It was my fate to come to America a few months before the breaking out of hostilities (American Revolution). I found the disposition of the people such, that they might have been led by a thread and governed by a reed. Their suspicion was quick and penetrating but their attachment to Britain was obstinate, and it was at that time a kind of treason to speak against it. They disliked the ministry, but they esteemed the nation. Their idea of grievance operated without resentment, and their single object was reconciliation."

Both George Washington and Benjamin Franklin, were at that time opposed to the separation of the American colonies from Great Britain.

APPENDIX 44

"Could they (the Old Whigs and the New Whigs) in England have acted as a united body, could Burke and Fox have joined forces in harmony with Chatham and Shelburne, they might have thwarted the King and prevented the rupture with America. But George III profited by the hopeless division between these two Whig parties; and as the quarrel with America grew fiercer, he succeeded in arraying the national pride to some extent upon his side and against the Whigs. This made him feel stronger and stimulated his zeal against the Americans. He felt that if he could first crush Whig principles in America, he could then turn and crush them in England. In this he was correct, except that he miscalculated the strength of the Americans. It was the defeat of his schemes in America that ensured their defeat in England. It is quite wrong and misleading, therefore, to remember the Revolutionary War as a struggle between the British people and the American people. It was a struggle between two hostile principles, each of which was represented in both countries. In winning the good fight, our forefathers won a victory for England as well as for America. What was crushed was George III and the kind of despotism which he wished to fasten upon America in order that he might fasten it upon England."-----

--The War of Independence; John Fiske

APPENDIX 45

From 1635 until 1776 - for over 140 years, this family in America were the acknowledged subjects, of the following Kings and Queens:

Charles I
(Cromwell, the Protector)
Charles II
(Dutch occupancy)
James II (The former Duke of York and Albany)
William and Mary
William III
Anne
George I
George II
George III

We often forget that our "American" ancestors until 1776 were subjects of the English King; and until 1774, good and loyal subjects. As such we were potentially a good deal interested in the doings of our nation, of which we were colonials. The author, therefore, records some of the major political doings 'At Home' during those years:

- 1642 - Commencement of the civil war between Charles I and Parliament.
- 1653 - Oliver Cromwell, Lord Protector
- 1688 - The 'glorious Revolution'; expulsion of James II, the former Proprietor of New Jersey, William of Orange, made King.
General War in the West of Europe.
- 1701 - William III forms a 'Grand Alliance' of Austria, The Empire, the United Provinces, England, and other powers against France.
- 1702 - Queen Anne to the throne.
- 1704 - The Battle of Blenheim. Decisive blow struck on the French.
- 1705 - A small English army lands in Spain.
- 1706 - Marlborough's victory at Ramillies.
- 1707 - The English army in Spain is defeated at the battle of Almanza.
- 1708 - Marlborough's victory at Oudenarde.
- 1709 - The battle of Pultowa.
- 1713 - France cedes to England Hudson's Bay and Straits, the Island of St. Christopher, Nova Scotia and Newfoundland, in America. Spain cedes to England Gibraltar, which England had taken in the war.
- 1715 - Death of Queen Ann. The House of Hanover begins to reign. A rebellion in favor of the Stuarts is put down.
- 1742 - War between France and England.
- 1743 - English victory at Dettingen
- 1745 - Rebellion in Scotland in favor of the House of Stuart.
The battle of Culloden.
- 1756 - 1763; The Seven Years war. England, under the administration of the elder Pitt (afterwards Lord Chatham) takes a glorious part in the war in opposition to France and Spain. Wolfe wins

January 1st 1900
Dear Sir,
I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 29th inst. in relation to the matter of the ...
Very respectfully,
J. H. ...

It is the policy of the ... to ...
The ... of the ... is ...
The ... of the ... is ...

The ... of the ... is ...
The ... of the ... is ...
The ... of the ... is ...

The ... of the ... is ...
The ... of the ... is ...
The ... of the ... is ...

The ... of the ... is ...
The ... of the ... is ...
The ... of the ... is ...

The ... of the ... is ...
The ... of the ... is ...
The ... of the ... is ...

The ... of the ... is ...
The ... of the ... is ...
The ... of the ... is ...

the battle of Quebec, and the English conquer Canada, Cape Breton and St. John, in America. Clive begins his career in the conquest of India, Cuba is taken by the English from Spain.

1763 - The Peace of Paris was the era of England's greatest prosperity.

APPENDIX 46

Loyalists in the American Revolution 1776:

In 1752 and 1756, daughters of Joseph Morse II and his brother Amos Morse, were married or christened in St. John's Episcopal or Anglican church in Elizabeth-town. There is no record of christenings or marriages of those families in that decade or so in the Presbyterian Church. This would imply that the family at that time were communicants of the Church of England. There was a strong pull in favor of the King, in the conduct of the Anglicans during the American Revolution, and some authors have said that the War of 1776 resembled a good deal an affair between the members of the Church of England and the dissenting churches. In view of that it was not unusual that several of the Morse family, in New Jersey, were loyalists.

APPENDIX 47

As late as the American Revolution, British historians and writers, notably William Robertson, Principal of the University at Edenburg, referred to the white colonists in British America, as 'Englishmen', and reserved the term "American", for the native Indian. In his Preface to his "History of America", written about the time of the Revolution, he echoes something of the real nature of the conflict:

"...it was my intention not to have published any part of the work, until the whole was completed. The present state of the British Colonies has induced me to alter that resolution. While they are engaged in civil war with Great Britain, inquiries and speculations concerning their ancient forms of policy and laws, which exist no longer, cannot be interesting. The attention and expectation of mankind are now turned towards their future condition. In whatever manner this unhappy contest terminate, a new order of things must arise in North America, and its affairs will assume another aspect. I wait with the solicitude of a good citizen, until the ferment subside, and regular government be re-established....."

APPENDIX 48

These troops were mainly from New Jersey and Maryland, and among the Marylanders in this expedition, as well as in subsequent operations about Elizabethtowne, was one William Clarke, a lieutenant in one of the Regiments of General Smallwood's Maryland brigade - a body of troops which were outstanding in gallantry during their very active participation in the Revolution. Decades later, Clarke's great-granddaughter was to marry a great-grandson of Joseph Morse II, of Morse's Mills; to become the parents of the 9th generation of this tale.

APPENDIX 49

British Base on Staten Island 1776 -

Several persons, whose descendants were to marry the 8th generation of this narrative, were living on Staten Island at that time. These were the families of Cripps, McLean, and Simonson. British military maps of the period show their dwellings on the north-east corner of the Island, where one of them (Simonson or Symonson) operated a Ferry across the channel to Long Island. William McLean Cripps, - who (about 1820) settled in Washington D.C., was a boyhood intimate of old Commodore Vanderbilt; - and these two old friends often renewed their friendship in the latter city, in their later years. The Cripps family had come to Staten Island from New Jersey, and doubtless were descendants of John Cripps of Parish St. Martin in Middlesex England, who had settled in Burlington, East New Jersey, in 1678. The Staten Island branch were formerly from Shrewsbury, New Jersey. The Cripps family in old England were to become quite prominent; perhaps its most notable member being Sir Stafford Cripps. It has been said that the "Scripps" family were originally Cripps; - the initial "S" being added about 1634 to that particular branch. Cripps was sometimes spelled "Crips". William McLean Cripps was an Ensign Lieutenant, and Captain in the early District of Columbia militia.

APPENDIX 50

Will of Joseph Morse II: shows the same old tidewater plantation, - a part of which he called "The Small Orchard"; Lands above and northwest of the "First Mountain", "Pardon's Island" (also known as "Cherry Island"); miscellaneous lands on Rahwack Neck, and lands in the county of Middlesex, at "The Roundabouts". He also mentions the Mill, and bequeaths with the Mill, the 'utencels', Stream, and all other Privaledges and Advantages, "had, Taken, used, and heretofore deemed to belong thereto."

APPENDIX 51

'Squire' Amos Morse, the brother of Joseph Morse II was not always able to successfully defy the English troops to occupy his residence. He was 66 years old in 1778, and it was about that year that one detachment of English troops broke into his dwelling and used the dining room as sleeping quarters. It appears that one evening during that occupancy, 'Squire' Morse overheard some of the soldiers discussing a plan of rounding up the cattle on the plantation the next morning and driving them back to their Base by way of a ferry at Trembly Point. The 'Squire', late that same night, therefore, made his way down stairs but was confronted by a sentry standing watch over his sleeping companions, stretched out on the floor of the dining room. On being questioned as to his mission, he replied that his wife was sick and he was on his way to the kitchen to brew a cup of tea. This being accomplished he retraced his steps from the kitchen, tea-cup in hand, through the dining room to the main hall. At this point, however, he passed on out doors through the rear door of the main hall to his barns, and drove all his cattle away to safety.

APPENDIX 52

Civil war on Rawack Neck, as in other border communities not actually the scene of a drawn battle, had certain peculiarities in common. Yes, it was war alright....suspicions...fears....patriotic ardor... quiet interludes...the steady flow of the creek...the division of opinions...what about the politicians...patriotism followed by disgust...fears, rumors and hates...the chickens must be fed...a night glare from a burning house...squads of ragged soldiery...No they were not drunk...better drive the cows into the swamp...the mosquitoes are worse this year...a rattle of musketry...A story of a spy..... How are the crops this year...a period of tranquility...a cloud of dust from some cattle...Are you going to the wedding tomorrow...Bad nerves...arguments...a baby was born last night....next year I will plant more wheat....Kill the dirty red-coats...Kill the dirty rebels ...raids.....more raids.....Old Brown died last night...his property was confiscated.....a baby was born yesterday....The dirty red-coatsThe dirty rebels...I'll take the message the next time I go to town...a night robbery...I'll wager a glass of grog...His grandmother died last night....A dead trooper along the lane...."Freedom Shrieks"The king's horses....drunk, all drunk....Are you going to the funeral...Night flares from a pillaged dwelling...If you give the baby more water....stolen fence rails....a nice fish for dinner, caught it this morning...Long Live the King.....Kill the King.... Those dirty Hessians....I suspect....I suspect...I suspect....a quiet

week and we spent the Sunday in town...Freedom Shrieks...That was John's son who was killed.....Bad nerves and more rumors....They can't do that to us....A story of a Rape....more raids....More glares at night....They will never get my cattle....half-drunk.... Are you going to the christening?....I'll never speak to them againtroops moving on the lower road....Who bought his property... Raids...Fires...musket shots.....It was a wonderful quiet spring.... The dirty red-coats....The dirty rebels....He will never enter my house again....A baby was born yesterday...Long live the King.... the robber....the lousy red-coats....Freedom Shrieks...Kill the damned rebels....Who bought his farm?....He would....a story of a rape....It was a nice winter, but colder than usual....It served him right....clouds of dust from stolen cattle....Better plant corn in that field next year....Yes, I was in town last week....Why don't they bury him?....How long is this thing going to last?..... Kill the dirty Hessians....Two dead soldiers on Lower Road....Did you go to the christening last week....I'll have nothing to do with him, or his whole family...more robbery...more murder...more stolen cattle...another raid, ...Peace.....Who said Peace....Who bought the property...Where will they go now....I knew he was one all alongWe shall never speak to them again.....
.....
Even if he is my son.....
.....
The world was upside down.....The world settles down again.....
.....And an English Province has become a sovereign state, a part of.....a larger confederacy.....Long Live The President Of The United States.

APPENDIX 53

Some of the Raids near the Morse plantation:

In 1781 (the King's troops) "landed at Halsted's Point (mouth of Morse's Creek), but were driven off by Capt. Hendricks and 12 men patrolling that area. However, they wounded a boy at Dr. Winans and burnt Mr. Ephraim Marsh's house." Again, a few months later, a party of 35 men landed at Trembly Point..surrounded Tairil's Tavern, and eluded three 'rebel' Light Horse, which were the Patrol at that area,....and-surprised Captain Amos Morse Jr., and made him a prisoner..as well as other 'rebels', and a great number of sheep, oxen and cattle.

APPENDIX 54

The salt-marsh, with the yellowish-green grass interspersed with the "black grass", here and there, gave a pattern of beautiful design;

The first important consideration is to ensure that the data is accurate and reliable. This involves checking the source of the data, the method of collection, and the time period covered. Once the data is verified, the next step is to analyze it. This can be done using statistical methods, such as regression analysis, to identify trends and patterns. The results of the analysis should then be interpreted in the context of the research question. Finally, the findings should be communicated to the relevant stakeholders in a clear and concise manner.

The second important consideration is to ensure that the data is accessible and usable. This involves making the data available to the relevant stakeholders in a format that is easy to understand and use. This can be done by creating reports, dashboards, or other visualizations that present the data in a clear and concise manner. The results of the analysis should then be interpreted in the context of the research question. Finally, the findings should be communicated to the relevant stakeholders in a clear and concise manner.

The third important consideration is to ensure that the data is secure and protected. This involves implementing appropriate security measures to protect the data from unauthorized access, use, or disclosure. This can be done by using encryption, access controls, and other security measures to protect the data.

and the long flat distances, interrupted in areas with tree-crowned "Islands", was a glorious sight, as the panorama stretched away to the "Great River", as Staten Island Sound was called. Along Morse's Creek, the tall sedges - so useful for thatching - gave a meandering border to the picture. The salt hay, was particularly liked by the cattle. One of the difficulties of hauling loads through the meadows, was the soft turf, in which cart-wheels so easily sunk. To remedy this, a sort of drag was contrived: the carts were fitted with runners, or special runners attached to the bodies of the carts. These would glide readily over the soft earth, quite as well as sleds over snow.

APPENDIX 55

A second cousin of Joseph Morse II, Theodore Morse of Falmouth, Maine, who held the rank of Captain in the King's forces, was so violent and outspoken against the 'rebels' that after the war he and his family were forced to remove to Canada.

APPENDIX 56

In 1787 the people of New Jersey, through their four Delegates - one of whom was Jonathan Dayton - became the third state to ratify the Constitution of the United States, which was finally adopted two years later, by the additional ratification of the other states in the Union. This famous Document - as shown in the Preamble - apparently was framed specifically for the interests of the then people of the States, and their descendants, and not particularly as a haven for the oppressed of the old world. New Jersey was the first state to ratify the first ten amendments.

APPENDIX 57

A favorite treatment for Yellow Fever was ten grains of jalop, and ten grains of calomel; followed by bleeding. At times the mortality was as high as 40 to 60%. This, and Smallpox, were common diseases, and touched rich and poor alike; the King of France died from the latter in 1774. A great number of the faces of the people of the world, in those days bore the 'pock marks' of a Smallpox attack. In 1780 there was a great deal of Hydrophobia or 'dog madness'. Percussion, and the stethoscope did not come into use until after 1810. New Jersey, was noteworthy in being the first state in the Union to attempt the modern medical care for the Insane.

APPENDIX 58

Politics, at that time comprised two chief sections: a mere handful

The first of these is the fact that the
 government has been unable to secure
 the necessary funds to carry out its
 policy of maintaining the value of the
 pound. This has led to a steady
 decline in the value of the pound
 since 1945. The second is the fact
 that the government has been unable to
 secure the necessary funds to carry out
 its policy of maintaining the value of the
 pound. This has led to a steady
 decline in the value of the pound
 since 1945.

in 1945

The third is the fact that the
 government has been unable to secure
 the necessary funds to carry out its
 policy of maintaining the value of the
 pound. This has led to a steady
 decline in the value of the pound
 since 1945.

in 1945

The fourth is the fact that the
 government has been unable to secure
 the necessary funds to carry out its
 policy of maintaining the value of the
 pound. This has led to a steady
 decline in the value of the pound
 since 1945.

in 1945

The fifth is the fact that the
 government has been unable to secure
 the necessary funds to carry out its
 policy of maintaining the value of the
 pound. This has led to a steady
 decline in the value of the pound
 since 1945.

in 1945

The sixth is the fact that the
 government has been unable to secure
 the necessary funds to carry out its
 policy of maintaining the value of the
 pound. This has led to a steady
 decline in the value of the pound
 since 1945.

of persistent Royalists; and the great remainder of the American people, Republicans. The Republicans were divided into two sets: the Federalists, - or those leaning towards an extension of the power of the central or Federal government; and the Anti-Federalists, who advocated a return to the people of much of the authority which had been delegated to the central government. George Washington, and Alexander Hamilton were the leaders of the Federalistic movement; and Thomas Jefferson was to be the promoter of the Anti-Federalist party - the Democratic party to come. While the civil war, decades later decided, in a great measure, in favor of the Federalistic idea, the contest still continues in a more hidden form.

"I returned from the French Mission", wrote Thomas Jefferson, "... But I cannot describe the wonder and mortification with which the table conversations (in America) filled me. Politics were the chief topic, and a preference of kingly over republican government was evidently the favorite sentiment." An excellent observation of American life at that time was made in that decade by the Duke de la Rochefoucauld Liancourt:

"Though there are no distinctions acknowledged by law in the United States, fortune and the nature of professions form different classes. The Merchants, the Lawyers, the Land-owners who do not cultivate their land themselves, the Physicians, and the Clergy, form the First Class. The inferior merchants, the farmers, and the artisans may be included in the Second Class; and the Third Class is composed of workmen who let themselves by the day or month, etc. In Balls, Concerts and Public amusements, these classes do not mix; and yet, except the laborer in ports and the common sailor, everyone calls himself and is called by others 'gentleman'..... They deceive themselves very much who think that pure Republican manners prevail in America."

APPENDIX 59

The taverns of the day were low ceilinged rooms with a long table in the center, and smaller tables along the walls. At one corner was a high table or shelf behind which the tavern keeper or an assistant kept his stock of liquor. When absent in the nearby kitchen preparing food for his customers, it was the custom - or native precaution - to let-down the bars to protect his supply of liquor from dishonest persons. These were the Clubs of the times. Later, when the advent of stagecoaches speeded up life in the community,

many passengers preferred to take their beer or rum, standing up at the bar. This was especially needful for passengers who had but a short time to spend while the horses were being changed or watered. Thus in time, the "American Bar" was born. The "Club" aspect of the establishment, thereupon, not infrequently moved into the 'back room'.

APPENDIX 60

At the time of Nathan's birth, there was no President of the United States: the ranking Federal officer was Mr. Mifflin of Pennsylvania, the President of Congress, then sitting in Trenton, New Jersey. On Dec. 24th of that year, The Honorable United States in Congress, adjourned - to meet again in the city of New York in the following month. Just before adjourning, however, they planned to set up the permanent Capitol of the Federal organization at Trenton: "The erection of buildings for the use of Congress to be carried into effect without delay..Commissioners..to lay out...a district of no less than two, nor exceeding three miles square, on the banks of either side of the Delaware...for a Federal towne." It was some years later that the Federal city was finally chosen - On the Forks of the Potomack.

In all, between 1774 and 1788 there were 14 Presidents of Congress: Mifflin, had been preceded by Boudinot Of New Jersey, and was himself succeeded by Richard Henry Lee of Virginia.

APPENDIX 61

Jonathan Dayton was Speaker of the House of Representatives from 1785 to 1790; and in the arrangement then existing was third in line for the Presidency, of the United States should the President, the Vice-President, and the Presiding Officer of the Senate become disabled by death or otherwise. The city of Dayton, Ohio was named in his honor.

Nathan Morse was also a great-great-great-grandson of Robert Dayton, one of the Founders of East Hampton Long Island; - whose home - still standing was for many years the residence of John Howard Payne, whose "Home, Sweet, Home" was said to have been inspired by the comfortable atmosphere of that dwelling. The house had been erected about 1650.

APPENDIX 62

Lotteries were the popular means of raising money for divers purposes. By this means the parsonage for the minister of the Rahway

Church, was erected; and gambling of all sorts was so prevalent about Elizabethtowne, that the Provincial Legislature passed stringent laws against the drawing of a Lottery. The law, however, was forthwith evaded by conducting the Drawings in neighboring communities.

APPENDIX 63

The Society of the Cincinatti, was an organization of former officers, American and French, who had served in the Revolution. Many of the people of the country were suspicious that it was but a forerunner of an aristocratic regime for the new nation; and "Tammany Hall" in New York was formed in opposition to this suspected movement. General Elias Dayton, uncle of Nathan's mother, was the First President of the Society of the Cincinatti for New Jersey. George Washington was the first President of the group of state organizations. The society - with an hereditary membership - remains today active both in America and France.

Cincinatti; This settlement was in the "Symmes Grant" of a million acres, and was situated immediately west of the Virginia Military District, reserved for lands to be apportioned to the Virginia veterans of the American Revolutionary army.

APPENDIX 64

One of Nathan's most distinguished ancestors in that section, had been Lion Gardiner, of Gardiner's Island. Lion Gardiner, in the time of King Charles I, went from England to Holland to serve as a Lieutenant with the English allies. He was an Engineer and 'Master of Fortifications'; and in 1635 sailed for America. He had charge of the construction of the military fortifications at Boston and at Saybrook in Connecticut. From the Indians he purchased for himself, the 'Isle of Wight', latterly called "Gardiner's Island", off the East end of Long Island, which is said to have been the first founded of the Manors of the later confines of New York. He was designated the first Lord of the Manor of Gardiner's Island, a tract of some 3000 acres in extent; and which has remained in the possession of his descendants ever since. His wife was Mary Willemson, daughter of a 'deurcant' in the Dutch town of Woerden. Another - an ancestor of his paternal grandmother born Anna Winans, - was Cornelis Melyn, a native of Antwerp, Holland who had emigrated to America in 1639. At one time he obtained a Grant of the greater part of Staten Island and planted a colony which was promptly broken up by the Indians. As the Patroon of Staten Island, he made another attempt at colonization, but this was dispersed by a severe Indian

massacre in 1655. Melyn espoused the popular side in the politics of New Amsterdam, and for this, mainly, he was banished for seven years by Governor Stuyvesant.

And of his relatives whose memories were still fresh at Elizabethtowne, was his great-uncle General Elias Dayton who had commanded the New Jersey troops at Yorktown, and General Matthias Ogden, 'that gallent soldier' as he was called, whose wife was Nathan's aunt.

Lion Gardiner of Gardiner's Island, New York.
Lion Gardiner (1599-1663) m. Mary Deurcant:: Mary Gardiner (1638-1727) mm m. Jeremiah Conkling (1634-1712) :: Cornelius Conkling (1664-1748) m. Mary -- (1668-1712) :: Elisha Conkling (1691-1772) m. Esther Parsons (1698-1756) :: Elisha Conkling (1720-1772) m. Elizabeth Dayton (born 1732) :: Amy Conkling (1760-1832) m. Dr. Isaac Morse.

An excellent statue of Lion Gardiner has been erected at Saybrook, Conn.

APPENDIX 65

Princeton College, the College of New Jersey at Elizabethtowne.

Advertisement in the Pennsylvania Gazette, August 13, 1747: --

"These are to give notice to all concerned, That by his Majesty's Royal Charter for erecting a college in New Jersey for the instruction of youth in the learned languages, and in the liberal arts and sciences.....and to chuse, and at pleasure to displace, a president, tutors, professors, treasurer, clerk steward, and usher, with any other ministers and officers as are usual in any of the universities or colleges in the realm of Great Britain.....and that the said college is now actually opened, to be kept at Elizabeth-Towne, till a building can be erected in a more central place of the said province.....and that the charge to each student, will be Four Pounds a year New-Jersey money, at Eight Shillings per ounce, and no more."

This college in 1896 was renamed Princeton, the hamlet where it was finally set-up, some thirty miles south-west of Elizabethtowne.

The original Elizabethtowne location was at the residence of the president, Mr. Dickinson, "on the South side of the old Rahway road, directly west of Race Street". The old Rahway road was the Upper Road to Rahway. It was the new or Lower road to Rahway, which passed through the Morse plantations.

On the 1st of July 1911, the first of the
 series of observations was made at the
 station of the observatory.

The first of the series of observations was
 made at the station of the observatory on
 the 1st of July 1911. The first of the
 series of observations was made at the
 station of the observatory on the 1st of
 July 1911.

The first of the series of observations was
 made at the station of the observatory on
 the 1st of July 1911. The first of the
 series of observations was made at the
 station of the observatory on the 1st of
 July 1911. The first of the series of
 observations was made at the station of
 the observatory on the 1st of July 1911.

On the 1st of July 1911,

the first of the series of observations was

made at the station of the observatory on
 the 1st of July 1911. The first of the
 series of observations was made at the
 station of the observatory on the 1st of
 July 1911. The first of the series of
 observations was made at the station of
 the observatory on the 1st of July 1911.
 The first of the series of observations
 was made at the station of the observatory
 on the 1st of July 1911. The first of
 the series of observations was made at
 the station of the observatory on the 1st
 of July 1911. The first of the series
 of observations was made at the station
 of the observatory on the 1st of July
 1911. The first of the series of
 observations was made at the station of
 the observatory on the 1st of July 1911.

The first of the series of observations was
 made at the station of the observatory on
 the 1st of July 1911. The first of the
 series of observations was made at the
 station of the observatory on the 1st of
 July 1911. The first of the series of
 observations was made at the station of
 the observatory on the 1st of July 1911.

Nassau Hall was erected in 1756, and was named in honor of William of Nassau, Prince of Orange, William III of England. During the American Revolution it served at different times as a barracks and as a hospital for troops from both sides. In 1783 the Continental Congress sat here, and it was here that General Washington received the thanks of Congress for his part in the war.

When Nathan visited the institution, Nassau Hall, the President's house, and the 'new' recitation Hall were the only buildings present. The latter structure was then but two years old, and contained recitation rooms, the library, and quarters for the two Debating societies.

In the immediate vicinity were farms: these were ultimately to become part of the University estate, in years to come.

APPENDIX 66

Travel across Pennsylvania to the Ohio river.

Margaret Van Horn Dwight - who wrote a journal of this trip five years after Nathan made the journey - described the Log house Taverns, 2 or 3 persons in a bed; often the floor used as a bed, scarcity of food, the "day's march starting before sunrise, the long hills, and the speed of about ten miles an hour, the 'swearing' of the men and women of the Pennsylvania settlements, the swollen streams, and the half-drunken and noisy wagoners."

APPENDIX 67

In 1794 Genet, French Minister to the United States, had formulated an expedition to attack Louisiana, which was then Spanish. Actual Commissions were issued to many Americans in the Carolinas, Virginia, Maryland, Pennsylvania and New Jersey. To counter this move, the Spanish Governor of Louisiana, attempted to persuade the people of Kentucky, Tennessee, and Ohio, to put themselves under the jurisdiction of the ruler of Louisiana: Spain.

APPENDIX 68

The Indians in Louisiana were descendants of the old tribe of Natchez, said to have been an offshoot of the more cultured Indians in Central America. They were far removed from the Indian of New Jersey, and besides being Sun worshipers, they had (formerly) a distinct body politic. There were two classes of society; the upper classes called themselves "The Respectables", and referred to the lower class of their people as "Stinkards".

APPENDIX 69

The Lewis and Clark Expedition, sent by Jefferson to explore the Louisiana Purchase, left St. Louis in May 1804. After an absence of more than 27 months, they returned to St. Louis in September 1806: or at about the time that Nathan was settling in New Iberia.

APPENDIX 70

In 1822, a "little Creole grandmother" wrote her memoirs describing her journey in 1795, and stay in the "Attackapas" region as a young girl of 17.

Knowing Nathan Morse, the young lawyer at New Iberia, she mentions him in one of the paragraphs of her interesting story. Although the error in time of his first entrance into the life of that region, and her mention of him in her story is inaccurate, this minor discrepancy was a natural error in giving an account which had occurred some ten years before it was written:

"..Now I ought to tell you, my daughter, that these male costumes, so effeminate, extravagant, and costly, had met great opposition from the part of the people of St. Martin parish. They had been brought in by the French emigres, and many had adopted them, while others had openly revolted against them. A league had been formed against them. Among its members were the Chevalier de Blanc, the elder of the d'Arbys, the Chevalier de la Houssaye, brother of the count, Paul Briant, Adrian Dumartrait, young Morse, and many others. They had thrown off entirely the fashionable dress and had replaced it with an attire much like what men wear today (1822)."

In later years George Cable immortalized these memoirs in his "Strange True Stories of Louisiana."

APPENDIX 71

New Iberia and the Nicholls plantation in the early 1800's. The author is indebted to Mr. Edward T. Weeks, Sr., of New Iberia for the following description forwarded the author in 1940:

"New Iberia about the year 1800 was a very small settlement. The Spanish immigrants who had come up the Teche about 1780, had located for a year or two just above the town and then had mainly moved west of Lake Tasse..... Until the year 1885 there stood on that Nicholls property

(see Township 12, S.R. 6E of the SW Dist of La.) an old residence which, from its age, condition, and from its being a better structure than were its neighbors, was probably the old Nicholls home...It was located on the west side of Main Street of the town, fronting towards the Teche.....a new residence was erected in its place. The Nicholls property later became part of the John F. Miller property...The site of the town was in the first decade of 1800s divided into small farms with residences; this excepting the few little shops and business places straggling along Main Street."

APPENDIX 72

Avery's Island; still in the possession of the Avery and McIlhenny families, contains hills which rise higher above sea level, than any other land along the Gulf coast, from Florida to Mexico. On the Island is what is said to be the largest salt mine in the world. In addition it contains a most luxuriant garden, and extensive bird sanctuaries.

APPENDIX 73

Nathan Morse in New Orleans, 1810.

It is of interest to note how often the descendants of many of the early English colonists in America met in the gradual expansion of our nation. One of the shipmates of Nathan's great-great-grandfather, Anthony Morse, during the long passage from England to America in 1635 was John Pike, who also settled in Newbury. John Pike migrated to the Woodbridge section of New Jersey - just below Rahwack Neck - a few years after Peter Morse settled there. In 1810, one of Pike's descendants, Colonel Zebulon Pike was in New Orleans as the military agent for the American army. It was this Colonel Pike - then a lieutenant - who led the expedition to explore the upper Mississippi region in 1806, the same year that Nathan descended that river to settle in the Territory of Orleans. "Pike's Peak" was discovered and named by Lieut. Pike in that year.

APPENDIX 74

About a century before, New Orleans, the site of an old Indian Portage, had become the Headquarters of the French and Canadian colonists who had been settled on Massacre or Dauphine Island in a nearby arm of the Gulf of Mexico. Their 'new' dwellings were palisaded cabins of cypress. As time progressed, the influx of

hustling Americans and English to this Latin center not infrequently provoked the sarcasm of the more leisurely natives. The effect was somewhat comparable to the trite verse: "Mad dogs and Englishmen go out in the midday sun". It is sufficient to say, however, that it was not long before even the most hustling of the newcomers, took up the slow and more casual ways of their Latin companions. Until 1840, in New Orleans, there was a "Business Season", as well as "Business Hours". There was little if any business transacted between July and November.

APPENDIX 75

When Fulton's steamboats proved unable to ascend the Mississippi under their own power, Henry Miller Shreve, born in New Jersey in 1785, of Quaker parents, was finally able to contrive a steam engine which successfully accomplished the task. A resident of Louisiana for many years, the town of Shreveport was named in his honor.

APPENDIX 76

Martha Craufurd Morse's maternal grandfather was Robert or William Hamilton, also known as William Douglas, - a former lieutenant in the British Navy. He had come to Upper Marlboro, in the Province of Maryland about fifteen years before the breaking out of the American Revolution. He had early married Martha Craufurd, a daughter of David Craufurd I, and a relative of the neighboring Upper Marlboro families of Clagett, Offutt, and Magruder, and a connection of Judge Bushrod Washington, of Mt. Vernon. After about a year in Maryland, Hamilton was about to return to England, with his young wife, when, "on July 12th., 1759, near the Patuxent Bridge he was killed by the accidental discharge of a gun, leaving a young widow 'near her time'." He was a relative of the family of the Duke of Hamilton, and many years later (1837) his American descendants were duly notified of an inheritance left at the death of a distant relative, a British Peer.

Connection with the Washington Family.

The mother of Martha Craufurd Morse was a first cousin to Nathaniel Craufurd of "Greenwood Park", Prince George Co., Maryland, who married Sarah Blackburn. Sarah Blackburn's sister married Bushrod Washington, nephew of George Washington.

APPENDIX 77

Complete Roster of the Volunteer Troop of Horse, - exclusive of "George: the Waiter":

the first of these is the fact that the first of the three
 is the only one which is not a member of the second
 class. The second is the only one which is not a member
 of the first class. The third is the only one which is
 not a member of either class. The fourth is the only one
 which is a member of both classes. The fifth is the only
 one which is not a member of either class. The sixth is
 the only one which is a member of the first class.

THE SECOND

The second of these is the fact that the first of the three
 is the only one which is not a member of the second
 class. The second is the only one which is not a member
 of the first class. The third is the only one which is
 not a member of either class. The fourth is the only one
 which is a member of both classes. The fifth is the only
 one which is not a member of either class. The sixth is
 the only one which is a member of the first class.

THE THIRD

The third of these is the fact that the first of the three
 is the only one which is not a member of the second
 class. The second is the only one which is not a member
 of the first class. The third is the only one which is
 not a member of either class. The fourth is the only one
 which is a member of both classes. The fifth is the only
 one which is not a member of either class. The sixth is
 the only one which is a member of the first class.

THE FOURTH

The fourth of these is the fact that the first of the three
 is the only one which is not a member of the second
 class. The second is the only one which is not a member
 of the first class. The third is the only one which is
 not a member of either class. The fourth is the only one
 which is a member of both classes. The fifth is the only
 one which is not a member of either class. The sixth is
 the only one which is a member of the first class.

THE FIFTH

The fifth of these is the fact that the first of the three
 is the only one which is not a member of the second
 class. The second is the only one which is not a member
 of the first class. The third is the only one which is
 not a member of either class. The fourth is the only one
 which is a member of both classes. The fifth is the only
 one which is not a member of either class. The sixth is
 the only one which is a member of the first class.

Adams, William
Adams, Christopher
Blevings, William
Crowdson, Samuel
Dick, John
Donohoe, H.
Downey, Samuel
Fort, John A.
Holiday, Daniel
Hopkins, James
Hennen, Alfred
Johnson, Henry
Lambert, James

Lawson, Columbus
Livingston, John
Morse, Nathan
Nicholson, John
Nicholson, Joseph
Nott, William
Ogden, Peter V.
Parkins, Isaac
Shepherd, R. D.
Sterne, Richard
Sumner, F. H.
Thompson, Samuel H.
Waggaman, George A.
Williams, James

This Volunteer Troop of Horse, or Company of Volunteer Dragoons, as it was called, was mustered into service December 20th 1814 and mustered out March 14, 1815.

APPENDIX 78

Complete list of the several units of the British army, battle of New Orleans, 1814-1815, under command of Lt. Gen. Sir Edward Packenham, exclusive of the Staff, Quartermaster, and Medical units.

4th Regiment, King's Own: Lt. Col. Brooke
7th Regiment, Royal Fusiliers: Lt. Col. Blakeney
14th Regiment, Duchess of York's Own (light dragoons) Lt. Col. Baker
21st Regiment, Royal North Britain Fusiliers: Lt. Col. Patterson
40th Regiment, Somersetshire: Lt. Col. Thornton
43rd Regiment, Monmouth (light Infantry): Lt. Col. Patrickson
44th Regiment, East Essex: Lt. Col. Hon. Thos. Mullen
85th Regiment, Buck Volunteers (light Infantry): Lt. Col. W. Thornton.
93rd Regiment, Highlanders: Lt. Col. Robert Dale
95th Regiment, Rifle Corps: Major Samuel Mitchell
1st Regiment, West Indian troops: Lt. Col. Whitby
5th Regiment, West Indian troops: Lt. Col. Hamilton
62nd Regiment, a detachment from this Regiment.
Engineers, Sappers and Miners: Lt. Col. Burgoyne
Rocket Brigade
Artillery: Lt. Col. Dixon
Royal Marines, 1500
Seamen: sailors from the fleet, 2000

About a month after the battle, news of the disastrous defeat of the British army reached Napoleon Bonaparte, then in exile at Elba. The

Emperor was extremely interested and asked for a detailed account of the affair, and for the opportunity of studying at first hand the type of rifle used by the Americans and which wrought such havoc with the enemy.

APPENDIX 79

Battle of New Orleans:

The United States Congress on February 27, 1815 sent the following communication to General Andrew Jackson and his Command:-

"That the thanks of Congress be, and they are hereby given to Maj. General Jackson, and through him to the officers and soldiers of the Regular army, of the militia, and of the volunteers under his command, the greater proportion of which troops consisted of militia and volunteers suddenly collected together, for their uniform gallantry and good conduct conspicuously displayed against the enemy from the time of his landing before New Orleans until his final expulsion therefrom; and particularly for their valour, skill and good conduct on the 8th, of January last, in repulsing, with great slaughter, a numerous British army of chosen veteran troops....."

And from the pen of William Cobbett, Esq., the Englishman known as "Porcupine" who wrote 'open letters' to English Officialdom:

(Addressing this letter to the Earl of Liverpool; March 20, 1815)-

"Gracious God! It is too shocking for animadversion. Half a dozen such expeditions (as the one against New Orleans), and I fear we should scarcely have men left to walk the parade at St. James's or to change duty at the Horse Guards....Above all, let me impress upon you, to be sincere in this (pending) pacification with America; endeavor to forget that she ever had been a colony to Great Britain. This is the most pernicious recollection we have among us; and I know that among many of your counsellors and bosom intimates, and even by many members of the Royal family, this ridiculous recollection is still maintained, and the idea still cherished, that she may become so again. ...you must treat them as an independent and high-minded people....Should you do this...you may succeed in making friends of a nation, which in a few years to come, will hold the highest rank in the estimation of the world."

APPENDIX 80

The tradition of the family that Nathan Morse, during some of the military operations incident to the battle of New Orleans, "was a

Lieut. Colonel of a squadron of cavalry, which was commanded by 'Colonel Fort.' cannot be substantiated by known records. This memo is inserted, however, in case later records on the affair should come to light, wherein the above item may be of use in the determination of some long lost archive of those times; - so many of which have been either destroyed by the Federal troops in 1862, or otherwise misplaced, in the confusion of an occupied country during a part of the Civil War.

APPENDIX 81

During the War of 1812, the flag of the United States was 15 stripes - alternating red and white, and a union of 15 stars, white in a blue field. After 1818, provision was made for the return to the original 13 stripes; using the union only to number the several old, and new states as admitted to the Union from time to time.

APPENDIX 82

Paul Tulane was a son of a wealthy French merchant of the West Indies who lost his fortune and barely escaped with his life in the Revolution in St. Domingo. Refugees, the family settled near Princeton, New Jersey, where Paul, the son, worked in a small grocery store in that college town where so many young men from the south were students. He came to New Orleans in 1822, and as a successful merchant amassed a large fortune which he invested to a great extent in New Jersey. In the decade following the American Civil War, he was greatly impressed with the dearth of southern boys at Princeton. Tulane realized that the post-war poverty in the southland made it impossible for the young men from the deep south to travel north or to Europe to obtain the higher education which their fathers and grandfathers had enjoyed. At his death, therefore, he established a great Fund which eventuated into the famous Tulane University at New Orleans. In Princeton, there is a street named in his honor.

.....
John McDonough, a native of Maryland, settled in New Orleans in 1800. Through a disappointment in love, - so it is said - he forsaked New Orleans society and became known as "McDonough the Miser". When he died he bequeathed Funds for the establishment of a great school system in New Orleans.

.....
Judah Touro, a Hebrew, came to New Orleans about the year 1800, and made a considerable fortune. He was one of the most philanthropic persons of that day in America. Among his numerous benefactions, and perhaps the one best known locally, is 'Touro Infirmary and Hospital', in New Orleans.

APPENDIX 83

It has become almost an unwritten law, that all you write about New Orleans, must designate the meaning of the word 'Creole'. A 'Creole', according to the accepted usage in Louisiana (but which does not always hold true when using the term in certain localities along the Caribbean Sea) was, and is, one of pure Spanish and French descent, living in Louisiana. Even in Louisiana, the term has been often incorrectly used to designate the properties of these Creoles; such as Creole slaves, Creole ponies, etc. Unfortunately, many of the underworld - especially those with a touch of the 'tar-brush', have attempted to hide their African descent, or to enamour the unwary Northern trade, by referring to themselves as Creoles. Actually, the First Families, and the best people of Louisiana are Creoles, in the correct meaning of the word.

APPENDIX 84

James H. Caldwell was born in England in 1793; came to America 1816; promoted theatricals in Charleston, South Carolina; established a theatre in Petersburg, Virginia; and from there went to New Orleans. He also promoted theatres in Nashville, Tenn., Baltimore, Md., and other Southern cities. He was instrumental in introducing the use of illuminating gas in New Orleans. He died in New York in 1863 having accumulated a large fortune estimated at several million dollars.....Nathan Morse was associated with Caldwell in at least two New Orleans projects; the Camp Street theatre and the Gas Company. The former was opened on May 14, 1823 on Camp Street between Poydras and Gravier, and it was said was the first building in New Orleans to be lighted by gas illumination. Nathan Morse was the President of the New Orleans Gas Illuminating Company of which Caldwell was one of the stockholders. There is a tradition in the Morse family, that in 1862 or 1863 when the Federal rule of General Butler in New Orleans made living there undesirable for so many who were not obliged to remain, Nathan Morse's son, Isaac E., was instrumental in arranging and facilitating Caldwell's escape to New York. A boat was boarded from a point on the Levee half-way between New Orleans and Harlem Plantation. At that time Caldwell was 70 years of age.

APPENDIX 85

Few Americans realize with what efficiency and fairness their country undertook the transformation of a Latin culture and civilization into an American one, in the taking over of the Louisiana area in 1803. Edward Livingston, was in a great sense responsible for this

to 1900.

The first of the two main methods of determining the age of a fossil is by using the ratio of the amount of carbon-14 to the amount of carbon-12 in the fossil. This ratio is known to be constant in all living organisms, but it decreases as the organism dies. By measuring the ratio of carbon-14 to carbon-12 in a fossil, it is possible to determine how long it has been since the organism died. The second method is by using the ratio of the amount of potassium-40 to the amount of argon-40 in the fossil. This ratio is also known to be constant in all living organisms, but it increases as the organism dies. By measuring the ratio of potassium-40 to argon-40 in a fossil, it is possible to determine how long it has been since the organism died.

to 1900.

The first of the two main methods of determining the age of a fossil is by using the ratio of the amount of carbon-14 to the amount of carbon-12 in the fossil. This ratio is known to be constant in all living organisms, but it decreases as the organism dies. By measuring the ratio of carbon-14 to carbon-12 in a fossil, it is possible to determine how long it has been since the organism died. The second method is by using the ratio of the amount of potassium-40 to the amount of argon-40 in the fossil. This ratio is also known to be constant in all living organisms, but it increases as the organism dies. By measuring the ratio of potassium-40 to argon-40 in a fossil, it is possible to determine how long it has been since the organism died.

to 1900.

The first of the two main methods of determining the age of a fossil is by using the ratio of the amount of carbon-14 to the amount of carbon-12 in the fossil. This ratio is known to be constant in all living organisms, but it decreases as the organism dies. By measuring the ratio of carbon-14 to carbon-12 in a fossil, it is possible to determine how long it has been since the organism died. The second method is by using the ratio of the amount of potassium-40 to the amount of argon-40 in the fossil. This ratio is also known to be constant in all living organisms, but it increases as the organism dies. By measuring the ratio of potassium-40 to argon-40 in a fossil, it is possible to determine how long it has been since the organism died.

friendly and equitable adjustment of the laws of France with the Common or English law, in that country. He, as one of the three Commissioners appointed for the purpose, did this with great skill and diplomacy, and much of the work and thought involved was due to his own genius and care. The problem was not unlike the situation which had to be met between the English and the French in Canada. As in Canada, in Louisiana, much of the old Latin code was preserved.

APPENDIX 86

The Lights and shadows of old New Orleans are aptly described by E. A. Parsons in the Louisiana Historical Society Magazine: July 1920. - "The whole scheme of existence is here, from Pere Antoinnes to Voodoo queens, from Chevaliers to water thieves, from the Carnival to Octoroon balls, from the proud dame to poor Mariquita, from pralines to Creole wonders in the gastronomic art....Beyond...was the dread la Cypriere, a region of treacherous bog, almost impassable swamp - a weird domain of dank vegetation, latanier, a jungle of willow and cypress, the abode of insect and reptile life, from which stalked, like Beowulf of old, the dread miasma."

It has been said that the modern 'Cabaret', as well as 'Jazz', originated in New Orleans: the former from the immigration from the West Indies; and the latter from the negroes.

APPENDIX 87

Brig Phoebe Ann.

New Orleans to New York. Little do we realize today, the complexities of the sailing vessels, especially along the coasts. In this run, the ships' logs on winds and currents, mention many hazards which those early skippers took in their stride as Masters of sailing craft. From New Orleans to New York, mention was frequently made of passing the 'Hole-in-Wall', 'Little Strip Keys', and the Great and Little Isaacs. There was the East Brother Rock, Gun Key, Orange Keys and the Bemini Islands.

APPENDIX 88

Many Frenchmen and French women, friends of LaFayette, emigrating to or visiting New Orleans or vicinity were directed by him to Nathan Morse. Among these were M. Caliste de Leyn, Mlle Guyon, M. Palais, M. Aulli, M. Grugeon, M. Pellerin, and others.

APPENDIX 89

Dr. Isaac Morse was "strenuous in opposition to the abuse of the lancet", and referred to himself as "a moderate bleeder"....On the occasion of the celebration of the 90th anniversary of the birth of George Washington, he suggested that if the First President had not been "bled to death, he might have been on hand to help keep his birthday." It was said he was also opposed to the excessive mercurial medication of the times.

Among the most popular anecdotes related about Dr. Morse, was the story - later to become almost a classic among the medical profession - concerning a young woman patient who 'took to her bed' without any medical evidences to warrant it. "Unless you immediately get out of bed" Dr. Morse is reported to have said, "I am going to get right in bed with you." Whether this remedy was effective is not recorded. Another anecdote had to do with a fire raging at his Mill on Morse's Creek, some three miles away from the Tavern where he was sitting conversing with some old cronie. A neighbor's servant rushed in breathlessly to announce the fact to the Doctor. "Landlord" called out Dr. Morse, after hearing the news, and without stirring from his seat, "give that man a glass of grog, he must be tired from running". He then resumed his conversation, knowing full well that the Mill would be completely burned down before he could possibly arrive there.

APPENDIX 90

Among those families intermarrying with the Morses in England, before the American immigration, were the families of Bond, Peck, Dennis, Clark and Ross:- names that are also found among the early settlers of Elizabethtowne. An Anthony Morse, a first cousin of Dr. Morse, married Mary Townley, granddaughter of Colonel Richard Townley and his wife Lady Elizabeth Carteret.

APPENDIX 91

Flip was made of rum and water mixed with small beer and muscovado sugar.

APPENDIX 92

Charles Carroll of Carrollton, was a second Cousin of Mary Blake who married Conrad Theodore Wederstrandt in 1759, and grandmother of Margaretta Smith Wederstrandt who was to become the wife of Isaac E. Morse; the parents of the 8th generation of this narrative.

John Carroll, the Archbishop, and the Founder of Georgetown College (of which Margaretta Wederstrandt's father was the second student) was a first cousin of Mary Blake's mother, Sarah Darnall. All were descended from Colonel Henry Darnall, (a son of Sir Philip Darnall of London) who died in Maryland in 1711 and whose Will in the same year mentions his "granddaughter Sarah, daughter of my son Philip, - then less than 15 years old." This was Sarah Darnall, the mother of Mary Blake (above).

APPENDIX 93

It has been said by competent observers that the high political honesty prevalent in Louisiana between 1800 and 1830, was the purest that has existed at any time, anywhere, within the United States. This memorandum seems pertinent in view of the widespread political corruption in that state during the past decade or so.

APPENDIX 94

Dr. Luzenberg of New Orleans was said to have been the first surgeon to have removed a gangrenous bowel, in hernia, and sutured the ends together, successfully.

APPENDIX 95

It was but ten years before, that John Warde, who hunted with hounds for over half a century, and who was called the father of modern English hunting, wrote or inspired the following:

"Here is health to John Warde and success to his hounds;
Quarmites may swish at the rasper so clever,
And skim ridge and furrow, and charge an ox-fence;
But will riding alone make a Sportsman? No never."

APPENDIX 96

"Through the generations, under the flat, horizonless sky, its secret tongue speaks menacingly. MISSISSIPPI, MISSISSIPPI, MISSISSIPPI, lisps the ripples, nibbling along a thousand miles of levees....All the low coasts of this region of the world are dominated by the mighty vein of the planet for which there is no sufficient name. The tongue is not adequate to compass the idea of the feeling which the river engenders in him. His favorite names for it are like the names of ancient gods, attempts not to name it at all.....MISSISSIPPI, he whispers, hoping the river will not hear him. FATHER OF WATERS, said the Indian, paying it.

rhetorical honour, as though it were the ghost of the old man of the tribe to be appeased. And OL' MAN RIBAH, OL' MAN RIBAH, sings the black man with a nice deprecatory humour while he teases the banjo, artfully absolving himself by laughter and melody from a thought that is too great to bear.....He is not the only exile there. Here in this low-country of moss-swathed swamps and forests, where the oldest continent bleeds to death slowly through a million bayous and half stagnant, tidal estuaries, all men build along the banks like muskrats, hoping that the river will let them stay. Man gambles with this river as he gambles with much the same kind of thing on the slopes of sleeping volcanoes. He gambles successfully for a while - and then he loses." - Hervey Allen in 'Anthony Adverse'.

APPENDIX 97

George Strawbridge was a graduate of Princeton, class of 1802; and later a Justice, Supreme Court of Louisiana.

APPENDIX 98

In regard to this, John Wyeth, Secretary of State wrote to the President: "...I have the honor to state in answer to your request, that a communication was made to Mr. Morse by this Department, on the 30th of August in relation to the slaves belonging to American citizens liberated by the local authorities at Nassau. Since that period, the Charge d'affairs of the United States at London, has repeatedly drawn the attention of the British Government to the subject, but without any satisfactory result.."

APPENDIX 99

Among the provisions for the welfare of the negro slave, were the following articles in the "Black Code": The aged, infirm and blind, to be clothed and fed and taken care of at the expense of the Master, or a fine was levied at the rate of \$25.00 each offense; slaves were allowed $\frac{1}{2}$ hour for Breakfast, 2 hours for Dinner, and no work on Sundays; the Master was obliged to pay for anything stolen by his slave; For a slave condemned to death, the Master was to receive \$500.00 from the State.

APPENDIX 100

Philemon C. Wederstrandt was a son of Conrad Theodore Wederstrandt, a Deputy Commissioner of Purchases for the Continental army, during

the American Revolution, a native of Rochelle, France, and for some ten years the Commander of a Merchant vessel which plied between that French port and the West Indies. In 1758 'the fate of war' brought him to the Eastern shore of the then Province of Maryland, where he settled. He, himself, was a son of John Charles Wederstrandt born in Gottenborg, Sweden, but a resident of Rochelle, France, where he had married a French lady, Marie Robert.

When the Wederstrandts settled in Louisiana, they named two of their plantations after earlier Maryland estates: "The Hermitage", and "Blakeford". The original "Blakford" in Maryland, was once called Coursey's Neck, - a part of the 1600 acre Grant known as "My Lord's Gift". It derived its name from Charles Blake, grandfather of the wife of Conrad Theodore Wederstrandt, an early owner. The same plantation, still known as "Blakford", exists to this day, as the estate of Mr. and Mrs. George M. Moffett, on the Eastern shore of Maryland.

APPENDIX 101

The Wederstrandt Plantations in Louisiana:

- Blakeford Plantation: near St. Francisville, Feliciana Parish, Overseer Mr. Samuel Glasscock. Plantation lay along Thompson Creek. It was purchased by Wederstrandt about 1820 and sold about 1823 to Mr. Joseph N. Chambers; value \$35,000.
- Hermitage Plantation: was 19 Leagues above New Orleans in St. James Parish. Purchased about 1826 from Mr. Valcour Aime. \$33,000...11 X 80 arpents on the Mississippi River. Overseer: - Mr. Joseph Lartique.
- Carlton: a country place near Baltimore, Md. valued in 1826 at \$8,000; and their pew in the Roman Catholic Cathedral in Baltimore, were among their Maryland properties they retained.

APPENDIX 102

Isaac Edward Morse's aunt - "Aunt Betsy", was Elizabeth Morse, a sister of Nathan. She married Jonas Marsh, a brother of John Craig Marsh (grandfather of Sarah Avery Leeds of Avery's Island). "Aunt Betsy" resided in New Iberia, and her daughters and grand-daughters married into the families of Abbey, Cade, Taylor, de Valcour, de la Houssaye, Foster and Frere.

APPENDIX 103

Isaac Edward Morse and Samuel F. B. Morse were fifth cousins: which is the same relation which exists between Theodore Roosevelt and Franklin D. Roosevelt.

APPENDIX 104

Isaac E. Morse, 28th. Congress: 1845, Washington, D. C.

Of the 227 Members of Congress, only 7 of them (4 Senators and 3 Representatives) maintained private residences. 18 lived in private residences, and the rest lived and boarded in "Messses". There were 45 such Messses, each accomodating from 6 to 12.

Mrs. Adams, op. Brown's Hotel	H. V. Hill's, Cap. Hill
Mrs. Ballard's, Capitol Hill	Mr. Hyatt's, op. Brown's Hotel
Mrs. Brawmers, Penn Av. between 2nd. and 3rd. St.	Jno. M. Johnson's Pa. Av. be- tween $4\frac{1}{2}$ & 6th St.
Mrs. Brereton's, C St. Near 3rd. Brown's Hotel	Mrs. King's, F. St. between 13th and 14th St.
Mrs. Buck's. Penna Ave. near $4\frac{1}{2}$ St.	Miss McCubbin's, La Ave. be- tween $4\frac{1}{2}$ and 6th St.
Mrs. Carter's, Capitol Hill	Mrs. McDaniel's corner Pa Ave. and $4\frac{1}{2}$ St.
Mr. Clement's, Capitol Hill	Mr. Masi's corner Ps Av & $4\frac{1}{2}$ St.
Coleman's Hotel	Dr. Mayo's B St. bet 2nd & 3rd St.
Cudlipp's, Penna. Av. between 3rd and $4\frac{1}{2}$ St.	Mrs. Mount's, Capitol Hill
Exchange Hotel, C. St.	Mrs. Owner's, Capitol Hill
Dr. Fenoir's, $4\frac{1}{2}$ St. between Penna. Av. & Missouri Av.	Mrs. Peyton's, corner Penn. Av. and $4\frac{1}{2}$ St.
Mr. Fletcher's, E. St.	Miss Polk's, Penn Av. between 3rd and $4\frac{1}{2}$ St.
Follansbee's, Capitol Hill	Mrs. Potter's, Penna Ave. be- tween 3rd and $4\frac{1}{2}$ St.
Fuller's Hotel	Mrs. Robinson's, Cap. Hill
Galabrun's Hotel	Mrs. Runney's, Cap. Hill
Mrs. Galvin's, C between 3rd and $4\frac{1}{2}$ St.	Mrs. Scott's, Penn Av. between 3rd and 4th St.
Miss Gurley's, next to the Exchange Hotel	Mrs. Scott's, Missouri Ave. be- tween 3rd and $4\frac{1}{2}$ St.
Mrs. Hamilton's, Penna. Ave. be- tween $4\frac{1}{2}$ and 6th St.	Miss Shonnard's, Penna. Ave. between 3rd and $4\frac{1}{2}$ St.
Hepburn's, corner $4\frac{1}{2}$ Street and Missouri Avenue	Mr. Scrivner's, Capitol Hill
Mrs. Hewitt's, 3rd St. between Penna. Ave. and C St.	Mrs. Spriggs, Capitol Hill
Mrs. Ulrick's, op. State Dept.	Mrs. Whitwell's, Capitol Hill
Mrs. Whitney's, Capitol Hill	Mr. Williams, Missouri Ave.

APPENDIX 105

According to Pomeroy's "Biography of the Signers to the Declaration of Independence": Phila: 1827:- and referring to this Commission which appealed to Canada to join the revolting colonies; "The ardour which had prevailed among the Canadians in favor of the measure when the American troops first entered the country, had been damped by the inefficiency of the force employed, and almost wholly destroyed by the defeat and death of Montgomery. The inhabitants became provoked....."

APPENDIX 106

The winter trip from New Orleans to Washington, via the Mississippi river - Wheeling, Va., and Cumberland, Md., during the late 1840s is described in the autobiography of Joseph Jefferson. An extract is as follows:-

"Steamboat from New Orleans - before, arrival at Wheeling... was blocked with ice and delayed over a week....Stage-coach at Wheeling started at 5 A.M.: the Stage-coach office was cold and damp. At one side was a small table with a large pot of coffee, cups and saucers, and cold sausage and bread. Behind the table was a tall darky leaning against the wall, fast asleep....Heavy old coach...no special seats...nap....snoring...horses changed...sun-up...Breakfast: hot coffee, ham and eggs and buckwheat cakes....passengers amuse themselves by singing and telling stories....Supper station-late at night... summit of mountains..at times we thought the stage would blow over...ivy roads...horses slip and fall... reach Cumberland, Maryland, at daybreak...(It was 24 hours from Wheeling Virginia to Cumberland, Maryland.)....."

As late as 1850 there was no railway connection between New Orleans and Washington. It was during that era that steam navigation of the Mississippi river attained considerable importance. As many as sixty boats were constantly operating on that river at that time, and it was not unusual for one or more to be sunk every week. To provide for these mishaps, reserve boats were constantly available.

APPENDIX 107

On Circus - now South Rampart Street - and between Triton Walk - now Howard Street - and Julia Street, was the head of a canal which connected the city to Lake Ponchatrain, which was built by the 'Americans' to compete with the older canal - the Bayou St. Jean. Here, at the head of the 'American' Canal, were the "Mobile Landing", and the "Pensacola Landing", to accomodate vessels from those ports.

APPENDIX 108

The French Opera House in New Orleans built in 1859 at the corner of Toulouse and Bourbon Streets, soon became an institution closely identified with the city. When the edifice was destroyed by fire in 1919, His Excellency Mr. Jules Jusserand, Ambassador of France to the United States, dispatched an official telegram of Condolence to the people of New Orleans.

APPENDIX 109

"The Boys" written by Oliver Wendell Holmes, for the class reunion in 1859:

"That fellow's the 'Speaker', - the one on the right: 'Mr. Mayor', my young one, how are you tonight? That's our 'Member of Congress' we say when we chaff; There's the 'Reverend' What's his name, - don't make me laugh.

.....

Then here's to our boyhood, its gold and its gray!
The Stars of its winter, the dews of its May!
And when we have done with our life-lasting toys,
Dear Father, take care of thy children, The Boys."

APPENDIX 110

The Daily National Intelligencer, a leading newspaper in Washington during Isaac E's Washington residence gives an account of some of the inconveniences pertaining to the trip to California from the eastern seaboard by way of the Isthmus of Panama:

"A man...pays about \$450 for a cabin passage from New York to San Francisco...the expense of crossing the Isthmus...\$50.
...the voyage is made in thirty days...the majority of the passengers are deck-passengers, (they assemble around the galley at grub-time, like convicts in a prison, each with his tin pot, plate, and spoon to receive from some insolent understrapper his allowance of unsavory food...(you land well up in the river chagres..and board another vessel on the Pacific side).

APPENDIX 111

In 1857 a new political party was organized in America which had for its chief tenets the dis-enfranchisement of Roman Catholics and all alien born who should come to the American shores. Among

its bitter opponents were many of the descendants of the early English Puritans; and in this number was Isaac E. - who still retained the faith of his protestant forefathers. To quote from his writing which appeared in the Press, under his pen-name of 'Attakapas':--

"(After quoting the writings and views of the most distinguished statesmen and writers in England concerning the civil disabilities of the Jews in England). I presume, I may be asked what has this to do with Know-Nothingism, and how does it apply to this country, where no civil disability of the Jews exist, and where it is disclaimed that any are intended against the Catholics, at least in Louisiana and Maryland.

It has this much at least to do with the question; it ought to satisfy every Jew and Catholic in America that the long-suffering and persecutions which they have endured in England for centuries, and which is hardly done away with in relation to Catholics, and is still upon the statute books against the Jews, was the consequence of a bigoted prejudice against a man for his religious opinions, which had no foundation in reason, and ought to enlist every man of them against anything that even looks like a persecution for opinion's sake. Although every Lodge, and every man of the Know-Nothing party, now may publicly proclaim that they do not intend to make a religious test, it cannot be denied, that at the commencement they did, and that the most angry debates occurred upon the propriety of modifying that obnoxious article in their platform. How policy may have pared off and smoothed the corners we know, but let those who have suffered from a religious persecution beware how they put power into the hands of any people whose birth as a party originated in two equally unjust, absurd, and ridiculous prejudices; hostility to Catholics and to alien-born citizens. If they have smoothed over, covered up, or even taken out that plank of their platform, the other exists, and it can and may be shown at a future time, that such material is as unfit, unsound and worthless to construct the foundations as the other.....And if danger is really apprehended from the followers of a religion (Catholic) who acknowledge a weak, insignificant temporal power without an army or navy as the head of their church, (the papacy), (then, to be consistent), forbid the Episcopalians from England, who recognize the King of England as the head of their church."

APPENDIX 112

The Founder of the Mt. Vernon Ladies Association stressed that the Vice-Regents "should be of a family whose social position would command the confidence of the state (from which they were to be appointed)."

APPENDIX 113

The Wederstrandts acquired the tract which they called "Harlem", sometime prior to 1820. The land was a part of an original Grant of the Spanish Governor Etienne Miro (Governor between 1785-1791), and was not far from the ruins of an old deserted French river fortification which had been constructed in 1700 by Iberville. Some of the adjoining property had been owned by Daniel Clark, and by Edward Livingston. The name Harlem was given to the plantation, because, according to Wederstrandt, the area lying as it did behind the levee, resembled the lands about the city of that name in Holland, with which he had become familiar during the course of his career at sea.

APPENDIX 114

The Family, and the Overseers always referred to the plantation negroes, as "the people".

APPENDIX 115

The Brooke Family of Maryland:

Mary Blake (1741-1820) was a grandmother of Margaretta Smith Wederstrandt Morse, and a great-grandmother of Alex. Porter Morse. Mary Blake was a granddaughter of Philip Darnall and Eleanor Brooke - ("Eleanor Brooke mar. 1st. Philip Darnall son of her step-father Col. Henry Darnall by a former marriage, 2nd William Digges."). Eleanor was a daughter of Major Thomas Brooke and Eleanor (Hatton) his wife; and Major Thomas Brooke was a son of Robert Brooke, who arrived in Maryland 1650 with his wife, ten children, and twenty-eight servants, all transported at his own expense, and settled on the Patuxent river at De La Brooke Manor. The Brooke family are said to be descended from Saher de Quinci, Magna Charta baron. From the very first, the Brooke family has had a most distinguished record in Maryland.

Capt. James Neale of Wolleston Manor, Maryland:

In 1641-42, Capt. James Neale was granted 2000 acres along the shores of the Potomac river, in the lower part of Charles County, Maryland. Here he set up a manor, which was so in function as well as in name; although he was absent abroad for a number of years in matters pertaining to Spanish and Portugese affairs. It has been said that he was a grandson of Shane O'Neill, the Irish leader who had been virtually 'King of Ulster', until his untimely death in 1567. Two of the young children of the deceased 'The Lord O'Neill', so it has been said, were thereupon taken care of by a Catholic priest who

sought the advice of the Pope at Rome for their proper education. According to accounts one of these children was entrusted to the King of France and the other to the King of Spain, for proper bringing up. The latter married a Lady of the Spanish Court, and had as issue James Neill or Neale, later to be known as Captain James Neale of Wolleston Manor in Maryland. Capt. James Neale was closely identified with the early Lord Baltimores, and with the Roman Catholic influences at the English Court, as also with the Spanish colonial affairs. It has been said that Queen Henrietta Marie, the widow of the beheaded Charles I had planned to cross the Atlantic to seek refuge at the Manor of the Neales^a in Maryland, but that a naval force manned by Cromwell's sailors intercepted the expedition. Captain James Neale married Anne Gill; and of this union was born Henrietta Marie Neale who married Richard Bennett of Maryland. After his death she married Philemon Lloyd of "Wye House", on the eastern shore of Maryland; - and a daughter of this latter marriage, Henrietta Marie Lloyd, married Charles Blake, a son of Charles Blake of London, and of the family of Admiral Blake of the English navy. A son, John Sayer Blake, married Sarah Darnall: - and became ancestors of the 8th generation of this narrative. And, thus-wise, Irish and Spanish blood (as well as the Roman Catholic religion) was introduced into the veins of the family of this narrative, originally Puritans from that ultra anti-Catholic shire of Wilts.

After a division of the original Grant of Wolleston Manor, the area became the seat of several foremost estates of the 18th century:- among these were "West Hatton", "Hard Bargain", "Charleston", and "Mount Republic", - a reproduction in painting of the original Wolleston Manor House - as obtained from authentic specifications - is in the possession of a member of the family of this narrative, who resides not far from the original manor; - at "Rose Hill" near La Plata.

The Lloyd Family of Maryland.

According to John Williamson Palmer, in "By the Waters of the Chesapeake", the Lloyds were typical of all that was bravest and best in the colonial life, of all that was most sumptuous in equipment, most profuse and gracious in entertainment, most instructive and judicious in the intellectual diversions and embellishments of their times.

.....

In 1668, Edward Lloyd, the Puritan of Virginia, who sought and obtained refuge in Maryland, set up his son Philemon to be Lord of the Manor of Wye and Master of Wye House, on the Eastern shore of

Maryland. The original structure was destroyed in 1781 when a party of the King's troops looted and burned the mansion. The mansion was later rebuilt and continued to house succeeding generations of Lloyds. Behind the garden is the ancient burial ground, where lie the dust of Henrietta Marie Lloyd (died, 1697), the daughter of Capt. James Neale.

James Orrick, of "Orricke Fancy", on the north bank of the river Severn, came from Scotland in 1650 and settled in Maryland: m. Mary ---. Their son John Orrick m. 1719 Susanna, daughter of Col. Thomas and Rebecca (Larlen) Lightfoot Hammond. Their son Nicholas Orrick (1725-1781) m. Hannah, daughter of Capt. John Cromwell. Their daughter, Margaretta Orrick m. Judge Job Smith of Baltimore, grandparents of Margaretta Wederstrandt Morse. Col. Thomas Hammond (see above) was a son of John Hammond (1643-1707) who came from the Isle of Wight, to Maryland in 1685. In 1695 he surveyed and laid out Annapolis. He had married Mary Howard a daughter or granddaughter of Edmond Howard.

.....

Capt. John Cromwell was a son of Henry Cromwell and grandson of Sir Oliver Cromwell, uncle of the Protector.

Further affiliations with Maryland and Virginia, were to be made when two of Porter's children married sons and daughters of those states: one a member of the Warfield and McIntosh family of 'Longwood', Maryland; another a son of Thomas F. Ryan, of 'Oak Ridge' the magnificent estate in the mountains of Virginia. A daughter resides at historic 'Rose Hill' in southern Maryland.

APPENDIX 116

"Old Nassau" was written by a member of this class: H. P. Peck, and first appeared in the Nassau Literary Magazine, in the Freshman year of this class of 1862. The music was composed by Karl A. Langlotz, who taught music at Princeton, as well as fencing.

APPENDIX 117

Many of the students eat in groups, or "Messses". Among these was the 'Hickory Club'. The formal Clubs were not started until after 1877.

APPENDIX 118

Years later, Arthur Davenport, of "Thistlewood", Gordonsville, Va., wrote Porter, then living in Washington, D. C., to assemble a team of the young men in Washington, to play a Match in Cricket, with some Britishers in Virginia.

APPENDIX 119

In 1858 Nathan had applied for an appointment in the United States Diplomatic service. The Secretary of State, Louis Cass, replied that "neither of the Secretary-ships of Legation ... is vacant (but) I shall not fail to present your (application) to the President.."

APPENDIX 120

The American Civil War, or the War between the States, or the "Rebellion" was in reality a war, necessary perhaps, to determine exactly the relation between the States of the American Union and the Federal central government. It was in fact, a 'hangover' from 1787. In 1787, - had these facts been clearly determined, the Constitution may have failed to have been accepted by a sufficient number of the American States.

Freedom of the slaves and the abrupt abolition of slavery was actually but an incidental part of the program. The Abolitionists of the years preceding 1861, - as were the Abolitionists preceding the World War of 1917, were quick to take the advantage that the opportunity afforded. In the former instance their mission was to abolish slavery; in the latter instance to abolish alcoholic beverages. Both accomplished their purposes, but at a terrific price. I believe that the intelligent American negro of today will agree that had the emancipation of his race been accomplished in a more orderly and sane fashion, the race antagonism which has existed in America since those bloody days would have been completely averted. One can cite for example the present relations between the two races in the other English speaking communities in the new world, where emancipation and enfranchisement was done in a more sensible way. The price of this hasty and poorly conducted wholesale emancipation and enfranchisement on the heels of a bloody strife between two groups of white men in America, through no fault of the South's, was, and is, being paid for by the negro race itself.

As to the Emancipation Proclamation, itself. The slaves living only in those States, or parts of States not considered by Lincoln as 'in rebellion', were freed. The Proclamation was aimed to embarrass the seceding states only. Maryland, Kentucky and Delaware were not affected; nor were ten parishes in Louisiana, fifty-five counties in Virginia.

Had the Southern states succeeded in their mission, no one can say what the final outcome might have been. Many even in the North, (O.W. Holmes, for one) predicted an ultimate peaceful union between the North and the South in any event. One recent writer, who has overlooked the probable ascendancy of real talent in the South, - had it won - draws another, and I believe incorrect picture

of the eventualities of the South's success. In another generation or two, the follies of the early Abolitionists and the Post-civil war Reconstructionists, should be overcome, provided there is close cooperation between the better minds of the whites and blacks in our country, and some real effort made to distribute the minority race throughout the entire nation. Ill-advised methods may simply precipitate more difficulty. If improperly handled, this negro question in the North American States, may result in dreadful consequences.

If the author may venture an opinion, the complete centralization of power in Washington, (as determined upon in 1865) should be effected in the near future. Seventy years is an adequate 'Cooling Time' for the consolidation of the gains towards central power, as instituted by the decision of the 1860s. There is an old saying, "Put your eggs in one basket - BUT WATCH THAT BASKET". What the majority of the American people were unable to fully accomplish in a political sense in 1776, in 1787 and 1865, might be done after 1935. Perhaps, indeed, our Constitution might be changed to embrace two points which were embodied into the governments of the Confederate states, and of the British: a single term of seven years for the Presidency, - and the Vote of Confidence Appeal for the head of the government.

APPENDIX 121

"Kincaid's Battery" was probably the most popular novel which came from the pen of G. W. Cable. In the fly-leaf of a copy presented to Porter are the following lines in Cable's handwriting:

"To Alexander Porter Morse, fellow Louisianian, fellow Confederate soldier, and kind friend of this story before it was written."

In describing a parade down Canal Street in New Orleans, of Confederate troops embarking for the front, he writes: "...What a brave and happy half-and-half of Creoles and 'Americans' do your moist eyes beam down upon; here a Canonge and there an Ogden - a Zacharie - a Fontennette - Willie Geddes - Tom Norton - a Fusilier; Nat Frellsen - a Tramontana - a Grandissime; - and a Grandissime again! Percy Chilton - a Dudley - Arthur Puig y Puig-a De Armas - MacKnight - Violet - Avendano - Rob Rareshide - Guy Palfrey - a Morse....."

APPENDIX 122

Admiral Farragut, U.S.N., was a son of a Spaniard, and had spent his early life in New Orleans. At the time of the capture of New Orleans, he was 60 years of age.

APPENDIX 123

Abraham Lincoln's purpose was to hold the union of the States together. He believed that the slaves should be purchased by the Federal government, and that the people of the South should be the ones to decide when and if they should be granted the ballot. The Emancipation Proclamation was purely military strategy and an effort to put England on the side of the North. The Emancipation freed slaves only in the warring sections, and did not affect the other slave holding states of Maryland, Kentucky, and Missouri.

After his assassination, President Johnson attempted to follow the plan laid down by Lincoln, but was forced by certain politicians to pursue the cruel treatment of the South which thenceforth, - for almost a decade prevailed.

APPENDIX 124

Mr. Fernandez, who was connected by marriage with the Lesseps, lived at his beautiful plantation house which (erected 1840) was one of the best works of the New Orleans architect Gallier. This house, which is near Chalmette battle field, - decades later, became the property of Judge Renee Beauregard whose daughter was to marry a son of Porter, - the 8th generation of this story. The Beauregard family called the place "Bueno Retiro".

APPENDIX 125

When General Butler, the Federal Authority in New Orleans issued his famous Order 228, directed against the women of New Orleans, he provoked comment through the English speaking world. It was condemned in the British House of Commons, and drew from the "London Times" the statement that it was the peak of tyranny of a Victor over the Vanquished; and that the plight of the African slaves had been no more intolerable than was the plight of the whites, at the time, in New Orleans.

General Butler in New Orleans.

In justice to General Butler, one must realize the tremendous task he had as an American jailor of some hundred thousand of fellow Americans. That many of his actions were on the border of barbarism and poorly devised, cannot be denied. Yet, as a whole, perhaps, history will soften his regime. His problems were complex. Of the 168,000 people in New Orleans, about a third of them were citizens of foreign countries. These latter, despite their foreign citizenship, were predominantly in full sympathy with the American 'rebels'.

In order to preserve their properties the great part of the American residents who took 'the oath' were merely giving lip service to their conquerors. "It was understood" reports a contemporary, "that the oaths given to the Yankees for the purpose of retaining property was a mere form of words not binding upon their consciences". It was not unlike the superficial submission of some of their ancestors in the outward acknowledgement of the established church in England in the 17th century. Added to these problems was the great number of refugees which came into the city; the arrival of certain undesirable elements from the North, bent on exploiting their fellow Americans in distress; and a large negro population. His 'Spy' system was rather crude, and negroes and whites from both sides were utilized in a rather clumsy way, conducive to further confusion. The control of his own troops in a city where the underworld was well organized was but a small part of his troubles. Added to this was the tendency for the conquerors to do a little polite looting, and the disagreements with other officers in his command, - notable in the handling of the negroes who aimlessly roamed the city. That the people in New Orleans suffered, there can be no doubt, - but when did a whole population thrive or be happy under the iron heel of a conquering army? Although surpassing previous experiences, this was the third time, on American soil, that this branch of the Morse family had been exposed to the inconveniences of living in enemy occupied territory, - the first, being the mild occupancy by the Dutch in New Jersey, in 1673; the second being the frequent occupancy by the King's forces at Rahwack Neck in New Jersey, - during the revolution of 1776.

APPENDIX 126

At Fort Delaware, at "Pea-Patch Island" in the Delaware river some 30 miles southwest of Philadelphia was a camp for Confederate prisoners. In the cemetery on the New Jersey mainland nearby, are the graves of over 2,000 Confederate soldiers who died there.

APPENDIX 127

At Moreauville, (La.) May 17th, 1865: "This morning" wrote Porter in his diary, "a prisoner was brought in, riding a jet black mare of great beauty and silky coat; her thin red nostrils and light symmetrical limbs marked her as of blooded stock. She was limping from a gunshot wound in the shoulder from which the red blood was oozing freely, and coursing down her foreleg; nostrils dilated, eyes bright and glassy, and wet with white foam. Her rider who wore the chevrons of a sergeant, was wounded in the breast, and was leaning heavily forward with his breast upon the pommel of his saddle; while his captor was leading his beautiful mare by the bridle reins. She

seemed to struggle to keep her feet, and walked with great difficulty until her owner was taken out of the saddle. Then she sank heavily to the ground with a thud; and threw her legs out violently from her body, under the impulse of great pain. At every motion the blood spouted out filling the furrows where she lay. Meanwhile the sergeant's head rested on the ground nearby; rider and horse had both laid down together to die."

APPENDIX 128

During the latter part of the civil war, both sides resorted to conscription. Many in both sections of the country evaded this draft, and Porter, traveling on orders from Louisiana to Richmond in the summer of 1864, "with a party consisting of four officers, one orderly, a negro servant, - all mounted -, and a little brown pack-mule named 'Judy'", relates their passage through the Mississippi pine woods:

"Last evening we crossed Pearl river at Ford's Ferry - a wide river and very bad bottom. Honey Island, twelve miles below, is the nest of the deserters and jay-hawkers from Mississippi, who are said to number some hundreds of well armed men who have retreated to this fastness and defy the conscript officers. Every night we are entertained by our piney woods hosts with an account of the bloody doings of these bandits, and we dream of Honey Island and jayhawkers all night. ... Riding through the piney woods belt, one is struck by the contrast between the soil and the women; one is poor and barren as a sandhill, the other prolific as rabbits; and as we passed a cabin and looked down upon 15 or 16 tow-heads that filled the door, and saw another in the arms, we felt the truth of the saw, 'a poor man for children' and drove the spurs into my horse 'Guy Livingston' and began to muse upon the mutability of human affairs, when the Major rode up by our side and pointed to the proprietor of that cabin, that tract, and that flourishing colony of 'male boys and female girls', and suggested that our conscript officers seldom let a poor devil with those surroundings escape them; the reflection was a sad but just one, and many similar cases of hardship had come under my own eye, and it was a relief to know that at least one of these poor devils had eluded the grasp of the conscript officers."

APPENDIX 129

It is a peculiar fact that two of the most important influences that were to so greatly affect the conduct of the American people,

in the Civil War, and the "Reconstruction" which followed, were "Madmen". John Brown, and his body "which kept marching on" was undoubtedly a strong factor in providing a 'morale' to the Northern boys (and their mothers who sent them to fight and die) in the invasion of the Southern states. John Wilkes Booth, the demented actor who shot Lincoln, removed from office the one man who would have been able to control the gross selfishness and corrupt political intrigue which spelt ruin for the battered and bleeding South, and demoralization to the soul of many of the Northern people.

APPENDIX 130

The South depended, not only on England but also on the North for much of its materials; Porter's sword bore the stamp of the Ames Manufacturing Co., of Cabotsville, Mass.; and the buttons on his Confederate uniform were made by 'Horstman and Allen' of New York.

APPENDIX 131

The official records of these gallant soldiers in gray, are indeed meagre. For instance the Records of Louisiana Confederate soldiers, published in New Orleans 1920 (Vol III, Book 1) give the following brief account of Porter's war service:

Morse, A.L. (Also borne on Rolls as Morse, A.P.)
Co. I, 1st. La. Cav. En. Oct. 8th, - Morganza. Rolls
from April 1862 to June 1863, Absent - detailed by
Gen. Ledbetter at Chattanooga, Tenn.

APPENDIX 132

There was a sharp contrast, however, between the festivities of this wedding, and that of her sister to Mr. Schiff, of Paris, before the war. For the latter, there were some 500 guests - 50 of whom were house guests for the week; they were waited upon by Imbert, the famous New Orleans chef and caterer who came with his entire staff a week in advance to prepare the delicacies. On the occasion, "the great Greek porticoes were hung with a thousand lights which shone far out into the river, dancing cloths were laid over the lower floors, and the Chambers were all festoned with flowers. The feast was so bounteous that the very boatmen on the Mississippi, who had brought the guests up the river to Belle Grove Landing, came in for their share of the festivities." "Belle Grove" was built in 1857 by John Andrews, formerly from Virginia, and during the few years preceding the Civil War was the scene of many lavish entertainments. The plantation comprised two thousand acres. A few years after the war, the estate was sold to Mr. Ware, who continued to maintain the hospitality of the estate for many decades and who constructed two race tracks on the plantation.

APPENDIX 133

The following lines, written by Isaac E., and concerning his visit to Ireland in 1832, were found in a letter addressed to a friend:

"When memory casts its faintest glance
On days and scenes far, far away,
And O'er my mind bright visions dance
To charm me like some magic lay:
Howe'er remote that time may be
Sweet Katrine Loch, I'll think of thee...
.....
"Though I n'er may revisit Killarney,
Fond memories will sometimes recall thee:
Each rock and each glen
Shall be dear to me then
Though far, far away from Killarney."

APPENDIX 134

On Jan. 13th 1866, Caleb Cushing wrote from Washington to Isaac E.:
"I have lately heard of you from a common friend and learned with pleasure that you had passed personally well through the calamities of the last four years. Can I be of use to you in any affairs either here or in New Orleans?" And nine months later to his widow, Margaretta: "I will with pleasure aid you in the prosecution of your claim for balance of account due Mr. Morse. Be good enough to copy and sign the accompanying letter, upon which I will have the case looked up, so as to be ready to confer with you on the subject when you come to Washington. I doubt not that the President will remember Mr. Morse with kindness. Please to enclose to me the letter to Mr. Seward."

APPENDIX 135

In 1865 a Nation was truly born. Until then there had been numerous attempts to form a firm Union among the English speaking people in America, and their constantly expanding territory. The idea began in New England. More than one of the steps were achieved at the cost of dissention, disputes and bloodshed. The "trend" has been towards a centralization of power, which in its final degree may make us a more effective and more powerful government able to fill some predestined world-wide function.

The New England Confederacy of 1643

The Temporary Congress of 1690

The Plan of Union agreed upon in the Convention of 1754

The Stamp Act Congress of 1765

The Continental Congress of 1774
The Declaration of Independence of 1776
Articles of Confederation of 1778
The Constitution of the United States, 1787
Armed suppression of the 'Western Insurrection', 1794
Defeat by arms of the 'States Rights' theory, 1865

APPENDIX 136

It was in that year that the "Carpet Baggers" were planning the "Constitution" for Louisiana, which gave suffrage to the blacks, and disenfranchised all whites who had defended Secession. Probably no Southern state suffered more than did Louisiana, with the Carpetbaggers, 'Scalawags', and negro legislators.

APPENDIX 137

In addition, Maryland was sympathetic with the aspirations of the more southerly states, during the entire conflict.

According to George W. Paschal: Paschal's annotated Constitution: 1868: - (and referring to the Confederate States and Secession):-

"The majority of the legislators (of Maryland) being known to side with the rebellion, the assemblage of that body was prevented by the military power of the United States."

The Maryland Regiments in the Confederate army, were a brilliant and distinguished body of troops.

In the desolation which followed, in the deep South, the Maryland Legislature appropriated \$100,000 for relief; and this was greatly augmented by private funds, and funds raised from Bazaars.

APPENDIX 138

The weekly magazine "Southern Society" - which after a year became "The Leader", maintained offices at 20 South Street, in Baltimore, and was one of a number of literary publications which sprang up immediately after the war, - as the work of the young men of the late Confederacy. Its advertisements carried several from New York concerns, notably A. T. Stewart. Baltimore, the land of the Oyster and the Canvas Back Duck, was just beginning to use Charles Street as a prominent promenade. Among the theatres, was the Holliday Street Theatre, then showing the English Opera, Mr. Hackett, and Mr. Edwin Forrest. A less serious place of amusement was the Front Street Theatre. It was at Concordia Hall, that Charles Dickens, in that year, conducted his Readings. Among the things advocated by the

'Southern Society", was a more tangible recognition of the burial place of Edgar Allen Poe, and the construction of a new hotel, "such as was the St. Charles in New Orleans." Among other features were the quotations from the New York Stock Exchange, as received 'by telegraph'.

APPENDIX 139

Malcolm's mother, on a visit from Washington to her son, writes:

"I found at the Warren Green Hotel, a delightful old-timed Virginia hotel,called upon the Thomas Semmes of Louisiana...and found congregated on the spacious octagonal front piazza a crowd of Louisiana visitors, including Mr. and Mrs. Mott, Frank Lee, now a law student at the University of Virginia, Old Mrs. Semmes, Col. Mosby's two sisters, Mr. and Mrs. Louis Bowling, General Beauregard and his daughter en route from the White Sulphur to Baltimore, where they were to spend the night, proceeding to New York, where they were to spend a month or six weeks...and promised to see us on their return through Washington in October. He declines the offer of the Argentine Republic, and told us Mr. John Andrews and Virginia are still at the Warm Springs...(and back at Franklin Square in Washington). Mrs. General Emory, Mrs. Wainwright, the Agars, and Mrs. Janin were here at different times, last evening...Mrs. Abbott is looking very well...Mrs. Judge James has not returned yet...The Bryants are going to Europe for two years...Mrs. Dahlgren inquires, and desires to be kindly remembered to you...the Baroness Overbeck is still in New York ...Henry Howard and family arrived here yesterday, so have the Mackalls and the Galts....."

APPENDIX 140

Later, and for so many years the distinguished Chief Justice of the United States Supreme Court.

APPENDIX 141

Neither the Federal Government, or the State of Virginia, even in happy and prosperous days, were willing or interested enough to make the necessary provisions for the perpetuity of the estate of the Father of the Country, despite the fact that even in Europe to so great an extent was George Washington regarded that when news of his death in 1799 reached Paris, the French troops paraded with their flags draped in mourning. And despite that fact that he had led the rebel army in the War of American Independence, the British Navy lowered their flags at half-mast, when the news of his death reached England.

APPENDIX 142

Much of his legal knowledge was offered unstintingly to his fellow Southerners. Just as John Paul Jones, the American Commander in the Revolution, was for some time considered a Pirate, by the English; so was also considered Captain Raphael Semmes, of the Confederate Navy, by the authorities in Washington. The question had arisen in Congress as to the removal of Semmes' political disabilities, which Semmes - Attorney in Mobile, Alabama - had carried for the ten years after the war. Porter wrote him (1872) "If I can serve you in this connection, at any time during the approaching session of Congress, please command me; my services will be gladly and cheerfully rendered to overcome bigotry, to expose lies, to refute calumnities, and to do your name and fame justice."

APPENDIX 143

On Canal street, near the Mississippi river levee, stands a granite shaft, bearing the names of the sixteen heroes who gave their lives, Sept. 14, 1874, as members of the Citizens army, engaged in the overthrow of the Post-civil war "Carpet Bag" government. Less than three years later Governor Nicholls was inaugurated, and once again and for the time being at least, Louisiana came into its own, after seven years "of horror and degradation".

APPENDIX 144

Legation Of Guatemala,
Washington,
Arlington Hotel,
April 17, 1882

Hon. F.F. Frelinghuysen
Secretary of State

In virtue of the authorization of my government I have appointed Mr. Alexander Porter Morse Secretary of Legation; and that gentleman has consented provisionally.

I hope that this appointment will be agreeable to your Excellency, and that you will receive the respect with which I subscribe myself,
Your Excellency's

Obedient servant,

Lorenzo Montrifar

APPENDIX 145

Dr. Clarke's grandfather, William Clarke, a Lieutenant in the Maryland Continental Line, during the American Revolution, had fought in the battles of Brandywine, Monmouth about Elizabethtowne, and had wintered at Valley Forge. The first American ancestor, Robert Clarke of London, had settled in the Maryland Province in 1637: as an Ensign, had commanded a platoon of "Musquetiers" in Lord Baltimore's expedition to drive out Claiborne and his Virginians from Kent Island in the Chesapeake Bay: Was Agent for the Jesuits priests in their trade with the Indians; was Surveyor-General of Maryland; appointed "Stewart" for the proposed great Indian Reservation in that Province; Privy-Councillor to Lord Baltimore; had been a member of the Assembly which had passed the "Toleration Act" - the first official recognition of freedom of worship for all Christian religions in America; and as an officer in the Catholic army of Lord Baltimore operating against the Protestant or Cromwell Forces entrenched near Annapolis, had been captured and condemned to be shot 'for his treason'. Although his life was spared, all his estate was confiscated.

Robert Clarke, at the battle of the Severn, 1655, (between the Puritans and the Catholics), near the present site of Annapolis, Md., he was taken prisoner by the Puritans, treated as a rebel, tried by a council and sentenced to be hanged. He was saved 'by the petition of the women', but fined ten thousand pounds of tobacco. Unable to pay, he was obliged to surrender his plantation, having (again) refused to retract:- "WHEREAS ROBERT CLARKE, GENTLEMAN, hath openly in Court confessed himself to be a Roman Catholic, owning the Pope's Supremacy." A year later, however, when Clarke was found to be in dire distress, the protestant Court despite his late and unretracted 'rising up in arms and other great crimes (i.e. popery)', reduced the Fine in half and restored to him his plantation. No doubt this leniency was a result of a conciliatory attitude as expressed by Oliver Cromwell towards these uprisings in the American colonies. Clarke, under the Catholic regime had been a member of the council which passed the Toleration Act, Surveyor General of the Palatinate of Maryland; and held other important positions.

Descent of the 9th generation from the First Lord Baltimore: Helen Calvert, daughter of Sir George Calvert, First baron Baltimore, married Thomas Green Sr. Thomas Green married Winifred Seymour; their son Francis Green married Elizabeth ---; their daughter was Verlinda Green, who married (1) Thomas Sanders, and (2) Alexious Sims in 1733. Joseph Sims, a result of the second marriage, married

Catherine Culver. Their daughter Mary married William Clarke, an officer in Smallwood's Maryland Brigade during the American Revolution, and the grandfather of Dr. Daniel B. Clarke whose daughter was the mother of the 9th generation of this narrative.

.....

In addition to the above connection, the first wife of the 2nd Lord Baltimore was a Miss Darnall, possibly a sister of Col. Darnall.

The Boone Family of Maryland:

According to Burke's Landed Gentry, London: 1939; -- The Boone family of Maryland was founded by John Boone who was born in London 1645 an uncle of Charles Boone of 'Rook's Nest' in Tandridge, Surrey, sometime Governor of Bombay, etc. The Boone family of Dipford were the progenitors. ... John Boone, the American emigrant lived on a plantation in Calvert County, Maryland, at "The Cliffs". His great-great-great-granddaughter, Rachel Boone was the mother of Dr. Daniel Boone Clarke. The females of this line descended from the Maryland families of Brooke, Bevan, Darnall, Spalding, and Sansbury. Referring to other genealogical data it is to be noted how so many families in any one area were sprung from the same stock. It has been said that any individual whose progenitors lived for 2 or 3 centuries in any one area were, as a rule, all related, one to another.

APPENDIX 146

The Van Bokkelen Case: (1888)

The Judicial Review (a British Journal Of Legal and Political Science), referring to the Van Bokkelen Case as an example of the advance of International Arbitration in place of wars in the settlement of disputes between nations, compares it with the Alabama Case, and the Arbitration between Great Britain and Russia regarding the Afghan boundary at Panjdeh. "The dispute (between the United States of America and the Republic of Haiti) was referred to Mr. Alexander Porter Morse, of Washington, and his award...is altogether an admirably prepared document...The whole proceedings seem to us to be a model of what an International arbitration should be."

APPENDIX 147

In his later years, the marriages of two of Porter's children and of several of his relatives were to further associate him with New Orleans and the Delta of Louisiana. A daughter married one of the Grevenberg family of the Attackapas, descendant of the old family of that name, as well as of the de Blancs, De Reggios, and Olivers. A son married a granddaughter of General P. G. T. Beauregard, and

a scion of many another old Louisiana personage including the families of Villere, Ducros, De La Chaise, D' Arenbourg, and, also, the De Reggios, formerly members of the famous Italian House of Este. It was Villere, who had been one of the leaders of the Louisianians in their revolt against Spain in 1769, and whose dying message to all his descendants, - as he lay pierced by an enemy's bayonet, was, "Never fight for Spain, or against France". A niece married a son of Governor Hebert; a sister married a Janin; and one of his Johnson cousins married a member of the Grima family.

The Beauregard and Allied Families of Louisiana, ancestors of one group of the 10th generation of this narrative:
The ancestors of these great-grandchildren of General P. G. T. Beauregard, C.S.A., and his wife Laure Villere, include Francois, Chevalier de Reggio, a descendant of the Dukes of Reggio and Modena, and consequently of the House d'Este. He was a close relative of the Marquis de Vaudreuil, seventh Governor of the colonial province of Louisiana. Jacques Toutant de Beauregard was the first of this family to settle in America. A holder of the Cross of St. Louis, he had come to Louisiana during the reign of Louis XV as Commandant of a naval Flotilla. He married Madeline Cartier. Others were the early Louisiana families of Ducros, Fleurian, Fazenda, Drieux, De La Chaise, D'Arenbourg, and Olivier. Jacques Philippe Villere, educated at the Court of Louis XVI had been a Lieutenant in the French army, and a Major General in the Battle of New Orleans, and first Creole Governor of Louisiana. Other families, with roots in Canada, before emigrating to the vicinity of New Orleans, were the families of Nepveu, Chauvin, Le Cailly, Harant, Martin, Sevestre, Lachaunerlin and Autreuil. In addition were several from the 'States':- the Pierce family of the Eastern shore of Maryland, the Becker family of Pennsylvania, and the Cenas family, a Huguenot family who migrated from Philadelphia to New Orleans; these latter groups were the ancestors of the wife of the son of Gen. Beauregard. From these lines come the Italian, additional Scandinavian, and German blood, in addition to French. As also Quaker and Huguenot blood.

APPENDIX 148

Before "Valley View" became the all-year home, the family resided at 1008 13th St., N.W., and, for a much longer period at 1422 Massachusetts Ave., opposite the German Embassy.

APPENDIX 149

Regarding the "Fair-Play" of the Anglo-Saxon race:-

In 1884, the Italian Government had proceeded to confiscate certain properties of the Catholic church in Rome. Among these was the 'American College' where young American Catholic priests were trained for missionaries in far distant fields. Many of the people of the United States were actively opposed to this and in Washington, many, took active steps to petition the United States Government to attempt to effect a reversal of this confiscation. Porter, was elected President of this movement in the nation's Capitol; a movement which was sponsored by many of the most prominent citizens of the day;- Among these were Dr. A.Y.P. Garnett, Gen. John Newton USA., Capt. Daniel Ammen, USN., Dr. Lloyd Magruder, Hon. George B. Loring, Gen. Rosencranz, USA., Mr. James Fullerton, Dr. Daniel B. Clarke, Mr. Thomas E. Waggaman, Dr. J. Gilmary Shea of Elizabeth, New Jersey, Hon. A. Leo Knott of Baltimore, and many members of the Congress of the United States. Porter, in taking the Chair "made a brief but eloquent speech in which he said that the love of fair-play has always been the characteristic of the Anglo-Saxon race. For this reason, if for no other, the American people would feel an interest in this matter, which illustrated the abuse of power, and the weight of oppression. He knew not what the Italian law allowed, but he did know that the law of nations condemned as unjust and unprecedented the condemnation of the property". The above properties of the Catholic Church were commonly referred to as "Properties of the Propaganda" - the term "Propaganda" referring to the ancient "colleges" in Rome, the object of which was to forward the propagation of the Roman Catholic religion. The term "Propaganda", in the sense of agencies formed to influence public opinion in war and politics, came again into popular usage during the World War 1914-1919.

APPENDIX 150

After the victory at Manila Bay, the American fleet were obliged to wait for army reinforcements before the city of Manila could be taken. During this interval, ships of war of Britain, France, Japan and Germany arrived to look after their nationals; and in the course of a few days, there arose a marked unfriendly attitude on the part of the German Naval Commander toward the Americans. It was at this point that Admiral Chichester of the British fleet made it perfectly plain to the Germans, that if trouble should ensue between the Americans and the Germans, the British fleet would actively take sides with the Americans.

APPENDIX 151

At the death of Ex-President Ulysses S. Grant, the one time leader of the great army which crushed the Southern "rebels", Porter, a

former officer in that defeated army, found time to write an editorial in a Maryland newspaper:

"It is ... to the fact that he was intensely human in all his sympathies, that the present expression of a deep and wide-spread sympathy must be attributed. It is the possession of these characteristics, in a supreme degree, which lifted him above the ordinary level in politics and in action. He was naturally not a partisan in its narrow sense; and yet his name and fame were availed of to inspire party zeal and to promote party success. He was by nature simple, benevolent and humanitarian; and yet his last hours were embittered by chagrin and mortification brought upon himself and his household by crafty and designing men who approached him in the guise of friendship Much of his life was passed in the full blaze of prosperity and glory; but the shadows which make the contrast more striking, descended at times heavily upon him. It is, however, as a successful soldier that the fame of this American chieftain will be perpetuated in the Valhalla of history. And yet it is to be borne in mind that there were many acts and many deeds of his which deserve to be remembered by all mankind: Among these were his behavior and fortitude amid unusual disaster and under most trying circumstances."

APPENDIX 152

It was at the First Officers Training Camp at Fort Myer, Va., where were two of the 9th Generation, that the following song took hold: sung to the tune of the "Old Gray Mare".

"Uncle Sam -m -m, when he gets Artillery,
when he gets the Cavalry,
when he gets the Infantry;
Uncle Sam -m -m, -then he'll go to Germany:
GOOD BYE KAISER BILL.
Good-bye, Kaiser Bill! Good bye Kaiser Bill!
Oh! Uncle Sam -m -m when he gets his a-r-u-m-y
IT'S GOODBYE KAISER BILL !!!

APPENDIX 153

It is perhaps of passing interest, that although this family has resided in the present confines of the United States for over three hundred years, Porter is the only one who was born within a State of the Union as defined by the Constitution. His forbears were born in Provinces, in England, in a state before the Constituion was adopted, in Territories or in the District of Columbia. And due

to the fact that the privileges of the ballot does not include in- habitants of the District of Columbia, none have cast a Vote for any Federal or State officer since before the American Civil War.

APPENDIX 154

The hosts of the 'parties' of that Prohibition period in America, were often obliged to manufacture their own beverages. Among these was the so-called "Bath-tub gin", the making of which was considered quite as much an art as was the manufacturing of beer and other alcoholic beverages, by the households of the colonial times. The usual formula for bath-room gin was as follows:

Oil of Juniper berries gtt V
Oil of corriander gtt †
Oil of angelica gtt †
Oil of Orange gtt VI
Glycerin Z†
Alcohol 6 ii
Distilled Water 6 ††

The "alcoholic history" of America, from 1635 to 1935, was something like this: First, Beer; then Rum; then Wine; then Whiskey; and lastly Gin.

APPENDIX 155

One of Porter's grandsons, a tenth generation, was a young lad in 1926 when with his mother and sister he was living in that beautiful Lausanne, in Switzerland. Among the fellow visitors at that resort was the ex-Khedive of Egypt, in exile from his native land, and, it was said under constant watch, by both friendly and unfriendly eyes. When out driving, with one or another of his four wives, he often asked Porter's grandson to accompany, and found room for the lad on his lap. Friends laughingly said that the ex-Khedive, thereupon felt comparatively safe from any assassin's bullet, with an American boy as a shield.

APPENDIX 156

Some members of the Morse family in old England, in the last few decades, were Sir George Henry Morse, of Norfolkshire; Captain Alfred Herbert Morse, of Suffolk; Lieut-Colonel Arthur Francis Morse; Mr. Frederic Augustus Morse-Boycott of Sennowe; Mr. William Morse of Wiltshire; and Capt. H. E. Morse, of the Royal Navy.

APPENDIX 157

Dutch blood was the first non-English blood in the family; to be followed, some decades later, by the blood of the French and Spanish, Irish, Swede, etc. One branch of the tenth generation, from their maternal side, also inherited the Italian, and German strain, as well as a large proportion of French: in addition to 'Quaker' English and 'Huguenot' French.

AUTHOR'S CONCLUSION AND ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

The genesis of this book was the ordinary hobby, so often indulged in by so many, of looking up ancestors. This pastime leads naturally to research into places and events, inquiry into motives and reactions, and the study of contemporary history. Putting these all together, I have attempted to weave a story of our country beginning with the early settlements up to the present time, as actually lived by these people, who, father to son, were fortunate in being exposed to a good many of the episodes which have gone into the making of this nation. The story, in all its details, as far as I know, is a true one.

One of the main objects in presenting this manuscript to the public is because I believe that within its pages the general reader will find many items of intimate Americana which otherwise might never reach the public eye.

The sources which have been consulted fall generally into four chief classes.

First of all were the several genealogical records of the family: memoirs, journals, diaries, scrap-books and letters. Secondly have been the numerous volumes which treat and describe the several places and the times with which they deal. Thirdly were the generous responses to inquiries directed to persons known to have or believed to possess particular information of special import; and fourthly, the results of direct correspondence with individuals, both relatives and non-relatives, whose cooperation has been most valuable.

In the first instance, the early work of Abner Morse; the work of Asa P. Morse; and the revisions of the former by S. Howard Morse in 1903, - have been the essential keystone, if not the very essence of the material for the entire story in the earlier chapters. Mrs. Alexander Sharp, Mr. Frank Morse, Mr. Joseph J. Ryan, Mrs. George Pigman, and Mrs. Carl J. Kohring, - all close relatives - have given me ready access to the several old family papers in their possession, and Mrs. Parke Brady, niece of the author, has made it possible to produce the 100 copies of this book in its present form.

In the second category of "Material" the author has found the "History of Elizabeth" by Hatfield, and the "History of Newbury" by Coffin, of extreme importance. Clark's "History of the Essex District Medical Society of New Jersey"; the Archives of New Jersey, as well as the Archives of Massachusetts, were indispensable. The multitudinous volumes on English and American history by numerous authors, too numerous to mention, were duly consulted. Thirdly, the author is deeply indebted to Miss Anna M. Capraun of Linden, New Jersey, for her splendid interest and effort in the course of her most detailed research concerning the early New Jersey dwellings.

Mrs. Billwiller of the same town, and Mr. Daniel J. Hauenstein of the Standard Oil Co. at Bayway, have been of considerable help in the unraveling of many of the intricate points of the vicinity where so many of the early scenes of this story take place. The late Mr. Marsh of Rahway, Mr. Silvio Broussard and Mr. Edward T. Weeks, Jr., both of New Iberia, have been very helpful in their interest and cooperation towards inquiries. And from New Orleans, Dr. Paul A. McIlhenny, Mr. Stanley C. Arthur, and Major W. D. Shaffer, have sent me much 'key' information.

A debt of gratitude is herewith expressed to Mr. H. Russell Morss, Jr., and Mr. John O. Morss of Rahway and Elizabeth, New Jersey, for painstaking effort in the furtherance of this volume. Mrs. Mattie B. Shaw of New Iberia, Mrs. Sarah Morse of York Co., Virginia, Mrs. Ella Morse Blackford of Elizabeth, N. J. and Mr. William Morse of 'The Croft', Swindon, Wilts, England, have sent me most useful data. Mr. Herbert N. Moffett and Mr. L. D. Cook, of the 'Historic American Buildings Survey', and the personnel at the libraries and the Archives at Norwich University, Weslyn, Harvard and Princeton, have supplied much material which otherwise might not have been obtained. Dr. T. J. Wertenbaker of the faculty of Princeton University has given much time and care in the study and interpretation of some of the architecture and background of the early New Jersey dwelling, and the encouragement in the presentation of these findings.

While I have spent many odd moments on the assembling of and research for this book during the past fourteen years in which I have been so engaged, much of the basic material had already been obtained by other workers in the genealogical field. To these I give homage.

The reader will notice that there is a more or less radical change in the presentation of the first half and the second half of the book. This must be necessary if the many intimate details of the later generations are to be incorporated into the work as a whole. And I have felt that the preservation of so much of these more detailed accounts of travels and adventures should, under all circumstances, be preserved.

Now as to the title; for it is customary for manuscripts of this sort to have a title. The selection of an appropriate one is often one of the most difficult parts of a work. "Blood of an Englishman" may be considered too generalized to put on a book which treats, primarily with the life of an American family. Yet, when we consider that it was this very strain in early America, as well as in Australia, Canada, New Zealand, and the other parts of the world, which have felt so strongly the influence of the English race, we feel quite right in using this title. Despite the influx of other bloods, it is always the English, or at least the British, which seems to predominate in the end. For the English, even with all their faults, - and these are many - nevertheless have always retained

something intangible which has made them a great people, either at home or overseas. The family of which I write, is I believe somewhat typical of the families of a great number of our early American colonists. They, in turn, have something in common with the fictitious "Brown" family, as so admirably depicted by Thomas Hughes in his immortal classic - "Tom Brown's Schooldays".

To quote: For centuries in their quiet, dogged, homespun way they have been subduing the earth in most English counties, and leaving their mark in American forests and Australian uplands.....they have carried their lives in their hands; getting hard knocks and hard work in plenty, which was on the whole what they looked for, and the best thing for them; and little praise or pudding, which indeed they and the most of us are better without. Talbots and Stanleys, St. Maurs, and such like folk have led armies, and made laws time out of mind; but those noble families would be somewhat astounded - if the accounts ever came to be fairly taken - to find out how small their work for (their country) has been by the side of that of the "Browns". These latter, indeed, have until the present generation rarely been sung by poet, or chronicled by sage. They wanted their 'sacer vates', having been too solid to rise to the top by themselves, and not having been largely gifted with the talent of catching hold of, and holding on tight to, whatever good things happened to be going - the foundation of the fortunes of so many noble families... ..In the first place the "Browns" are a fighting family. One may question their wisdom, or wit, or beauty, but about their fight there can be no question. Whatever hard knocks of any kind, visible or invisible, are going, there the "Brown" who is nearest must shove in his carcase....They can't let anything alone which they think going wrong. They must speak their minds about it, annoying all easy-going folk; and spend their time and money in having a tinker at it, however hopeless the job. It is an impossibility to a "Brown" to leave the most disreputable lame dog on the other side of the stile. Most folk get tired of such work....And the most provoking thing is, that no failures knock them up or make them hold their hands, or think you or me, or other sane people in the right.

And if this American nation, and the world as a whole, is at this point in its development, face to face with changes in the entire economic and social make-up, - as many tell us we are, - then may we hope that the "Brown" family, and their kind may continue to exert their rare influence in the uncertain days which might follow.
